



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 12

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1101: Fairy Cheng's Grievance

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly, rubbed his nose, and stepped out. That was the only choice for him now. "Urh... Well... Your arrival honors me, Senior Brother Disciples... It lights up the place... Ahem. It has been a long time though. Brother Zhan, you are still handsome. Brother Zhu, you are still charming. What a pleasure!"

The crowd burst into an uproar again!

[What?]

[This young man, who swept the entire Ye Clan in a lightning way, who killed all the opponents in his clan, who helped his father to become the new Chief, who defeated every rival for the lotuses, was actually a member of Cold Moon Palace?]

[He is a younger brother disciple of Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian?]

Everybody felt lost.

[It doesn't make sense. It isn't reasonable. It is against science!]

[How old is he?]

[Younger than twenty, isn't he?]

More importantly, they all knew that Ye Xiao had been living in the lower realm with his father since he was born. He had grown up and lived in a lower world for a long time. That meant his cultivation foundation was built in the lower realm. Ye Nantian had returned to Ye Clan for less than one year. Ye Xiao should have returned roughly at the same time!

How could he be a disciple of Cold Moon Palace?

Even though he might be lucky that somebody liked him because of his talent, which made him a disciple of Cold Moon Palace, how could he be a brother disciple to Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian? Who were these two men? They had been famous for a long time.

Their names spread far and wide in the world. They were cultivators that could only be seen upon the clouds! They were also important figures of Cold Moon Palace! They were in extremely high positions, in the same generation as the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace. They only needed to call their Prime Master brother.

How could they be just brother disciples to Ye Xiao?

If Zhan Yunfei didn't say it himself, nobody would believe it!

Wasn't the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace also a brother disciple to Ye Xiao?

[Holy hell! He can't be more impressive, can he?]

Suddenly, everybody was stricken by a more horrible idea...

[If the Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace is Ye Xiao's brother disciple... Who is Ye Xiao's master?]

Those who knew about Cold Moon Palace all came up with three names.

The only old monsters who were still alive in Cold Moon Palace!

The three most respected and elevated grand elders!

Lei Dadi!

Feng Wuying!

Yun Piaoliu!

The three of them were in the same league with Wu Fa and Xuan Bing in Qing-Yun Realm!

There was no other possibility.

[It turns out Ye Xiao is a private disciple of one of the three old monsters?]

[He is actually this lucky to be a disciple of one of the three grand elders?]

Nobody truly wanted to believe it. However, they had to! The

truth was apparently right in front of them. If he was not a private disciple of the old grand elders, why would the arrogant and unruly figure, Zhan Yunfei, treat him with respect? He was even amiably talking to Ye Xiao!

"Pah! How dare you talk about me being handsome..." Zhan Yunfei gritted his teeth and raged up, "Because of you, our heads were nearly scolded off by the three great masters... We are not allowed to return to Cold Moon Palace unless with you!"

Zhu Jiutian was upset. "Zhan Yunfei is better... I was beaten really hard by the three great masters... I haven't done anything, have I..."

The expression on his face changed. It seemed to remind him the day when he was beaten by the three elders. He looked scared even now.

Ye Xiao giggled. "Well... How sad... However, Brother Zhu has strong cultivation foundation and sharp skills. You are good at enduring the strikes. If I were you... I should be dead by now..."

Zhu Jiutian sneered, "Dead? You are the most important person in the three elders' hearts. They haven't touched you even one finger, have they? Even when they were dying... When you said that, didn't you feel guilty? Let me ask you, do you believe what you just said?"

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose and didn't say anything to argue.

What they talked in the conversation was more and more shocking to the crowd.

[What?]

[What did we hear?]

[Ye Xiao is not a disciple of one of the three great elders?]

[He is, according to Zhu Jiutian, a private disciple to the three of them at the same time?]

[What does that mean?]

[Is he overturning the entire heavens?]

Cheng Bingmei looked unbelieving in her eyes. She asked, "The kid is actually a disciple of the three of your master?"

Zhan Yunfei arrogantly said, "What do you mean the kid? You little girl! You don't get to call him kid! You disrespectful thing!"

Cheng Bingmei's face immediately turned dark, but she didn't say anything as a response.

It was always not a good idea to casually compare one to another. Zhan Yunfei had been defeated by Xiao Monarch, however, even if he couldn't win a fight against Ye Xiao, he was still in quite a high position in Qing-Yun Realm no matter in seniority, status, or strength.

If the first league in Qing-Yun Realm included Wu Fa, Xuan Bing, and the three old grand elders, Zhan Yunfei must be part of the second league. He was in an equal position as the leaders of the great sects. Cheng Bingmei, although she was the present Saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace, was still lower in seniority than Zhan Yunfei.

However, seniority was always ignored in the martial world of Qing-Yun Realm. The strongest was most respected. Whoever had stronger power occupied the higher position. Jun Yinglian was an example. She was the same age as Han Bingxue and Zhan Yunfei, but was like a sister to Bing Xinyue, who should be a junior cultivator to her. As the former Prime Master of Sky Ice Palace, she should be in the same height as Qiong-Hua Palace's Prime Master, but she was not.

Thus, when Zhan Yunfei called Cheng Bingmei little girl, it wasn't insulting her. It should be no more than just being impolitely frank to her!

What mattered for Cheng Bingmei was not what Zhan Yunfei called her. Instead, it was the truth!

Cold Moon Palace people wanted to get involved in the mess because of the truth.

She wanted to quit when Misty Cloud Palace stepped out against her. Now, Cold Moon Palace showed up too. She was in a more precarious situation at the moment. Even though she was proud of Qiong-Hua Palace's power, she was not sure to win the battle.

If the war were to start, it would only lead to a disaster!

However, should she just let Ye Clan free and claim to be king in this district?

Ye Nantian and Ye Xiao were both standing there. Qiong-Hua Palace had lost every bit of their dignity, yet she could do nothing about it. She didn't dare.

The feeling of helplessness was driving this present Saintess crazy!

...

Chapter 1102: Take My Words Back with You

"Good. Great!" Cheng Bingmei gritted her teeth.

She didn't know which side she was talking to.

What filled her heart was an absurd feeling of things changing yet people remaining. In the old days, whenever she wanted to humiliate Ye Clan, she only needed to say a few words.

However, when she was facing Ye Clan people now, she couldn't do anything to them!

Ye Clan people were uncompromising!

Now, she was the one who was humiliated!

"Today, Misty Cloud Palace and Cold Moon Palace strongly disgraced us. We won't forget this. Let's go!" Cheng Bingmei's face turned dark. She waved his hand and decided to leave after all the humiliation.

She decided to take revenge someday in the future!

She didn't believe the two great forces would keep protecting Ye Clan all the time. There would be a day she could take her revenge!

"Wait!"

Ye Xiao blandly said.

"What do you want?" Cheng Bingmei turned around and stared at Ye Xiao viciously.

Ye Xiao raised up his head, stared back into Cheng Bingmei's eyes with a pair of ice eyes, and spoke slowly, "Please take my words to your Prime Master. Soon, I will go to Qiong-Hua Palace for a visit. That will be the day I pick up my mother."

He sounded plain as if he was just informing.

That was all.

Cheng Bingmei sneered, "Pick her up? You want to take her back? Who do you think you are? Where do you think you are going?"

Ye Xiao didn't answer. He just spoke in a low voice, "Here are several more words. Tell all the people in Qiong-Hua Palace that they should be nice to my mother. That's all."

"What if we won't?" Cheng Bingmei's eyes were full of anger. She spoke in provocation.

Ye Xiao blandly said, "You will know what. But I assure you that you don't want to know!"

A frosty beam of dazzling light burst out of his eyes.

The cold killing intent in his eyes almost became solid. He just stared at Cheng Bingmei.

At that moment, Cheng Bingmei only trembled and felt agitated.

[He is weaker than me. I know it. I won't pay him a compliment. However, that gaze of him, it gives me the feeling like god was talking to me, even making a promise to me.]

[Only one promise.]

Ye Xiao didn't say the words, but that gaze had shown her enough information.

'If you won't be nice to my mother, I will slaughter every single one of you in Qiong-Hua Palace!'

That was true!

Cheng Bingmei should be disdainful about it.

Everybody knew how to play tough. The weak ones always play tough in front of the strong! It was just a useless attitude!

However, after feeling the gaze of Ye Xiao, she didn't know what happened to her. She actually felt scared.

It felt like her heart was freezing.

After a trance, she realized she actually didn't doubt that he could actually do what he wanted to do.

She actually believed that he could do it!

There was no reason.

She just believed it!

And then she also realized that she had taken three steps back while in a trance!

She had been frightened by just a gaze!

She was scared from deep in her heart!

After being stunned for a few moments, her face turned red. She tried so hard to suppress the fear in her heart, and pretentiously shouted in anger, "How dare you! I would love to see what is the thing that you can do but I don't want to know! We will meet again!"

Then she waved her hand and flew up like a piece of white cloud. Behind her, eight ladies in white clothes followed up. Suddenly, they all disappeared into the clouds.

After moving away hundreds of miles, Cheng Bingmei, who had finally calmed down, realized that her back was soaked with sweat. She knew she must have a really pathetic at the moment!

As she gave it a second thought, she stopped.

"Saintess, what do we do now?" A lady in white clothes asked her.

Cheng Bingmei took a deep breath and thought for a while. In the end, she blandly answered, "We return to the palace!"

In her eyes, there was only a complicated expression. Sometimes, it was a vicious glare, which was extremely terrifying.

...

From the beginning to the end, it didn't take long. Qiong-Hua Palace's ladies came fiercely and left in peace.

Misty Cloud Palace and Cold Moon Palace were left in a warm atmosphere, saying some formulae that nobody truly believed.

Ye Clan people were jubilant after the shadow of death just ended.

People in the other clans were all showing complex expression in the face.

They all knew that after today, there was nobody in Oracle District that could possibly stop Ye Clan from rising!

No clan could be powerful enough to fight against Ye Clan!

Ye Clan would become the only great force in Oracle District afterward!

Things were all sorted out. With the support of Misty Cloud Palace and Cold Moon Palace, even Qiong-Hua Palace couldn't afford to mess with them, let alone the other native clans!

In such an atmosphere, to mess with Ye Clan was to mess with death!

The leaders of the other clans all had mixed feelings in the heart. They went over to congratulate Ye Clan, in an obviously more respectful way. Before what happened, they were in equal positions with Ye Clan people. In fact, they even felt like looking down upon Ye Clan people.

Now, they could only look up with respect.

Ye Nantian didn't pretend to be polite. He blandly responded to the other clans and made sure everybody was answered. However, he made sure nobody felt any emotion from him.

The feeling of distance that the people of other clans felt from Ye Nantian had made Ye Clan's position rise.

Ye Nantian was once a great general. He was good at socializing with the officials in court. He knew how to seize an opportunity. Besides, nowadays, he had known much more about human's evil

nature.

If he acted like Ye Shuxin, the others wouldn't feel his friendliness or kindness. Instead, they would curse him and look down upon Ye Clan.

He had the absolute surpassing power at the moment. Ye Clan took all the advantages. He didn't need to pretend to be modest. Nobody liked it!

Instead, he apparently showed his prestige. It suppressed down the others in social positions, and also gradually took control of them at the same time.

Those who wouldn't bend their knees would be destroyed, while those who obeyed would become Ye Clan's appendages.

To act along the flow of the situation and hit the opponent with the borrowed power was always an essential strategy in battles. Ye Nantian was a great general, so he was well aware of it!

Ye Nantian understood it clearly. Whatever he did now would become the foundation for the great future of Ye Clan!

...

Chapter 1103: Isn't It a Good Name?

After having some chitchats, Ye Nantian decisively left.

He was going back to receive the people from Cold Moon Palace and Misty Cloud Palace.

He truly understood that one should never go too far on attacking others. He had arranged the elders of other groups to take good care of the leaders of the other clans. The chiefs of the other clans didn't feel offended at all. None of them left, and everything was done. What mattered for them was to check the situation and try to relate to Ye Clan as soon as possible.

Even Li Clan people, who had been against Ye Clan for a long time, shamelessly stayed.

Everybody knew that things had changed in Oracle District!

Whoever dared to be against Ye Clan would die soon!

...

Ye Clan treated Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian of Cold Moon Palace, as well as the ladies of Misty Cloud Palace with the utmost cordiality.

No matter how humble the ladies were acting, they were apparently much more powerful than Ye Clan. Ye Clan would be shameless if they actually acted arrogantly in front of the ladies. Cold Moon Palace's men were both Ye Xiao's senior brother disciples. How did Ye Clan dare to treat them in a cold manner?

For Ye Clan people, these people were all legendary cultivators, somebody they could never be rude to!

Luckily, Misty Cloud Palace ladies and Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian all pretty respected Ye Clan. They were being utterly modest. The place was full of pleasure for both the guests and the hosts.

For Ye Nantian, his son was talented enough to be chosen by the grand elders of Cold Moon Palace. That was surprising but not difficult to believe. In his opinion, as his son was so brilliant, influential figures should get in line to beg for his son to be their private disciple.

However, he was quite confused why Misty Cloud Palace would humbly help Ye Clan like that. He tried to ask the question at the table though.

However, Li Yunxuan didn't know the answer either. She literally had no idea. She only knew that it was Xuan Bing's order. Nothing else.

No matter what Ye Nantian asked, she had no answers.

In fact, Xuan Bing's order was never questioned in Misty Cloud Palace. It was like the law that nobody would dispute. Everybody would just follow it!

The ladies wouldn't feel troubled, but the others were confused.

Even Ye Xiao was lost this time.

He knew Xuan Bing was helping him back, but he didn't understand why she would do him such a great favor...

Wasn't it too generous?

Han Bingxue, who also knew a bit of it, had left since the moment when Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian showed up. Nobody knew where he was.

He had to hide.

He knew who the two men were, and the two men also knew who he was.

If he called Ye Xiao boss in front of Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian... things would become really nasty!

No matter how audacious Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were, they wouldn't do such a reckless thing!

...

Not only Ye Xiao was confused by the great favor, even Xuan Bing herself, who was ten thousand miles away, was confused too. She didn't understand why she would give such an order!

Even if she loved Ye Clan because of the love for Ye Xiao... it was still too much for Ye Clan.

When she thought more in-depth about it... she felt one word... ingratiating!

However, when she just thought of the word, she blushed and slapped herself on the face.

She felt her face burning...

This was quite insane...

...

After the cuisines and liquor and the joy of both guests and hosts, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian dragged Ye Xiao aside hurriedly and started to question him.

"What is your real name, you wicked-head? Don't you think you should be honest with us now?" Zhan Yunfei showed a dark face, staring at Ye Xiao with a pair of glaring eyes.

"That's right! Be honest to us!" Zhu Jiutian glared too.

"I am Ye Xiao." Ye Xiao blinked and looked innocent. "How can I fake it? I was covering myself earlier. I am now home. Why should I use a fake name? For what? To trick myself? Or to trick my father?"

The two men nearly passed out because of anger. "Didn't you say... you were Ye Chongxiao? You... You..."

The two of them were showing weird faces. It was full of anger but also awe.

Ye Xiao.

The name was deeply buried in their hearts. It was hard for them to forget this name as well as the hatred for it!

Every time when they had nightmares, they felt lost!

When they heard the name, they always sneezed.

However, now their little brother disciple had the same name!

Didn't it mean this name was going to be mentioned again and again every day!

That was such a torture to them.

"Speaking of which... when I was ascending to this world, my father told me to hide my name and not to tell anybody about my real name..." Ye Xiao threw his hands, "Anyway, I just couldn't expose my true name... What else could I do..."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian nearly passed out at the same time.

[Holy hell!]

[Your father told you to?]

[What a good excuse... We don't have a word to say.]

"That means... your real name... is indeed Ye Xiao?" Zhan Yunfei desperately asked, "Ye as the leaf? Xiao as the laugh?"

Ye Xiao honestly nodded. "That excellently explained my name. I don't think I should do it again."

Zhan Yunfei said 'f*ck' and then stayed quiet with a dark face.

Zhu Jiutian was also stunned, like a numb chicken, and had no words to say.

They would have never known that their little brother disciple actually had a name that could shock the entire Qing-Yun Realm!

Ye Xiao showed an innocent face and asked, "Why? What is the problem with my name? Xiao for a laugh. Isn't it amusing?"

Zhan Yunfei lowered his head and said, "No, there isn't. It is

amusing."

Ye Xiao smugly laughed. "I didn't like it at the beginning. However, after that, laughing means happy, having good times, enjoying a broad mind. Isn't it the perfect status for a cultivator? Besides, it sounds good, doesn't it?"

Zhan Yunfei's face looked so sad like he just got gang raped. He murmured, "Hmm... Sounds good..."

In fact what he was thinking, [When I hear your name, my heart beats like crazy, my body sweats, my eyes are numb, my head is exploding, my legs feel weak, my ass shrinks...]

However, he didn't say it out.

It was embarrassing to say it, and the problem was difficult to solve anyway. What could he do? Could he ask Ye Xiao to change his name?

However...

...

Chapter 1104: Jun Yinglian's Discovery

When Zhan Yunfei heard the name, it reminded him of what had happened three years earlier.

Back to that battle, he was hiding, trying to make a sneak attack...

However, when he was about to get it, Xiao Monarch suddenly turned around and stared at him in the eyes fiercely. Zhan Yunfei retreated fast like his soul was getting out of his body, but Xiao Monarch suddenly shouted. It shocked the entire space.

The wind started to blow, and the lightning was striking. The world was shocked. Xiao Monarch was fighting with blood stains on his body among the bolts of lightning. It only took him one second to approach Zhan Yunfei.

Zhan Yunfei was standing with a lot of people, who were all enemies to Xiao Monarch, but he still felt like he was alone.

He felt death!

After that, Xiao Monarch's deadly palm attack moved fast toward him.

He tried to defend against it by swinging his sword with all his power, but he still couldn't stop the attack. The sword was broken, and his arm was cracked. That palm attack didn't hit him yet, but the bones in his chest had been broken because of the suppression of the palm hit...

If his spiritual beast didn't get down and give up its life to save him, he would have been killed by that one strike.

At that moment, he powerlessly witnessed the dear spiritual beast that had accompanied him for years die in a cloud of flesh and blood, and the blood was dripping down on his face. What he saw in sight were Xiao Monarch's icy eyes.

That was a pair of cold eyes that were full of terror after all the slaughter.

That moment, that pair of eyes became his constant nightmare. He would never forget it for the rest of his life!

If the others didn't attack at that moment, if Zhu Jiutian didn't risk himself to save him, he might still have died in that battle and become a pile of flesh and a cloud of ashes!

At present, he still hadn't recovered yet!

Xiao Monarch!

He was like a demonic god!

[We are lucky that he is dead.]

However, whether Xiao Monarch was dead or not, Zhan Yunfei would never agree to fight such a horrible enemy again!

Xiao Monarch could take a man's life as well as his bravery!

In fact, he could even take all a man had!

Even in the several years after he died, Zhan Yunfei had lots of nightmares, seeing Xiao Monarch's cold eyes.

There was no hatred, no hostility, no anger, nothing...

Indifference was all!

Zhan Yunfei even thought that if he could become a figure like Xiao Monarch, he would die with a proud smile even if he was beaten up to death by a bunch of people surrounding him.

"The name is... not bad." Zhan Yunfei gently sighed. He seemed to think of something. He looked upset, and he said, "However when you go out in the martial world... follow your father's instruction. Don't tell others your real name. Just use Ye Chongxiao. Ye Xiao is... a name that you shouldn't tell others unless you have already become powerful enough to dominate the world and fear nobody. Just try not to expose it."

After he said so, Zhu Jiutian stayed silent for a while. In the end, he sensibly nodded and then made a long sigh.

"I will remember it." Ye Xiao took a deep breath and cautiously said.

Zhan and Zhu were kind and thoughtful to Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao knew it, but...

"What a shame... I don't think I can keep it unexposed anymore," Ye Xiao lightly said.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian sighed together.

That was true. The resounding of this name was difficult to stop now!

Ye Clan suddenly rose up.

Misty Cloud Palace fully supported Ye Clan. Cold Moon Palace's two powerful cultivators suddenly showed up and declared the son of the present Chief was the private disciple of the three grand elders of Cold Moon Palace.

Qiong-Hua Palace planned to attack Ye Clan, but end up retreating in shame!

What happened could shock the whole Qing-Yun Realm!

The key of the breaking news was that Ye Clan's young lord, Ye Xiao, was actually the secret disciple of the three grand elders of Cold Moon Palace, Ye Chongxiao!

Such shocking news would spread like the wind. How could anybody stop it?

It was exactly like Ye Xiao said, also like Zhan and Zhu thought!

People who got to know the news would be shocked at first. [Is it true, such a dramatic thing actually happened in the world?]

People were all more or less confused. None of them knew exactly what had happened. However, the less they knew, the more

curious they were.

The news spread faster than anybody could imagine.

Within several days, it became a piece of breaking news that everybody in Qing-Yun Realm knew!

...

On top of a mountain.

Jun Yinglian was wearing a white suit which had the color of snow. She was staring forward.

All in her sight was ice and snow.

In the far distance, she saw a man, who looked just like Xiao Monarch being hunted!

A bunch of men who were in black suits with masks on the faces tried to kill the man who seemed to be Xiao Monarch.

"Ye Xiao! How surprising, you piece of sh*t actually is still alive! You got a tough life!" One man was shouting, "However, you are greatly damaged. How do you think you can still domineer in the martial world? Today is your last day!"

"You want a fight, then we fight! Enough for the bullsh*t!" That fake Xiao Monarch blandly smiled and casually started his moves. He even acted exactly like the real Xiao Monarch.

Jun Yinglian coldly watched him.

She didn't do anything.

It was the fifth time she saw the fights!

Countless masked men in black started the fifth attack on the fake Xiao Monarch.

Before this, the same thing had happened four times.

When she first saw it, she almost made an attack to save him.

However, now she would not even think about it.

At the end of the first fight, the fake Xiao Monarch tried his best to fight back. After killing lots of men in black, he finally made it out of their encirclement and fled into the forest. He looked badly injured. However, Jun Yinglian felt something wrong. She didn't eventually show up help him. She didn't go after that man.

She stayed around the place where they had that first fight for three whole days and locked the entire area with her spiritual mind.

After three days, she found that those men who were killed by the fake Xiao Monarch actually stood up after lying on the floor for three days.

Those men just sighed and then disappeared fast into the forest, in the direction where the fake Xiao Monarch had gone.

At that moment, Jun Yinglian felt cold in her entire body.

[A trap!]

[A despicable trap!]

[This Xiao Monarch Ye Xiao is no doubt a fake!]

...

Chapter 1105: Information about Ye Xiao!

<Author's note: Two chapters in one.>

Jun Yinglian understood what happened right away. Those people must have found her trace around this area. That was why they would put on a show like that.

If she lost control and set her hands to save that man, she would fall into their trap.

They were capable enough to impersonate Xiao Monarch so well. It meant they could also do a great job in setting up the traps. They must have been prepared for the trap carefully, and it would be almost impossible for Jun Yinglian to get away once she fell in.

She could imagine if she tried to save that fake Xiao Monarch, he would turn over to attack her instead. He was the key of the trap. At that moment, she would be unable to defend herself from him!

Luckily, she didn't show up and get involved!

The heaven's will never was unreasonable. It always blessed good people!

Honestly, Jun Yinglian did think about going out to help that man.

In fact, when she saw that man for the first time—when she saw that man's face—she panicked.

[Ye Xiao... It he still alive?]

When she heard their conversation, they indicated the man was precisely Ye Xiao, the man she missed so badly!

She wanted to rush over and have a closer look at him and make sure he was the man, but she stopped herself.

In the whole Qing-Yun Realm, if Jun Yinglian said she was the second who knew Ye Xiao best, nobody else could claim first. Han Bingxue or Li Wuliang were both worse than her in this aspect.

Jun Yinglian understood that if that man was the real Xiao Monarch, he would never show his embarrassed look to her, as he was such an arrogant man.

Besides, Ye Xiao never said he accepted her.

He was such an androcentric. If a young lady saved him when he was in an utterly uncomfortable situation, he would avoid seeing her ever again in his life!

Because of that, she hesitated and didn't help him in the first place because it seemed that 'Ye Xiao' wasn't indeed in deadly danger. Other than that, she had another reason, which seemed to be unusual.

When she saw the fake Xiao Monarch was in a life and death moment in the first fight, she was going to show up...

However, at that moment, she realized she wasn't distraught about him.

She wasn't worried at all!

Even though it seemed to be a drastic fight, and that man seemed to get killed at any second, she just didn't feel worried.

[Why?]

[How is it possible?]

She noticed it, and then she made a decision that she might never be going to forgive herself about.

She decided not to save him!

After a while, the fake Xiao Monarch was gradually falling into a deadly situation. It seemed he was unable to make it out of danger...

However, at that moment, Jun Yinglian still wouldn't go out. She was invaded by a wave of coldness. She felt cold for the man who was fighting for life.

[Why?]

[Why do I feel it this way?]

Deep in her heart, she was sure she loved Xiao Monarch so much. She would sacrifice her own life to exchange for a chance for Ye Xiao to live. However, why didn't she feel sad even when she decided not to help him? Why didn't she feel worried for him like she did ever? She was watching him falling into a deadly situation, but why didn't she feel concerned? Why would she only feel cold and terrified inside her heart when she observed that man she loved?

Everything went wrong. She started to think, [Is there anything wrong?]

In fact, she had a Regeneration Dan bead with her all the time, which was the most precious treasure of Sky Ice Palace. Even if the fake Xiao Monarch was injured to the point of almost dying, she could still bring him back to life.

That was the biggest reason she would decide not to save him.

She was waiting. Even though she felt the problem, she still hoped that that man was indeed Ye Xiao!

However, it turned out the fake Xiao Monarch suddenly raged up and killed a way out. He actually killed many people and left... Jun Yinglian felt that maybe it was too easy...

The result of the fight was never the point!

The point was whether the man as Ye Xiao or not!

Since he was safe, she figured she should spend some time waiting to confirm his identity!

When she decided to do so, she didn't understand why she would make such a decision.

She hadn't seen Ye Xiao for a long time. She missed him so much. She was crazy about it. Why would she decide to wait?

What was she waiting for?

She gave up the thought of meeting him. She followed him and observed every detail of that man, including how he swung his arms when he walked.

Even the size of his steps.

Little by little, she felt something was wrong.

Ye Xiao was good at self-restraint. He was at least the top 5 most self-restrained people in Qing-Yun Realm. That man acted exactly like Ye Xiao, but not entirely.

Nobody could tell the difference except Jun Yinglian, who knew Ye Xiao too well.

Even though she had felt something wrong, she still didn't want to give up the hope.

What if he changed a little bit because he was injured and couldn't keep moving in the same pattern?

What if he had changed just because something that had happened to him?

For Jun Yinglian, even though she had noticed something wrong about him, although it was most likely he wasn't Ye Xiao, she still hoped that the miracle happened and Ye Xiao was still alive!

As long as Ye Xiao was alive, she wouldn't care about anything else!

However, not long after the first fight, the fake Xiao Monarch was hunted for the second time!

Jun Yinglian finally confirmed that it was a trap!

Suddenly, she felt cold.

In her heart, there was only desperation.

[So it is a trap... He is a fake... That Ye Xiao is not real.]

Her dream was ended. The reality told her the truth again!

[So... Ye Xiao is dead after all.]

What happened was somebody trying to make use of Ye Xiao to set up a trap to Jun Yinglian. Somebody was trying to kill her! That was all!

However, she just let the show keep going again and again. Third, fourth, fifth...

She endured it for a long time and didn't kill those men only because... she wanted to see that man's face, to feel Ye Xiao.

She wanted to feel it like he was truly still alive.

Even though she had known that he was a fake Ye Xiao, that he would show more differences with the real one she wanted to see, she still wouldn't show up, just watching him with Ye Xiao's face...

[I don't care what you are doing, or how you die and come back to alive again and again, or the traps you set up to hurt me...]

[I don't care!]

[I just want to see the shadow of his back.]

[His face.]

It was the fifth time now.

She was sure that no matter who wanted to kill her, they were sure she was in this area. However, they didn't know where she exactly was.

That was why they kept putting on that show again and again.

About seven and eight men in black fought that fake Xiao Monarch, making big noises that could shock the world as if they wanted the entire world to watch them. They shouted so loudly to attract people's attention.

Jun Yinglian smiled sneeringly.

Finally, another fight was finished. That fake Xiao Monarch left in an imposing manner. The 'dead guys' lied on the floor. Jun

Yinglian was still standing still, watching them.

This time, it only took shorter than two hours for those men in black to relive. They got up and stayed together.

They had been 'killed' five times so far!

Five big-time battles, they had to be knocked down for five times. Surely, they had to relive for five times too. Otherwise, who was going to play the sixth show?

However, they had extra work to do this time. They seemed to be discussing something.

Were they planning on a new show?

For Jun Yinglian, whatever show they were going to play, she would only continue watching. All she cared about was the face of Ye Xiao. Nothing else mattered!

However, she quietly moved forward a little bit and set her spiritual mind closer to them to hear what they were talking. After all, they were setting up a trap to get her. It was always better to know what the enemies were thinking.

"Why is it not working..." One man spoke in a low voice, "Is she... Is that woman not in this area anymore?"

"Impossible. The order from up there has never pointed a wrong direction. She must be around." Another man said.

"Then how come she still hasn't shown up after five times. We have been doing it so loud, and she should be more than powerful enough to notice us..." a third man frowned and said.

"She will show up. We should avoid exposing ourselves." The man who seemed to be the leader of them said.

After speaking, he made a long sigh.

Apparently, he wasn't so sure about what he just said. It was more like a solace to himself.

"The supporting team has arrived and hidden well. Let's work harder, try to make it louder, and I am sure she will show up soon."

"Yes."

"Right. It has been a busy time in the martial world. It is said that Misty Cloud Palace was declaring war against Qiong-Hua Palace." One man changed the topic.

"No way. Really?" Another man doubted it, "If the two great palaces start to fight each other... there will be no peaceful days for the entire world."

"That's true. Since it is still quite peaceful as it appears, I guess the two palaces didn't truly start the fight."

Then they started to gabble.

"You guys have no idea. Do you?" The man who first started the topic seemed perky. He spoke with a low voice, "There is a big gossip in it... Besides, what is behind the gossip seemed to be unknown to all, like a big messy cloud of fog... The two palaces didn't start it yet, but they will eventually. It is an unavoidable war."

"Is it really? You must know something about the messy cloud of fog, don't you? Just tell us more." The others seemed interested.

"It is said... that it all happened in Oracle District." That man lowered his voice and spoke with a perky attitude of 'I am such an intelligent person among you a bunch ignorant, stupid men', "You all know what happened about the Saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace back then, don't you?"

"Absolutely. Who doesn't? What about it?"

"What about it? That is exactly about it..."

"Well, the thing is... blabablablablabla... It is said when Qiong-Hua Palace was shouting at the people of Ye Clan, preparing to kill Ye Nantian and that boy, who is the son of Ye Nantian and Yue

Gongxue... Misty Cloud Palace's people suddenly showed up! They supported Ye Clan fully. They even announced that they would start a war against Qiong-Hua Palace if Ye Clan wanted them to, that it is under their great Elder Xuan Bing's instruction!"

"Hiss... No way... Really? Isn't it sick? ... Well... Are you sure this is not your imagination?"

"What? Are you shocked now? This is not all... Something more shocking I am going to say..." That man was still perky, "When the two palaces were standing against each other and prepared to start a fight, the top superior cultivators of Cold Moon Palace, Zhan Yunfei, and Zhu Jiutian, suddenly showed up! They also supported Ye Clan, and declared enmity to Qiong-Hua Palace..."

"What? That's ridiculous! Why does it sound more like a story? What is going on?" The others were all confused. "Cold Moon Palace interfered? What would they do that for?"

"There must be a reason for that. And it must be big. It seems that the young lord of Ye Clan, son of Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue, is named Ye Xiao. He has the same name as Xiao Monarch, who died in the battle against the three factions. Isn't interesting?"

"What? Isn't he awesome? That is pretty awesome... Ye Nantian truly has guts. He actually gave his son such a domineering name... Wait a moment. If he is named Ye Xiao, why would Cold Moon Palace help Ye Clan? They are supposed to be enemies!"

"Heh... Because of what I am going to tell you next." That man continued, "The young lord Ye Xiao is about eighteen years old. However, he is pretty talented. He has become the private disciple to all the three grand elders of Cold Moon Palace..."

"What? Holy hell! That's absurd!" the others all exclaimed.

"Do you guys remember the big mess of the three factions, that they eventually dissolve their partnership earlier? This big young

lord Ye Xiao was the key... However, when he was in Cold Moon Palace, he was Ye Chongxiao, not Ye Xiao. He exposed his name only when he returned to Ye Clan. It is reasonable though. If he used his real name to live in the martial world, no matter how talented he is, the elders of Cold Moon Palace would never take him in. There is an issue between Xiao Monarch and the three factions. It is taboo after all. That is the story of fate and luck..."

"Hiss..."

"So I see..."

"I see... That is pretty twisty and interesting..."

"It is said that Oracle District has been the focal spot of all now..."

...

Not only the men in black were shocked, but also Jun Yinglian. That was many things happening at the same time.

She could never have imagined.

However, when she heard it, she didn't doubt it. After all, about Ye Xiao's name being used, she had learned it from Yue Gongxue earlier. In fact, it reminded her of what Yue Gongxue asked her to do!

It seemed she had to go to Oracle District.

Suddenly, her eyes were full of killing intent.

[Now I have something to do next. I got no time to play with you guys...]

...

Chapter 1106: Kill You for Him!

<Author's Note: Still two chapters in one!>

[Since you want to see me so badly, and have been putting on the shows to trap me, why don't I just let you see me, the past Prime Master of Sky Ice Palace?]

The lust for murder was rising in her heart.

Why would she waste time watching those people since she had something important to do next?

Those men were still enjoying the chitchats. The place they were staying at was a pit. The trees were tall, and they covered mostly everything around them. Even the sun couldn't scatter the lights in.

It was quite a covert place, and they were talking in a low voice, so they were unbridled to have the conversation.

However, all of a sudden, when a man was talking, his eyes popped out and looked unbelieving. It seemed he just saw something unbelievable.

The others turned over to look at what he saw.

The first thing they noticed was the white clothes, and then it was the silver sword lights that were rushing over to them like waterfalls. They felt the tingle in the eyes, and before they had time to exclaim, seven streams of blood thrust up to the sky!

Seven men died before they had time to do anything. They didn't even have time to stand up. The one who moved the fastest among them only had put his hand on the sword.

They were killed!

They were killed instantly by one sword strike!

One single strike!

With her mighty power, when she was intentionally making a sneak attack, even great cultivators like Xiao Monarch might be seriously injured, not to mention those regular cultivators who were used as baits.

The cold sword light flashed again. The freezing point of the sword was sticking on the only survivor's neck. It had stabbed slightly into his neck, touching his throat.

The only survivor was precisely the man who had been telling the story!

Now, he wasn't perky anymore. Instead, he was unbelieving and panicking, not knowing what to do, but actually didn't dare to move a bit. He kept rolling his eyeballs but didn't know what he should do.

He just saw the seven fellows of his die together at the moment when they turned their heads. It didn't make a sound when the sword cut their necks and let out the blood.

Seven lives were gone just like that.

He was rattled by the fear in his heart. He couldn't stay cerebral at all.

"Who are you?" Jun Yinglian looked frosty in the eyes. "Who sent you to set the trap? What organization do you belong to?"

The sword was pointing right at his throat as blood flowed down.

He was freaking out at the moment. He rattled, "I am..."

Yet he stopped when he said the two words. It seemed he had realized something, then he looked decisive. He opened his mouth and wanted to say something...

However, before he did, his throat was cut apart.

When his eyes looked decisive, Jun Yinglian knew that he wouldn't tell her anything valuable. He was ready to die... That was why she just killed him without hesitation, in case he sent any

information before he died to inform his fellows who might be around.

As she tilted the grasses with her sword casually, a big piece of grassland, about a dozen meters wide, was lifted up.

The eight dead bodies were moved under the grassland, and she put down the grassland to cover them. All traces were quietly hidden.

Even the smell of blood in the air was removed after she waved her hand.

It was a place of green grass, bird songs, and flowers. Nobody would know that there were eight Dao Origin Stage cultivators buried under the ground!

Her slender figure flew up like a piece of cloud in the dark forest and then moved fast through the trees.

She hadn't risen up to the top of the trees all along or flew down any lower than the middle of the boles. She just kept flying in the air, being covered by the trees, before eventually disappearing.

On a road of a hillside.

That fake Xiao Monarch was walking forward slowly, looking around cautiously. He had been playing the crucial role in setting up the trap to get Jun Yinglian. However, to make Jun Yinglian believe it was true, the attacks on him weren't all fake!

For him, if he were careless and got hit, he would be injured or even killed. That was why he couldn't be careless a bit when they were playing to show for the trap.

He was cautious now, preparing to deal with the attacks to come. He was confused though. [The leaders have confirmed that Jun Yinglian is in this area, haven't they? We have set it up so well, and we did make some noise that should be loud enough, why wouldn't she show up?]

[To make sure Jun Yinglian will be killed, the leaders have sent hundreds of superior assassins in the area, other than this play in which I am playing the main character, haven't they? The assassins should all be ready to kill. Even if your show fails, the assassins should be powerful enough to kill Jun Yinglian. This is a big show. There is such a great capture network. However, we still got nothing. How weird!]

[It has been months since the first day we did this, hasn't it?]

[Generally, It should be done long ago.]

[But it hasn't...]

The fake Xiao monarch was sure that Jun Yinglian must have left this area before his show.

He believed that, otherwise, she would definitely show up!

According to their plan, if things went well, he should be able to sit down and take a rest after walking for a little further. After that, he could take a turn and get ready for some food. The reason why they didn't let him rest in one place was that the place where he was going to eat some food would be a stage for another show. It wasn't indeed the time for him to eat.

It should be a new beginning of a show that could have lured Jun Yinglian to show up.

He was utterly bored about the days like this as an assassin. However, before the leaders told him to retreat... he had to keep doing it.

He sighed and looked exhausted. He leaned on a tree and prepared to take a nap. He closed his eyes slowly.

In fact, this was the only time he got to rest!

However, when he just closed the eyes, he abruptly opened them again.

Before he closed his eyes, he saw a terrifying white figure in the

corner of his sight.

When he opened his eyes, he saw a woman, who appeared in front of him and he didn't know when she showed up.

It was a beautiful woman.

He bet this was the first time he saw such a beautiful woman!

In fact, she was not only beautiful but also dangerous!

There was a sword in her hand.

The point of the sword had touched his throat from the moment she showed up in front of him!

The blade was frosty.

The air around the sword seemed to cool down sharply as it would never stop.

He knew who she was for the first sight.

Jun Yinglian.

She was the target of his trap!

However, the target had targeted him!

[No! I can't let her kill me! Although I won't be able to defeat her, I have this face! Isn't it a big strike to her? It should be able to save me!]

He looked panicking in the eyes for seconds and then became shocked. After that, he intentionally showed her a sense of longing murmured, "Lian Lian?"

The organization he belonged to had done lots of research and came up with this method, which could make him act exactly like the real Xiao Monarch in front of her.

If she still suspected Ye Xiao's death, she would fall to it.

Her eyes were still full of coldness. She blandly looked at that familiar face, and sneered, "Well played. You look just like him.

You acted just like him. However, there is one thing you can't fake. You can't make the fake real."

The fake Xiao Monarch still murmured painfully, "Lian Lian... Do you still hate me..."

Jun Yinglian sneered. She didn't even want to talk to this man anymore. [Who do you think you are? How dare you impersonate my lover?]

[How dare you pose as him talking to me?]

The spiritual energy in the sword had blocked his vocal cord. Her sword moved and then that fake Xiao Monarch's entire face was cut off.

It was bloody and terrifying.

Flaying created the extreme pain to a man. However, that man couldn't even exclaim. He just trembled.

"How could this face grow on somebody else body?" Jun Yinglian blandly said, "Especially not in the body of a man who impersonates my man to hurt me."

The fake Xiao Monarch's eyes were full of terror, fear, and confusion.

[My face, my posture, my words, my manners... are all perfect. How did she find out I am fake?]

[How did she do it?]

[How... How is this possible?]

"You must be curious." Jun Yinglian blandly said, "Let me clear your head before you go to hell... No matter what organization you belong to, you know quite well about Xiao Monarch. His face. His body. His moves and words. His postures. The way he talked. Even his martial art. You impersonated him perfectly."

"You must be so confident as if even Xiao Monarch himself would see you as a reflection in the mirror if he was here."

"But I can still notice the difference. Why?"

She looked utterly proud of it, with a feeling of standing high upon the clouds. "It is simple. Nobody can fake his vigor, his specialty, his heart."

"It is his extreme indifference to everything in the world. You can't fake it! It is his carelessness to his life and death. You can't fake it! It is his pride of standing upon the clouds looking down at the small world. You can't fake it!"

"Most importantly, the regret and guilt to me that is buried deep in his heart and his soul is something you can never fake!"

Jun Yinglian smiled, "You? You want to con me? Are you all kicked in the head by a pig? Do you understand now? Are you willing to die now?"

"I kill you, not because you are trying to kill me, not because of the trap you set up to get me, but because... you shouldn't impersonate him!"

"There is only one Xiao Monarch in the world!"

"If he were alive, he would kill you!"

"Then I shall kill you for him!"

That man's eyes turned deadly grey. He got it.

[I see.]

[I deserve this. Xiao Monarch was such a great cultivator. It is never easy to fake him. It is impossible to correctly pretend to be him to cheat the woman who loves him and knows him so much...]

[This plan is bound to fail.]

He slowly closed his eyes. Was he going to give up?

Suddenly, his throat moved.

He wasn't giving up. Instead, he was making the last decision!

Jun Yinglian hurriedly pinched his throat, trying to stop

whatever he was doing. This man was the key to the trap. He must know more about the organization than those men in black.

However, it was too late. There was a mass of black smoke coming out from his mouth. After that, the dark blood was overflowing his mouth. His head fell aside, and he was dead.

Jun Yinglian humphed. She didn't feel sorry for him at all. She started to check the man's body, but his body actually started to rot fast. After a while, he had turned into a cloud of cyan smoke.

Jun Yinglian had grabbed a space ring, but there was nothing but only a sword in it.

She lost the trace.

She frowned.

She lost the trail, and she was wondering who was working so hard to kill her!

It was evident to her.

[It is nobody but the three factions!]

"Humph!" Jun Yinglian coldly humphed and spoke in a low voice, "There is always a priority. You are lucky. I will let you breathe for a little longer. When I finish what I promised to Yue Gongxue, I will go make a closure with you!"

Her slender body thrust up to the sky with the breeze. After a while, it stirred up chaos in the sky. A piece of white cloud shot toward the north in lightning. The thunderclaps only sounded on the floor after a long time.

The three factions had been haunted by Jun Yinglian for a long time. They were becoming more and more heavily-guarded. In fact, even if Jun Yinglian stayed here, she wouldn't get a chance to make a massacre.

The only way to do it was to start a frontal battle.

However, she wouldn't stand a chance to win a frontal battle. She

knew it. Besides, she was lucky to escape the trap this time. It wasn't as easy as what she told that fake Xiao Monarch. Since the three factions hired such a mysterious assassination organization to kill her, they would keep trying different ways to do it. If she kept harassing them, they wouldn't stop trying to kill her, and she could hardly get a chance to take her revenge anyway. She decided to leave it for some time and returned someday afterward!

She left the area for the promise she made to Yue Gongxue, as well as for loosening the three factions' alert.

She shouldn't lose patience in taking revenge.

To make tension and flab alternately was the best way!

[I will do whatever I promise to do.]

[Although I am a woman, I will keep my words, which most men can't do!]

...

Author's note:

When I am writing this chapter, I suddenly feel sad for Jun Yinglian...

If there is one character in this book that I feel apologetic to, it would be Jun Yinglian...

Chapter 1107: Dan God Inheritance!

Jun Yinglian after the time it took for an incense stick to burn.

Many shadows kept approaching. If she didn't intentionally make the lightning scent with thunderclaps which could only be performed by level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators before she left, these men wouldn't be able to notice anything wrong in a short time.

Over a hundred figures were approaching from different directions. However, when they saw what had happened, they were shocked and stopped.

The plan failed.

They hadn't even seen the target, yet the plan failed.

They didn't even know how.

At the moment, a man was approaching from the sky with thunderclaps in the wind. Flashes of lightning were still striking in the air, but the man had landed in front of the others.

He was tall and robust, with a golden mask on his face and imposing manner.

"Chief." The others saw him and bowed.

The golden-mask man looked at the dead bodies under the tree and blandly said, "Cease the plan. Kill all the other fake Xiao Monarchs we are raising. Immediately. We need a new plan to get Jun Yinglian. Now!"

"Why?" one of the other asked.

Every plan was based on the analysis of human nature. They raised impersonators who could create the most significant effect on the targets. It was never an easy way to make a perfect impersonator. It took a long time and tons of details about the person who was to be impersonated. The cultivation of the

imitated person was one challenging job. The men who were raised to impersonate Ye Xiao should have the same appearance and behavior as Ye Xiao, and they had to be good in cultivation.

Even though their weaker capability could be explained as they were seriously injured, they should still be above the initial level of Dao Origin Stage. It was not an easy job to improve somebody to Dao Origin Stage even in Qing-Yun Realm. According to what the golden-mask man said, more people were just like the fake Xiao Monarch that was killed by Jun Yinglian. That was quite a substantial expense!

However, he actually wanted to abandon it. This golden-mask man was terrible!

It was pretty unbelievable and unimaginable for his underlings! Wasn't it too much a waste?

"Simple reason... Jun Yinglian flayed his face." The golden-mask man looked at a small pile of flesh and blood in a bush. It still had the shape of a human face. There were muscles in it too.

The others were silent.

Golden-mask man took a few steps and blandly said, "I said it would work. They just didn't believe it. If Jun Yinglian didn't leave early, and if she found you, it would be easy for her to kill you all... If she captured one of you, it would be pretty possible that our secret would be leaked."

"That is the biggest risk we are taking."

"I said it is impossible to impersonate a peerless great cultivator, yet you insisted on trying... Humph!"

He seemed to complain about somebody. The over one hundred Dao Origin Stage cultivators all bowed and kept listening.

"However, the failure of the plan is not completely a bad thing... At least, she hated the three factions more now." He blandly said, "Everybody, retreat!"

As he gave the order, all the others followed. They immediately disappeared in the forests.

Golden-mask man kept his hands behind the back, looking into the distance, murmuring, "We must do it faster..."

Then he flashed and disappeared in a piece of cloud, leaving no trace behind.

...

In Oracle District.

Under Li Yunxuan's full support, Ye Clan had become the deputy force of Misty Cloud Palace in Oracle District.

It meant all the other forces that were connected to Misty Cloud Palace would have to deal with Ye Clan, including those who traded Regeneration Lotus to Misty Cloud Palace. All medicinal materials should be transferred to Ye Clan, and Ye Clan would get the cultivation resources from Misty Cloud Palace as a relay station.

In another word, no matter what the other clans collected, they had to give it to Ye Clan, not to Misty Cloud Palace. Whoever violated the rule would be punished by Misty Cloud Palace, even not by Ye Clan!

That meant all the local forces would be under the lead of Ye Clan.

Zhan Yunfei who represented Cold Moon Palace had done a bigger favor. He made a list of all the spiritual plants Cold Moon Palace needed and made a fair deal with Ye Clan.

Suddenly, the second-rate local clan, Ye Clan, became the focal point with prestige.

It wasn't the end of the surprise yet. Misty Cloud Palace decided to set up a field base in Ye Clan so that they could work more efficiently.

The clever ones knew that it was apparently the most thoughtful protection to Ye Clan!

Misty Cloud Palace was trying to protect Ye Clan in every possible way!

If Qiong-Hua Palace wanted to attack Ye Clan afterward, they just couldn't! Unless Misty Cloud Palace collapsed!

People of the other clans in Oracle District were all jealous about the privilege of Ye Clan.

The recent good luck of Ye Clan was unstoppable.

Nobody knew the reason why Misty Cloud Palace would do it and do it in such a thorough way, but they at least knew that Ye Xiao was the real disciple of the three grand elder of Cold Moon Palace!

That meant Ye Xiao was in a pretty high position in Cold Moon Palace!

In fact... according to what they knew about the three old men, he might be the most important person who was in the highest position!

The most important!

Ye Xiao had worked so hard recently. Now his father finally took charge of Ye Clan. It was important to enhance the clan after all!

He had lots of dan beads in Boundless Space...

It would be a waste not to use them when he could use them!

He took out a part of the dan beads and gave it away to the others in the clan. When he gave the dan beads to the clan, he explained that they were gifts from his sect, Cold Moon Palace!

The ignorant people in the clan didn't recognize any of the great dan beads!

They just believed whatever they were told.

Whenever Ye Xiao lied about it, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian

would nod to help. But they would also stare at the dan beads with saliva flowing down their mouths. "That's true... We have plenty of such dan beads... These are not the best though... Just regular..."

Ye Clan people trusted them.

[Cold Moon Palace should be able to take out some dan beads like these... It is a ten thousand years old sect after all...]

[Besides, our young lord is the successor of their grand elders! He is the most important person in their sect!]

[It is reasonable that he takes some dan beads from the sect to help his own family. It makes sense!]

...

Ye Clan people would never know how exactly Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian felt at the moment.

They were not some ignorant men. They were superior cultivators with sharp eyes. Of course, they couldn't be sure what level the supreme dan beads were precisely... but they knew it must be really high!

They looked at Ye Xiao giving away some valuable dan beads that were even beyond their recognition to the others in the name of Cold Moon Palace.

They didn't get one dan bead out of it and even had to help him with the lie.

They kept swallowing when looking at the dan beads, yet they had to say, "These are nothing... Not important... We have plenty of it..."

[Plenty my ass!]

They were shouting in their heads, [We got nothing! We don't have any!]

They never doubted the high value of the dan beads of Ye Xiao,

because they knew the secret why the three grand elders' lives would be extended. Ye Xiao had Life Origin Dan that had never been seen in Qing-Yun Realm for centuries, he undoubtedly was possible to have the other high-level dan beads.

The dan beads he gave the others were all at incredibly high levels, but they were all regular dan. They had great effects to low-level cultivators, but no contribution to top-level cultivators like Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian!

Maybe they didn't realize those were the legendary Supreme Dan. If they did, they would take a few and sent them back to the sect and asked their dan-maker to study it!

However, Cold Moon Palace might not be in need of raising a dan-maker anymore since they had Ye Xiao now, a supreme dan master!

The next few days, Ye Xiao kept giving the dan beads to others. Ye Clan's power was significantly increased!

He was such an experienced cultivator. He could see what a man's weakness just by a glance. That was how he decided to give what kind of dan beads to different people...

People with different needs would get precisely what they needed. After swallowing the dan beads, they would be shockingly improved immediately!

After that, Ye Xiao chose a few youngsters and mainly trained them.

The youngsters took a few dan beads from Ye Xiao and got improved so significantly that even Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were astonished. The youngsters were just ordinary at the beginning. If they were in Cold Moon Palace, they would be treated as trash.

That was all!

However, after what Ye Xiao did to them, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu

Jiutian even wanted to have them as their private disciples!

They all became highly talented cultivations!

Their bodies were a bit transparent like they had been refined by the sky and the earth.

Wherever they were, the spiritual qi would automatically keep going into their bodies...

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were completely wordless.

[How come?]

[Little brother disciple, don't you think you are carrying too many secrets?]

[You made your father a Dao Origin Stage cultivator within one single day. That's fine. He is known as a talented man after all. Your grandfather, who was not quite gifted in cultivation, actually boosted up two levels in Dao Origin Stage! Isn't it too much? He is an experienced cultivator. That is right. All he needed was to take one step up. True. But... Isn't it too fast?]

[After that, things are becoming ridiculous...]

[You made these young men became completely different people!]

[That is incredible!]

[That is something only a god could do...]

When Ye Xiao finally finished everything in Ye Clan, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian grabbed him aside and started to question him again.

"Say it! What is going on?" Zhan Yunfei slapped the table fiercely as if Ye Xiao would have to tell him exactly what he wanted to know.

"What do you mean what is going on?" Ye Xiao looked confused. [I don't know what you are talking about.]

"Just tell us what those dan beads are!" Zhan Yunfei nearly went crazy. "Those dan beads! They are unbelievably valuable! I haven't even seen some of them... No. I haven't even heard to them! It's fine that you need me to cover your lie. But I felt sick! I feel jealous! I can't help it... You... It will hurt me so bad if you still won't tell me the truth..."

"Oh... You mean the dan beads..." Ye Xiao took a deep breath, "I thought it was something serious..."

"Holy hell! Isn't this a serious thing? Are you really going to be this pretentious to us?" Zhan and Zhu were both mad.

[We Cold Moon Palace has lived for ten thousand years, yet we have never gotten any one of those dan beads! Those are super powerful dan beads! You just gave away hundreds of it... And you even don't think it is a serious thing?]

[We feel pain in the heart, the muscle, the livers! We feel reluctant!]

[Are you telling us that those incredibly precious dan beads actually mean nothing to you?]

[You can't be more arrogant, can you?]

"What kind of serious thing is it?" Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes and showed an innocent face, like he was totally lost. "That dan beads are... just normal... They are not something valuable..."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were speechless.

They suddenly didn't know what to say.

[Those dan beads don't have any significant effects indeed, but they are in incredible levels! All right?]

[At least they are in the levels neither of us ever heard of!]

The two of them looked at each other and then took a heavy breath with a deep sigh. They felt weak in their bodies and didn't know what words to say at the moment.

After a while, Zhan Yunfei weakly said, "Those dan beads are... actually quite good..."

"Quite good?" Ye Xiao said with the eyes wide open, "How? Bone Ablutionary Dan, Pei-Yuan Dan, Spirit Gathering Dan, Mai Ablution Dan, Limit Breaking Dan... They are all low-grade dan! We have a dan-maker in the sect! He can make you more than you want... I am just giving away such a small amount... Why mention it? Brothers, please no more kidding. Please, if you want to flatter me, think of some other words. What you said was merely a joke. And it wasn't funny."

Zhan Yunfei had to sigh, being questioned by Ye Xiao.

He was thinking, [Maybe he doesn't know?]

Then he sighed and said, "I am not trying to flatter you. I am not kidding. Our dan-maker can make the same kinds of dan that you mentioned indeed... However, the dan beads he makes are not even close to those that you gave to your people..."

He thought for a while and said, "Pah! That's a stupid comparison. His dan beads are too much weaker! There is a huge difference between his dan beads and yours! Look, think about this. If your dan beads are golds, then his dan beads are rocks... No, worse than rocks..."

Ye Xiao pretended to be shocked. "What?"

Apparently, he was going to pretend ignorance till the end of the conversation.

Zhan Yunfei kept sighing. He gave up on making that comparison. "I know that the extension of the three elders' lives is your work. I know you used to focus on studying the art of dan, in a quite influential sect that only makes valuable dan beads. However, it is still unbelievable that you can make such precious things... Where did you... Where did you get the dan beads?"

Ye Xiao suddenly turned overjoyed when he heard Zhan Yunfei's

words. He said, "The Life Origin Dan beads I gave to my three masters are extraordinary! Those were utterly superior dan beads! I took those heavenly level dan beads from my origin sect. My skills are not good enough to make dan beads like that. The dan beads I just gave my people... It is a long story..."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were depressed. They stared at him and felt like their bodies were shaking. "Go slowly... We've got plenty of time."

"When I left the sect... I kept heading to the south. I kept walking casually and accidentally entered a big mountain..." Ye Xiao said.

"What mountain?" The two brothers asked.

"It was a weird mountain... When I walked over, I fell below a cliff. The cliff was absolutely straight down..."

He was telling the truth.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were confused.

What Ye Xiao was talking about was where he found Li Wuliang. It was all true. He wasn't lying!

However... even Li Wuliang, who had been living down the cliff for a long time, never found the sharp and weird cliff, let alone Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian!

"A cliff... absolute straight from the top to the bottom?" Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian looked at each other. They truly couldn't think of any place like that. "What then?"

"When I was in that strange place, the first thing I did was to look around. I found that some clouds were covering the bottom of the cliff. I couldn't see any sunlight at all. Down in the bottom, it was all covered by snow, which wouldn't melt forever..."

He was being serious, "I was so upset. I tried everything that was possible to get me out of there. However, I just couldn't find a way out... More importantly, I didn't have much food with me. I was

cold and sleepy and hungry. So I decided to find a spot to stay warm... Luckily, I found a cave on the wall of the cliff!"

"Of course, I just entered it without any hesitation..."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian seemed enlightened when Ye Xiao mentioned the cave.

[It seems the cave is the key to everything.]

"It was a residence in the cave... There was a skeleton sitting in the center of the cave. I don't know how many years that man had been sitting there. Only his bones were left. The bones were like jade, hard and impossible to break. I tried everything I could, but it couldn't be broken..." Ye Xiao said.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian took a deep cold breath. "A skeleton? Hard? Unbreakable? For real?"

[In what level that departed man was?]

[At least there is no one among the most powerful figures in Qing-Yun Realm can leave an unbreakable skeleton after death...]

"That's right." Ye Xiao nodded. "On the wall beside the skeleton, there were some words. It said that a Dan God from outside the realm got plotted against..."

Now, Ye Xiao started to make up a story in a fluid and casual way as if every word he said was valid.

However, he couldn't tell anybody the truth, could he? No, he couldn't!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were listening to a ridiculous, absurd, and unbelievable story with a bullsh*t main character. When they finally heard the end of the story, they still felt lost in it. They felt dazzled and confused like they were just awakening from a dream. Everything seemed to be so unreal to them.

"You said, that skeleton was a Dan God from outside the realm?"

"Right."

"You said... there are lots of bottles with dan beads in them? That Dan God wrote the applications on the bottles?"

"Yes."

"All dan beads are in such a high level?"

"Apparently."

"That means you have gotten the inheritance from a Dan God?"

"... Well, what can I say? I inherited the skills from quite an influential sect in the first place. The forefather of my origin sect was also capable of making supreme dan. In fact, I think maybe he is better than that Dan God. My master told me before he died, that I was a talented dan-maker that hadn't been known to the world. I should be more talented than all the forefathers of the sect. The art of dan may be developed and promulgated to a record-breaking level in my hands! So... In fact, I don't really need that Dan God's inheritance. It was a useless favor to me!"

"Holy hell! That is too arrogant!"

"What? What did you say? Look, the Life Origin Dan that my three masters had are made by my old master. Do you think I am joking? If only the three elders didn't tell me to keep my dan-making talent a secret to others... Humph..."

"That Dan God claimed to be a Dan God himself. How do you know he was not lying?"

"Never mind. There is always a bigger mountain. Nobody is perfect. I know it now. There is never the most ignorant man, but always the more ignorant one than the previous one... Hmm. Okay. You said that when you left that place, it collapsed?"

"Yes. It just fell down. I don't know what was wrong even now... Why would it just collapse like that?" Ye Xiao looked confused.

It seemed he was waiting for others to give him the answer.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were stunned.

...

<Author's note: Didn't you realize this chapter is much longer than usual? It is a three-in-one chapter...>

...

Chapter 1108: Two Ladies Met

<Author's note: This is a long chapter with over three chapters' word counts.> [Our little brother disciple actually has such a good fortune. He is indeed blessed.]

[God bless Cold Moon Palace! We have such a peerless genius!]

"I guess it could be... That Dan God might have set up some kind of array... Once his inheritance was taken by somebody, the mountains would collapse and become his tomb. Many powerful figures in the history did the same thing. It isn't anything mysterious..."

Zhu Jiutian was making a conjecture. As he was talking, he talked more and more confidently. He believed it in the end.

"Oh..." Ye Xiao shook the head. "I truly don't want any of his inheritance. It is not as systematic as what I learned from my sect."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were wordless again. [You don't want it? Do you know how many people are crying and yearning for that inheritance?]

Zhan Yunfei suddenly thought of something. He said, "Urh, little brother disciple, how... how many dan beads did you get from that place?"

Ye Xiao blinked and said, "Not many... Three hundred or four hundred... Not more than six hundred. Hmm. That's it. I didn't count, but it should roughly be that number. All the dan beads are just like those I gave my people today. Low-ranged. Not a big deal."

"That is a lot..." Zhan and Zhu nodded with lights of greediness in their eyes. [There must be a lot left.] Although Ye Xiao had given a lot to Ye Clan people, those were less than two hundred. Zhan and Zhu had been counting.

[That means he still has about four hundred!]

So they asked, "Does it mean... you still have plenty of the dan beads?"

"Not anymore." Ye Xiao spoke honestly, "After I got the dan beads, I have been eating them... I eat when I am hungry. I eat when I am thirsty. I eat when I am sleepy... Those are low-class dan beads, but with good effects. It always spirited me up... I have eaten about one hundred... Trust me! I have boosted in cultivation on the road. I have reached level nine of Dream Origin Stage now. It is just a step to Dao Origin Stage... I guess the dan beads did help..."

Ye Xiao amusedly said, "Not bad, right? My improvement?"

Zhan and Zhu were stunned. They stared at Ye Xiao and didn't say a word for a long time.

[Not bad?]

[That is brilliant!]

After a while, Zhan Yunfei, who was stunned and stiff, had his head fall down on the table and it bounced. And then he shouted in a sad voice, "Did you say... you have eaten a hundred of those dan beads... just to feed your stomach?"

"Yes, I did. What? Just some normal dan beads. Not a big deal." Ye Xiao showed an innocent face.

"Not a big deal? Holy hell! I wish those dan beads... rupture your stomach! You prick!" Zhan Yunfei fiercely said.

He was venting the grudge in his chest out when he said the word 'prick'!

[I haven't seen such high-level valuable dan beads in my life! He actually ate them like they were some sweet beans...]

[Are you addicted?]

[That can't be more wasteful!]

[You don't just take being extravagant as being pure!]

[I don't feel like being alive anymore...]

[Holy heavens! Please strike a bolt of lightning and kill this motherf*cker!]

[I wish I haven't heard what he just said...]

[That was disgusting! Gross! That hurts!]

"Even though you have eaten over a hundred, there should still be more..." Zhu Jiutian asked.

"I met a friend on my way, so I gave him over a dozen. I am close-fisted sometimes. This is embarrassing. I am ashamed..." Ye Xiao awkwardly said.

"What? A dozen? Don't feel embarrassed now. Tell us his name. Who is he? What is his name?" Zhu and Zhan looked at him with glaring eyes.

"I don't know his name... I just recognized his face. I don't know. I just felt that he is a nice guy... We parted outside the Oracle District. I shouldn't have just given him a dozen. I should give him at least one hundred, even not half of what I have. Yet I actually just gave him over a dozen. That was embarrassing. My masters will scold me for that..." Ye Xiao looked embarrassed.

- Pang! -

- Pang! -

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian both got their heads hit on the table, and two heads bounced on the table. They felt so deadly upset...

[Please, I am begging you, little brother disciple... Those were all valuable treasures... You don't even know that guy's name, yet you gave him over a dozen...]

[Now you are telling me that was close-fisted?]

[You actually... Actually... Actually...]

[We can't hear more of it. You will strike us to death!]

"When I got home, I realized my grandmother was sick. I had some proper dan beads that seemed to be useful for them. I used over a dozen on her. My grandfather was better. But I couldn't just give my grandmother something without giving my grandfather anything. I have to make it even..." Ye Xiao continued.

Zhan Yunfei was numb.

He was totally shocked.

He didn't know what to say anymore.

"Brothers, why happened? I truly don't think those are valuable things. We make dan beads for people to eat them, right? We have a dan-maker who produces dan beads for our disciples. I know we have a full storehouse of dan beads. You know I do, don't you? Masters showed me the storehouse!" Ye Xiao said.

"Gosh..." Zhan Yunfei was in despair.

He honestly felt too weak to speak anymore.

[What to say?]

[What can I say?]

[It is a full storehouse of dan beads... But those dan beads... Those dan beads in total worth less than one dan bead of yours!]

[No, not just Cold Moon Palace. All the sects in Qing-Yun Realm do not have any dan beads like yours!]

[That man called himself Dan God, then he must be a dan god!]

Zhan and Zhu felt angry but upset at the same time. However, they had nobody to talk to. The blood rose up to the chest and then fell down, then rose and fell again. They could spit out a mouthful of blood by just opening their mouths.

"Brothers, are you top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators also interested in these normal dan beads? I still have some with me..."

Ye Xiao waved his hand and over a dozen bottles appeared on the table. "These are all... Not any precious things. If you really like them, brothers, just take them! You could just tell me earlier. Why didn't you? You never told me, but just kept saying how valuable these dan beads were. It only made you look like some ignorant fools. We are brothers, so I am just being frank. Look, you are both influential cultivators. Why are you so small-minded?"

The two men were totally shocked!

They were wordless!

However, they directly ignored Ye Xiao's words!

What they did was to stare at those bottles!

[What did he say? He said... he was giving all these dan beads to us?]

[Holy heavens! Is that real?]

[No way!]

[Really?]

[He was not joking... He wasn't! He meant it...]

Those were at least a hundred dan beads. According to what Ye Xiao said to them, those were probably all that he had left.

That was obvious.

Ye Xiao just took them all out before counting.

That meant those were all he had left.

[These magical dan beads... There are over a hundred of them... What an enormous number!]

[They are all... ours?]

[I didn't dare to even think about it!]

However, after they took a second thought about how Ye Xiao wasted about five hundred of the dan beads, they still felt their

hearts were twisting and hurting...

[That is so painful...]

They were having the exact same thought.

Especially when they opened the bottles... and saw those round little dan beads with rolling dan qi, and the qi in the air was moving to the dan beads... They felt more freaked out.

[Holy heavens. These... These are the legendary supreme dan beads... Only the dan beads with dan cloud could automatically absorb spiritual qi to keep their efficacy from running away...]

"Hundreds of these... legendary Supreme Dan..." Zhu Jiutian nearly shed tears. "They were just gone... That can't be more extravagant..."

"We are brothers. If you like them, just take them." Ye Xiao waved a hand, acting generously. "These normal dan beads, I assume we don't have many in our sect's storehouse! Right?"

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were numb.

[Of course, we don't have many of these dan beads. In fact, our 'not many' is quite different from your 'not many'. Two completely different reasons!]

[It is not just 'not many', but 'none'!]

[How... How can you be so stupid?]

They believed if they took the dan beads back to the sect when Ye Xiao returned to Cold Moon Palace, somebody would cry with tears!

Ye Xiao might not cry, but Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian definitely would!

The three elders would definitely punch the sh*t out of these two. [How dare you con your little brother disciples for his dan beads!]

[We can't believe you did this!]

[Aren't you ashamed?]

They were so upset at the moment.

[Should we turn it down? Those supreme dan beads?]

"Little brother disciple, listen to me, the dan beads you have, don't tell anybody else about it. Don't ever..." Zhan Yunfei was earnest. "Never ever... Brother, listen! This is huge! This is a big deal!"

"Urh... Why are you nagging like the elders? These are just normal dan beads... Do you really have to..." Ye Xiao murmured disdainfully.

"These dan beads... We can't take them..." They pushed the bottles back to Ye Xiao like they were slowly cutting their own skins again and again.

It was like a bloody deep wound on them.

"What is this? Are you looking down upon me?" Ye Xiao frowned. "Just take them... Do you really need to do this? They are merely some dan beads! We are brothers. What could be wrong about you two taking some dan beads from me? Look at you. You obviously want them, but you just pretend you don't! I just don't like it."

Then he separated the dan beads into three. He took one and gave the other two to Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian.

They would never take them all.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian blushed. They were rubbing hands. They genuinely wanted to take them, but they felt embarrassed to do so. Ye Xiao pushed the bottles into their arms, and that was the end of the embarrassment...

Zhan Yunfei grinned and said, "Brother, I guess I should be honest with you. The dan beads of yours are not in high-class, but they are all in supreme level. They are exactly Supreme Dan! Not

just normal dan beads... They are more precious than all the dan beads of our sect in total. Cold Moon Palace has never gotten even one supreme dan bead in thirty thousand years... Do you... Do you understand what I am trying to tell you?"

Zhan Yunfei couldn't just take the dan beads when his little brother disciple didn't know the value of them.

He decided to tell Ye Xiao the truth.

Zhu Jiutian nodded to agree.

They were indeed good friends and excellent partners! They did things in the same pattern!

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He felt warm in the heart.

[These two men... who used to be my enemies, are now my brothers in the sect.]

[They are actually... nice men.]

[They actually can do things beyond the ethical bottom line as men.]

[They are genuinely nice to me!]

He was having contradictory feelings at the moment. [If someday I take revenge of myself against the three factions, these two fellows will definitely stand opposite to me. What should I do then?]

"Brothers, I don't think you have listened carefully, do you? I learned my skills of dan-making in a brilliant dan-making sect. Of course, I know the dan beads of the sect are all worse to mine. I also know what Supreme Dan is."

He was having complicated feelings in the heart but didn't show it in the face. He just said in a low voice, "So what? They are supreme dan beads. They are still dan beads to be eaten! Using the right dan beads on the right person is a good choice. What is the point to keep all the dan beads to myself?"

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were astonished and nodded.

They knew Ye Xiao was saying a simple truth. However, would they be so generous and give the dan beads to others as Ye Xiao did?

They kept questioning themselves in the hearts and felt more and more compunctious.

[I will protect this young brother till the end of my life!]

"Besides, think about why I decided to give you the dan beads. You two are still wounded. You need the dan beads to heal yourselves. Just let the dan beads do their jobs first, will you?" Ye Xiao sighed.

Ye Xiao felt like everything was destined all of a sudden.

Weren't they exactly wounded by him?

However, he was giving them the dan beads to cure themselves.

The whole thing went back to the starting point.

Yet it had been a long time like the world was all changed, and the seas all had become lands.

The next day, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian walked out of their rooms in laughter. They looked spirited up. The wounds that had stayed inside them were all cured in one night. With the help of those dan beads, they even improved a lot in cultivation!

Within those days, all the people in Oracle District noticed one thing. The atmosphere of spiritual qi in Oracle District had changed. It became normal.

It was no longer too energetic to capture and absorb.

In fact, it all started when Ye Xiao obtained the Mountain of All Medicines. When he got the mountain, the spiritual qi in this district gradually stopped being too energetic!

Otherwise, when Ye Xiao trained the young generation of Ye

Clan, the spiritual qi wouldn't automatically go into the several young men!

When people all confirmed the truth, everybody in Oracle District was crazy about it.

After such a long time, the restraint in this area was gone!

It was a day when all the cultivators broke through to a new level together. Almost every cultivator had reached higher levels.

They used to be limited by the strange atmosphere in this place. Now it was normal. They naturally got boosted!

"We Oracle District finally got an opportunity to have some really powerful cultivators in the world!"

The news spread to every corner of Qing-Yun Realm.

All the influential forces started to send their men to Oracle District all of a sudden.

This almost wasteland suddenly became a honeypot!

Everybody realized one thing. Since the nature restraint was removed in Oracle District, the constraint that had been suppressing the people in the area would definitely become incredibly propulsion!

Even those who were not so talented would be improved by the reverse boost!

The entire Qing-Yun Realm was in an uproar.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian got a particular advantage of it because they were precisely in this area. They recruited many disciples in Ye Clan, and they were going to take them back to Cold Moon Palace and mainly train them.

Misty Cloud Palace recruited many disciples from the young girls of Ye Clan.

To return the favor, when Ye Xiao saw Li Yunxuan, he directly

gave her nine plants of Regeneration Jade Lotus that were all in high quality. Those were all wonderful lotuses that were about to upgrade!

When he took out the Regeneration Jade Lotus, Fairy Li, Li Yunxuan, nearly dropped her eyes on the floor. She almost exclaimed loudly because of the surprise.

She couldn't have even dreamt about such a pleasure!

The first thing she did was to send a message back to the sect for some more people. She notably required people above level seven of Dao Origin Stage, as they were needed to protect the lotuses!

At the same time, they would bring the young girls they just recruited...

What a huge surprise!

When Xuan Bing asked her to protect Ye Clan and fully support Ye Xiao, she didn't think much about it. She couldn't think of one possible reason why Xuan Bing would do it. She was merely following Xuan Bing's instruction!

After all, nobody needed a reason to obey great ElderXuan Bing!

However, now she changed her mind.

[Elder Xuan Bing always has foresight! If we didn't fully support Ye Clan, we would never be lucky enough to have these lotuses.]

Now, even if she had to sacrifice herself to protect Ye Clan, she would be willing to die ten thousand times to keep all harms away from Ye Clan people!

The young Lord Ye had told her... that there were still lots of Regeneration Jade Lotus in the Mountain of All Medicines... Nobody else could find them...

Li Yunxuan believed it. She didn't want to doubt it either. An exchange of profits certainly enhanced the excellent relationship between the two forces. If only one side was making the

contribution, the relationship wouldn't last long. Besides, the layers above the third layer was a place in Mountain of All Medicines that only Wu Fa and Xuan Big had been. It was a place full of danger and terror. Ye Xiao could get into it and bring good stuff out. It meant he was a capable man!

Just according to that, the young Lord Ye was a hidden treasure!

The next few days, he was practicing martial arts with Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian!

Under their watch, Ye Xiao broke through the limit and became level one of Dao Origin Stage. It was not the end yet! He reached the top of level one of Dao Origin Stage in just three days!

That meant he could reach level two after a little hard work in the coming few days!

If he only got significant improvement in cultivation level, it would be a surprise but not an astonishing one. What impressed them most was that... in the one-on-one combat, when Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian didn't operate their most powerful technique, Ye Xiao could actually hold on in the fight for a certain while!

He was limpingly defending in the combat though. However, he still survived the attacks of the top level Dao Origin Stage cultivators!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian both stayed shocked during the days.

[Holy hell... That is sick... How could he possibly improve so fast... I have... never seen anybody like this.]

...

Meanwhile, from somewhere far from them, a beautiful woman was moving toward Oracle District like lightning among the clouds in the sky.

She was like a cloud of sweet-scented wind, quietly moving over thousands of mountains and rivers.

Technically, she wasn't moving really fast.

She was quite casual.

What she was going to do was to finish something she promised.

It was reasonable that she would go in a leisure way. She could at least deal with the wounds she had gotten during the previous days. That could help her recover her spiritual qi after all.

In fact, what she was going to do wasn't that important to her. In fact, it was just to fulfill a mother's wish...

Besides, she and Xiao Monarch had started this at the very beginning, although it was just a small favor.

Jun Yinglian wouldn't have thought that what happened next would ultimately change her life!

When she got over a huge mountain that was covered y clouds and mist, she lowered down to check it. Usually, such a mountain would contain some treasures.

She was not in a hurry after all. It wouldn't take long to do some searching. She was using up all the resources she had during the fights in the previous days. It would be great if she could collect some more.

When she was thinking about it and ready to get down, she saw a mass of dark mist below her rushing up to the sky!

It had a strong aura of a king descending, truly domineering!

The dark fog spread away and then instantly became a full area of dark clouds. It suddenly blocked Jun Yinglian's way!

She was stunned.

[It must be a superior cultivator!]

[It must be such a dominant figure than I can never be a match

to!]

[Who is it?]

She came up with a name quickly.

The person she was thinking of fit the aura, cultivation, and posture of the person she was watching now!

However, it was unbelievable that she would meet that person.

[She shouldn't be here. After all, this is not a place under Misty Cloud Palace's control. It is impossible that she would come to this place.]

[According to what people said in the martial world, she had a deal with another super influential figure to have a fight somewhere. They should still be fighting each other at the moment. People like them are not going to finish a battle in a short time. How could she be here?]

[This is insane!]

Jun Yinglian didn't panic. As she shook, a layer of frosty cloud around her spread out and became raindrops.

It fell to the earth!

She coldly stared at the dark cloud and blandly said, "Dark clouds cover the sky; the king descends to the realm! Is that great Elder Xuan of Misty Cloud Palace?"

The dark cloud rolled up and down and then separated into two sides.

A lady slowly showed up.

It was Xuan Bing indeed!

Jun Yinglian blinked when she confirmed Xuan Bing's identity. She was confused.

It was said Xuan Bing always wore black.

In fact, it seemed nobody in Qing-Yun Realm had ever seen Elder

Xuan Bing's face. She never exposed her face to anybody.

[What is going on?]

[What is this?]

[The dark clouds are gone. The dark mist is gone. She showed herself to me. She doesn't have the mask on the face anymore!]

[She just showed herself to me!]

[That...]

Jun Yinglian only felt confused and lost in the head. [Why is she doing this?]

...

Chapter 1109: For What Purpose?

After a while, Jun Yinglian had a few thoughts. [There are two possible explanations of why she would do this. First, maybe she thinks I am her good friend, so she doesn't need to disguise herself. It is just like the relationship between Bing Xinyue and me. Or... she doesn't plan to let me walk away!]

[She wants me to die here!]

[Secrets are safe in death!]

[To show a dead person her true face won't change the fact that nobody ever saw her real face!]

Thinking about that, Jun Yinglian was alerted. She started to operate her full spiritual power and got ready to have a tough fight!

Before this... she had never met Xuan Bing at all. They had no relationship!

In other words, the first possible explanation was impossible!

That meant there was only one possibility left!

[She wants to kill me!]

[But why would she kill me?]

Unfortunately, she didn't have time to think more about it since Xuan Bing had already approached.

It might be difficult to defend herself from a super powerful cultivator like Xuan Bing when she was entirely concentrated. If she kept being lost in thoughts, she would very likely die!

She took a deep breath and spoke in a deep voice, "Great Elder Xuan, why is it that you want to stop in my way? I am Jun Yinglian!"

Then she raised up her head to look at Xuan Bing!

It was always essential to keep one's aura on full power in a fight between two upper-level cultivators. Even though she knew she was weaker than Xuan Bing, she wouldn't lose before the fight started. If she acted defeated, she already submitted. There would be no chance to survive!

When she was looking at Xuan Bing, Xuan Bing was looking back at her.

It was indeed the first time these two ladies met each other.

However, when they saw each other's face, they both had the same thought in the head. [There is actually such a beautiful woman in the world!]

[She fascinates at first sight!]

[Every man would be lost in such beauty!]

They praised each other in the head.

"I don't have any particular reason..." Xuan Bing was showing a big smile on the face, warm and comfortable as the spring wind. It surprised Jun Yinglian. When she looked into Xuan Bing's eyes, there were only curiosity and warmth...

It seemed Xuan Bing was intentionally getting close to her.

Jun Yinglian even suspected that there must be something wrong with her head! [What is going on?]

She even started to ask, [Is this lady... Xuan Bing?]

[Does she need to be so kind to me? She is in such a high position in the world.]

[Shouldn't she be standing high, domineering, looking down upon all, showing the status of a dominant figure?]

"There are not many women in the world that I could allow to be in my sight. However, I heard about you a long time ago. With such a good fortune, you and I met each other here. Why don't we try to make friends with each other? It would be a shame in my life

not to be a friend of yours..."

What Xuan Bing said confirmed her identity. However, Jun Yinglian had more suspicions now.

[Did she just say she wanted to make friends with me?]

[She came here because she wants me to accept her as my friend?]

[She heard about me a long time ago?]

[And is it real that it would be her life regret not to become a friend of mine?]

[Isn't it flattering me too much?]

The 'breaking news' nearly knocked her out.

Since when did the world's Demonic Lady, Great Elder Xuan Bing, send a friend request to others?

It was... against all living beings' recognition of Xuan Bing!

"Gr... Great Elder, you are being too humble..." Jun Yinglian didn't loosen her alert though.

[It is said one who is unaccountably solicitous must be hiding evil intentions!]

[Elder Xuan Bing behaves so humbly to me. She must want something big from me!]

[She must be after something!]

[I don't know what she wants yet, but I have to be careful. I can't be reckless.]

Even though she stayed alert, she knew she would be defeated if the fight was started!

Although it was the first time she met Xuan Bing, she already sensed the ultimate power of Xuan Bing. She knew Xuan Bing was so powerful that she could only look up at her in the area of cultivation! She could never reach the same height!

Xuan Bing showed a sour expression and said, "Younger Sister Jun, what do you think if we go down and sit together? Let's drink and talk. What do you think?"

Jun Yinglian nodded. "Okay!"

It seemed Xuan Bing was asking for her opinion, but in fact, she had decided it. Jun Yinglian had to say yes unless she wanted to offend Xuan Bing first. Besides, she wanted to see what Xuan Bing was precisely doing after all!

- Shoot! - They both got down from the sky, like two bolts of lightning. They were on top of a mountain. Xuan Bing waved a sleeve, and a flat terrace appeared.

After that, a set of white-jade, well-refined table and chairs slowly fall onto the terrace. A set of purple-crystal pot and teacups were put on the table.

Jun Yinglian was shocked. [This is not a coincidence! She is waiting for me here!]

[Otherwise, why would she prepare it so well in advance?]

[I don't think such an influential cultivator would bring table and chairs with her all the time...]

Xuan Bing sat down first and looked at Jun Yinglian smilingly. "Younger sister, have a seat. Let's have a nice talk."

Jun Yinglian was more confused.

[I genuinely have no idea what she is thinking about. She keeps calling me younger sister for no reason since we met... How do you know you are older? Why do you have to call me younger sister...]

[She sounds like I would fight her for being the older one...]

She sat down blandly and stared at Xuan Bing. She couldn't understand it. She just felt numb in the head.

[What is happening?]

"Many years ago, I heard about your story." Xuan Bing was soft like a warm jade. She waved one hand in the air. The pure spiritual qi in the sky suddenly started to gather water and pour into the purple-crystal teapot.

After that, a flowing heat flow was rising up below the teapot.

It was boiling the water.

Xuan Bing took a purple-crystal bottle from inside her clothes and spoke smilingly, "I planted a Pure Heart Tree in the most spiritual place of Misty Cloud Palace, where we use to plant Regeneration Ink Lotus. Every year, this tree provides no more than fifty gram of tea leaves. Usually, I will keep them to myself..."

"Today, it is such a pleasure to meet you, younger sister, I am happy. I should share the taste with you. I want you to know that my tea is not bad, younger sister." She smiled.

"I am going to taste the tea that is planted by Elder Xuan Bing." Jun Yinglian gently smiled.

She tried not to mention the word sister.

Xuan Bing's eyes flashed. She certainly had noticed that Jun Yinglian was avoiding something, but she didn't say anything. She sighed and said, "In fact, I have been thinking a lot in the past few years. Recently, I have been thinking more and more..."

Jun Yinglian smiled and said, "I wonder what is it that you have been thinking about, Great Elder?"

Xuan Bing made a light sigh and said, "I am thinking about... women. I am thinking... how many women in the world can reach the height where we are?"

Jun Yinglian didn't want what Xuan Bing wanted from her, but such a topic reminded her of something in her heart.

No matter whether it was Jun Yinglian or Xuan Bing, they were both top cultivators in the world. They were not only the best

among women, but also the best of all people in Qing-Yun Realm!

However, even if one of them became the world's best, none of them could change one fact. The world was in the hands of men!

This world was a patriarchal world!

No matter how strong a woman was, she was still a woman!

Nobody could change the fact.

Xuan Bing blandly said, "I believe you have the same trouble in your heart. How difficult it is for a woman to dominate the world!"

Jun Yinglian slowly nodded.

As Xuan Bing said, it was the biggest concern in Jun Yinglian's heart.

"Especially when a beautiful woman wants to surpass others in Qing-Yun Realm..." Xuan Bing looked up at the mountains under the clouds and mist with flurry eyes. She sounded blank, "Beauty of women is always the source of disaster!"

"That's true. Beauty is the source of evil. The more beautiful a woman is, the more dangers and evils will be around her." Jun Yinglian nodded and made a deep sigh.

"That is why I keep covering my face under masks. I never let others see my real face." Xuan Bing blandly smiled and said, "I guess even you, my beautiful younger sister, can't deny that I have a face that will only bring pride to ladies, right?"

Jun Yinglian honestly said, "Not only that. Sister Xuan Bing, you are also gorgeous and elegant. You are like the fairy in the heavens. You are the only beauty among human beings. I am ashamed. I don't deserve the flattery, sister!"

Xuan Bing spoke in a low voice, "We know how beautiful we are. Don't be too modest. Luckily, we are both strong enough to ignore the fact that beauty is the source of evil."

Jun Yinglian nodded to agree. "That's right. There may still be

men who dare to pursue us in the world, but definitely not many."

They were not talking nonsense. What they said was the absolute law in the world!

If there was a man who knew who they were but still dared to pursue them...

That man would very likely end up dead with his soul vanishing into nothing!

Nobody but fools would have that stupid idea!

Even Wu Fa didn't dare!

"I don't remember when..." Xuan Bing smiled and said, "I realized as a woman, I am kind of lonely. I wonder if you have the same feeling, sister..."

"Lonely..." Jun Yinglian kept thinking about it.

"Yes. Lonely." Xuan Bing nodded. "Normal women are never as powerful as we are. They will spend their lives to assist their husbands and teach their sons. They will spend their lives in house works. However, they always have a few close friends who are also women. They can tell each other about their secrets, or their grievance. Their friends know what they are thinking, what they are worried about, what they are yearning for... We don't. We have nothing they do. Maybe it is the price to become stronger than most men..."

Jun Yinglian made a long sigh. "True. We can't have that kind of life. We do have lots of sister disciples in the sect though. However, they are always awed by us. They are never close to us."

"We have many things that we need to talk to somebody. Things that all women will have in the heart."

Xuan Bing shared the same feeling.

"So I think we need friends. I do, and you do." Xuan Bing looked at Jun Yinglian and said, "Maybe you are thinking this isn't Xuan

Bing. At least not the lady that is known to people... However, you should understand my heart, my loneliness, my solitariness."

"Because we are the same, aren't we?" Xuan Bing said.

"Yes. We are the same. We are lonely." Jun Yinglian looked upset. She said, "The women in the world who can reach the same level as we do are all lonely. Who isn't? The loneliness of a loner; loner of the lonely world!"

"Loneliness of a loner; loner of the lonely world! Why men can sit together drinking and eating, messing with each other when they are drunk, fighting somebody, going crazy, but not women?" Xuan Bing spoke like she was asking a question.

However, she had the answer.

Jun Yinglian took a breath and felt hot in her hands. She said, "Why can't we? Of course, we can!"

"Tea!" Xuan Bing raised the teacup.

Jun Yinglian looked at the teacup, and her eyes were flashing. She spoke in a low voice, "Why do we women always just drink tea? Why can't we just drink like men?"

Xuan Bing was surprised and then laughed loudly.

She waved a hand, and several liquor jars appeared on the floor. - Clang! - Two big liquor bowl appeared on the table. "In this case, we should drink!"

"Right!"

- Bang! -

Xuan Bing slapped on the seal of the jar and poured the red liquor into the bowls. Xuan Bing's liquor was never ordinary.

The forest on the mountain was suddenly filled with the wonderful scent of the liquor.

Did anybody know why a gorgeous beauty, the excellent Elder

Xuan Bing, would bring liquors with her?

"Good liquor! It's worths spending the good night for!" Jun Yinglian was pretending. She just raised the bowl and drank up!

"Good! Come on again!" Xuan Bing wiped the mouth. Her eyes were lighting up.

"Drink!"

Two beautiful women, on top of a mountain, facing the sky and the clouds, below the splendid stars, raised their bowls and drank wildly! They were like two men drinking heroically!

The moon as a candle, a glimpse of a world was in the ladies' talk!

The mountain as the food, a bowl of red liquor was the sincerity in women's hearts!

...

<Author's note: This is another two-in-one chapter.>

Chapter 1110: Sworn Sisters!

"Jun Yinglian!" Xuan Bing had drunk a few. Her face was all red. She looked at Jun Yinglian and said, "How many years do you think we have left with our current cultivation?"

Jun Yinglian was surprised and then smiled bitterly. She felt bitter in the heart because of the question. "If we don't want to die... and we don't get killed in any accidents, I would say thousands of years."

"What if we get some significant improvements during the thousands of years?" Xuan Bing's eyes were scorching.

"That would be difficult to say. Maybe we will live longer..." Jun Yinglian said.

"Have you ever thought that during those long lives, we may have to live on and on in this lonely way?"

Xuan Bing's eyes were shiny.

"Maybe I am doomed to live this way. But you... you are different." Jun Yinglian showed a wan smile and said, "I believe you understand me. There is an essential difference between a person with a dead heart and a person with hope!"

Xuan Bing was choked.

[Of course, I understand you.]

[Because I understand you, I came to talk to you, to make friends with you... to become sisters with you...]

[Do you think I honestly have so much leisure time to waste on fuddling myself here?]

"Heaven's will is unpredictable. Nothing was bound to happen! Even if we are destined to die on a certain day, even if we know that we have only a few days to live, we still need sisters!" Xuan Bing looked at Jun Yinglian seriously, "In the last few days, if we

have sisters to share our last secret to, it would make our lives less regretful. Don't you think?"

"Men have brothers. Women have sisters!"

Xuan Bing's words resounded.

Jun Yinglian's eyes were full of colorful glow. She slowly repeated, "That's right. Men have brothers, and we shall have sisters. He was an arrogant person, but he still had several brothers around him. I used to dislike his brothers, because... I was jealous! He had brothers, and I can have my sisters..."

"That is exactly why I came to you today."

Xuan Bing took a deep breath. She finally revealed the purpose of this conversation. She felt relieved.

She had been thinking about this conversation for a long time. She started this idea before she met Ye Xiao. She had thought of such a conversation for more than once.

Yet she never was brave enough to do it.

She wanted to but she was too proud to.

She needed to take the first step forward to make sure the plan worked. Besides, she needed Jun Yinglian to say yes. These were the two essential conditions. If one side failed to agree with the other, it would end up to be pretty terrible!

If Xuan Bing took the first step in a friendly manner, showing her will to make friends with others, but only got a negative response, she could never accept such failure. It would only lead to hostility and fighting.

It wasn't because she was narrow-hearted that she would become enemy to the person who turned down her kind friend request. She was too powerful and influential to endure other's rejection. If she didn't turn hostile to the person who refused her kindness, in Qing-Yun Realm, where only the bigger fist had the louder voice,

she would be underestimated. People would think she was weak. She couldn't let that happen!

That was why she had been hesitating all the time after she had that idea.

Until now!

She came to Jun Yinglian because she wanted to be sisters with her. In fact, she had another reason to do so, which she could never tell anybody, that she had buried in her heart.

"Qing-Yun Realm is full of powerful figures." Xuan Bing spoke in a deep voice, "Ninety-five percent are men. Women only took five percent of the seats."

Jun Yinglian stayed silent for a while and said, "Maybe we are less than five percent."

"Hmm?" Xuan Bing looked at her.

"Young men who are talented would be chosen and trained in accentuation. Some talented girls will be chosen too. But when they are in certain ages, they stopped improving."

"Because men's lust for women is always the source of misfortunes!" Jun Yinglian blandly said, "The more talented a girl is, the more beautiful she will become."

Xuan Bing nodded.

That was true. After all, when a girl was gifted in all aspects, she would definitely become beautiful.

If a woman didn't even have a perfect shape, how could she be talented in martial arts?

A woman had to be in good shape, then she can possibly be in an excellent martial arts condition.

Physical condition was the key to a woman's potential.

There were just a few kinds of particular physical condition.

For example, Pure Yin Body, Yin Cold Body, Natural Body, Cold Moon Body... Women were attributed Yin. Yin and coldness were the most charming part of a woman.

A woman with such a physical condition was bound to be outstanding.

And a woman should also be pure and smart.

A perfect body shape, an excellent physical condition and the specialty of pureness and cleverness were the three things that could make a woman invincible to all.

In fact, a woman with only the first two conditions could be powerful enough!

However, such a woman must be the focal point of all men.

Nobody didn't like a woman like that.

Nobody didn't want to have a woman like that.

The favor of a man, the ownership of a man, at some point, cut off a woman's path to improvement.

Once she fell into a relationship, she was owned by one man.

Either in a soft way or in a tough way, if a man had a woman like that, he must be somebody very influential and dominant in the world!

Such a man always got a young and beautiful girl that he wanted.

Once they got the woman, her talented life was ended.

What's left of her future was no longer extraordinary.

Men always showed their power by conquering the women they wanted! Men always did!

When they couldn't get them, they would fight for them. When they got them, when they were satisfied, they might not cherish them always! That was the nature of men in all history!

"Men's lust for women ruined ninety percent of the talented

girls."

Jun Yinglian drew a conclusion.

"Maybe that is why the world is patriarchal" Xuan Bing sighed and said, "It is difficult for women to become stronger and independent."

"That is why although there are lots of talented girls, only several in centuries can rise to the height as you and I did." Jun Yinglian blandly said, "Yet there are a lot of men who have become top-class cultivators."

The two ladies sighed at the same time.

"Xue Danru is one of the top-class female cultivators." Xuan Bing casually said. She sounded uncomfortable, but she had to admit it.

Jun Yinglian laughed.

Xue Danru was not just a female top-class cultivator. Although she was a little weaker than Xuan Bing, she was much stronger than Jun Yinglian. In all the cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm, she was among the ten most potent figures!

However, Jun Yinglian understood how Xuan Bing felt. Xuan Bing and Xue Danru didn't really hate each other that much. That war between the two palaces began tens of thousands of years earlier.

Xue Danru, just like Xuan Bing and Jun Yinglian, had already reached the peak of a female martial artist's life.

In fact, in Qing-Yun Realm, Xue Danru, Xuan Bing, and Jun Yinglian were the only three female cultivators who were at the same height in the martial world.

"If Xue Danru heard what you just said, she would be glad. However, the Moon Queen of Qiong-Hua Palace should also be powerful in cultivation. She should be more powerful than me. Why didn't you mention her?" Jun Yinglian said.

Xuan Bing blandly smiled and said, "The prime master of Qiong-Hua Palace is a female cultivator who is a little stronger than you indeed but... There is a huge difference between her and us. She is married. She has a more important identity... A wife of a man. Most importantly, most of her achievements are from her man's support." Xuan Bing was sneering.

Jun Yinglian was stunned. "What?"

Apparently, it was such breaking news. Jun Yinglian, such a calm, and steady woman couldn't even stay calm. She actually exclaimed!

"It's definitely is a secret in Qing-Yun Realm. Well..." Xuan Bing blandly smiled, "We don't talk about other's privacy."

Jun Yinglian was apparently shocked. "Well... It turns out... She has a man..."

In her voice, there was actually... a sense of... jealousy!

Xuan Bing raised the bowl and drank up. Then she noticed Jun Yinglian's strange reaction. Her eyes lit up.

She casually asked, "Sister Jun, why do you look like you are troubled?"

Jun Yinglian was alarmed, then she raised the bowl and drank up. However, the liquor didn't bring the pleasure to her throat anymore; instead, it brought grief and sorrow. She felt utterly lonely at the moment. She said, "Who doesn't have troubles in the heart?"

Xuan Bing tested, "Back then... when Xiao Monarch..."

Jun Yinglian heard his name and her face turned pale. She felt like her heart was stabbed hard. She smiled bitterly and said, "In fact... Xuan Bing, what do you think we women live for?"

Xuan Bing was stunned by Jun Yinglian's question.

Before this, she might answer, 'For dignity, for achievements, for

dreams!'

However, as she heard the question now, she didn't know what to say.

In fact, it was a question Xuan Bing already had in mind. She would ask the same question. However, now Jun Yinglian asked first and she was the other one to answer. She was suddenly lost for words.

What did a woman live for?

"I don't believe you are chasing after the position of invincibility in the world!" Jun Yinglian took a breath.

Xuan Bing was silent.

One year before this, Xuan Bing would definitely answer her, 'I am only chasing after the position of invincibility!'

However...

"Great Elder Xuan, have you ever thought that women are a group of disadvantaged and vulnerable people, including you and me." Jun Yinglian quietly spoke, "I never admitted it. But now I am saying it."

"A woman always needs a company, a shelter." Jun Yinglian sadly spoke, "A man, a shelter, that we are never forced to love... that nothing compels us to love... that we love with our full hearts... with all our souls... out hearts..."

Xuan Bing quietly said, "Your shelter, your man... was Ye Xiao. Xiao Monarch! Was he truly such a shelter to you?"

Jun Yinglian blandly smiled, "Elder Xuan, if you have ever loved someone... you will understand that if a woman, just like me or you, falls into it, we fall with our entire lives. Once we fall for that man, then he is the shelter!"

Was he that kind of shelter to her?

As long as she loved him, he would always be the shelter she

wanted!

It shocked Xuan Bing, touched her heart.

They rambled for a long time after that, in the clouds, on top of a mountain. Sometimes Xuan Bing was speaking, and Jun Yinglian was listening.

Sometimes it was the other way around.

Unnoticeably about eight jars of liquor were finished by the two ladies. They didn't seem to be tired; instead, they were more and more into it.

Jun Yinglian felt alerted at the beginning. Xuan Bing was acting weird after all. However, Jun Yinglian entirely set free of her heart at the moment.

If somebody told her that Xuan Bing was doing this for some unspoken purpose, Jun Yinglian would punch the person on the face for Xuan Bing!

"Sister Jun, you are right. Let's drink!"

"Sister Bing, drink!"

In the end, Xuan Bing suggested something and Jun Yinglian agreed.

"Sister Jun, I feel like we were good friends a long time ago. What do you think... that we take a vow to be sisters? As you and I are sisters, we can have more chances to share our secrets to each other in the future. What do you think?"

"This is exactly what I am thinking about. Since you are so nice to me, I think I will just agree to relate to a sister of a higher position!"

"Sisters like us never say things like that! You are disgracing me by saying that higher position stuff!" Xuan Bing pretended to be mad.

"I don't dare anymore. I was stupid. Sister, please forgive me.

Don't hate me." Jun Yinglian apologized with a smile.

They were two forthright and great-hearted persons. The way to swear sisters never bothered them. They just kneeled on the floor and bowed eight times to each other. Then they were sisters. They both felt glad.

Xuan Bing was definitely older than Jun Yinglian, so Jun Yinglian was the younger sister.

One day after, they parted each other sorrowfully.

Xuan Bing was heading back to Misty Cloud Palace, while Jun Yinglian kept going to Oracle District.

"Sister Jun, if you encounter any troubles on the road, send me messages." Xuan Bing said before they parted. "Besides, when you are going to have the final fight against the three factions, I won't just sit and watch. Your trouble is my trouble, sister!"

"When you start the fight, I will join you in the battle!"

That was a promise.

...

<Author's note: Two-in-one.>

Chapter 1111: Wind and Thunder Started

Mountains were high. Rivers were long. The road reached far.

However, no matter how far it was, one day it would reach the end. Jun Yinglian was shocked. She said, "It is my private matter. Sister, you don't need to bother..."

"What are you talking about?" Xuan Bing was angry, "Didn't we just put our sisterhood on the mouth? I can't let you call me sister for nothing!"

Jun Yinglian smiled with gratitude, "I know how nice you are. I guess I should cut the thanking part. Sister, goodbye. We will meet again."

"Hmm. Sister, be safe." Xuan Bing hesitated and then said, "Sister, we are sisters now. If there is something I do wrong to you... please forgive me."

"What are you talking about, sister." Jun Yinglian was generous, "It will hurt our relationship to say those words."

They said goodbye to each other.

After getting back on the road for a long time, Jun Yinglian still felt thrilled.

She had never expected that the world-shocking influential figure, Xuan Bing was so sensitive and actually got along with her!

When they first met, it was awkward and she was still alert. After that, they became close. In every topic they talked about in the conversation, they had almost the same answer to the questions!

When they decided to swear to be sisters, they both pretty longed for the relationship.

If Xuan Bing didn't make that suggestion first, Jun Yinglian would suggest it instead.

If Jun Yinglian was the one who suggested it, people might think

that she was trying to relate to Xuan Bing. However, Jun Yinglian and Xuan Bing were both generous, great-minded female cultivators. Neither of them would have that shameless idea!

For the two ladies, they were already close friends after one night!

[Xuan Bing must have come to me for some reason. She didn't just want to know me. It's not that simple. She must have other reasons.] Jun Yinglian talked to herself. [No matter what she was after, she meant no harm to me. That is sure.]

[The friendliness and appreciation are impossible to fake.]

[She is too powerful to pretend in front of me! She wouldn't need to!]

[What she said in the end... It seems she knew there would be something that offends me, but she was informing me. She didn't want to hurt the relationship... If she does anything that hurts me in the future... However, even if she will do something to hurt me, what can't I lose now? What can't I accept now?]

Jun Ying smiled bitterly, and then lowered the burden in her heart. She moved fast in the clouds, trying to arrive soon.

[After I do what I promised Yue Gongxue, I am afraid I will disappear in this world.]

[Xuan Bing said she would love to help me take revenge... But it is still my own business. I don't want anything to stain the pure relationship between us.] She gritted her teeth. [Besides, I am the only person who could take revenge for him! I don't need other people's help. I don't want others to share!]

[I won't get anybody else in trouble. I don't need anybody else's help.]

She looked in the distance and Oracle District was right ahead of her!

[This may be the last long journey... of my life!] Jun Yinglian stopped and looked in the distance. She was calm. [When I return from Oracle District... it will be the end of everything!]

In the sky, a sharp howl of a hawk resounded. A flash of golden light was dazzling.

Beyond the clouds, a beautiful hawk fleeted over Jun Yinglian's head with thunder and wind around it!

"What a beautiful hawk!"

Jun Yinglian couldn't help praising it.

She was such an experienced cultivator, yet she had never seen any hawks that were as beautiful as that one. The hawk was flying at least twenty percent faster than she did. The last second, it was behind Jun Yinglian, but the next second, it was long gone! How fast!

Jun Yinglian praised it but didn't slow down much. She started to move toward Oracle District.

At roughly the same time.

In a piece of wasted ice land, there was a cliff that was precipitous like a brush pot!

Under the cliff, a man stripped out of a cave. His face was covered by his beard. He looked like a wildling. However, he was huge. Although he was just casually walking, he showed the aura of a dragon or a tiger! He was imposing!

When he walked out of the cave and looked up at the sky, he laughed loudly. Then he shouted, which shocked the entire land around!

"I am going out!"

"Wait for me!"

"My friend! My brother! Wait!"

"And my enemies, wait!"

"Heavens bless you. Don't die yet!"

"I will be the one who takes your lives!"

"Hahahahaha..."

With a giant shadow behind him, he shouted to the sky. He reached out his right hand to grab something, and that was a long saber which kept emitting cold lights flowing in the cave. Suddenly, he grabbed the saber in hand, as if it just appeared from nothing.

The blade shined with cold lights. The lights kept shaking and twinkling in his hand...

It seemed like this divine weapon had been resting for too long. It couldn't wait to get soaked with blood and soul...

"Old friend, it has been a while!"

He stared at the saber in his hand and smiled, "The past few years, I have been troubled and trapped. You must have suffered. From now on, we will travel across the sky again, domineering the world!"

The sharp and thick blade shined in cold lights. The saber actually made a sound!

The saber sounded like a howling dragon.

"Hahahahaha..."

He laughed and said, "Let's go, old friend!"

The blade shined again. He and his saber were like a wholeness, shooting up to the sky like a bolt of lightning, striking in the clouds up in the sky.

Suddenly, thunders started to strike in the sky after them.

It seemed to be a sign that was telling people there was going to be a disaster!

...

Ye Xiao and Zhan Yunfei were having a practice fight.

Zhan Yunfei suppressed himself to level two of Dao Origin Stage to fight against Ye Xiao, who was level one of Dao Origin Stage. Zhu Jiutian stood aside as the judge.

After a hard crash, when the two of them were separating, Zhu Jiutian couldn't stand it anymore...

"You cheat!" Zhu Jiutian shouted, pointed at Zhan Yunfei's head, which was swollen like a pig head, and said, "You actually raised your cultivation secretly! That can't be more shameful!"

"I didn't! No!"

Zhan Yunfei was furious, "I was being beaten! How would I be beaten if I raised my cultivation!... F*cking idiot!"

...

Chapter 1112: Unrivaled in the World!

"Pah! You are beaten indeed! But you did raise your cultivation! That was at least level three of Dao Origin Stage! Do you think I am blind?" Zhu Jiutian wouldn't let it go.

"It's fine. It's all right. Brother Zhan lowered his cultivation to help me with practice. It is fine. He was careless, that's all!" Ye Xiao had seized the high position, taken all the advantages, and he said brazenly.

"Look at him. How great-minded and generous our little brother disciple is! One should be as tolerant as the vast ocean which admits hundreds of rivers. That is called virtue! Look at little brother disciple and look at you. Do you even know what honesty is?" Zhu Jiutian kept being cynical.

He was gloating.

"God damn it! I am done!" Zhan Yunfei flew out of the fighting area, "Since you are a full mouth of virtues, why don't you take place!"

"I will not!" Zhu Jiutian shook his head, "Why me? Whoever wants to get punched, go! Not me! Do I look stupid to you?"

Zhan Yunfei pointed at Zhu Jiutian with a shaking finger. He nearly lost words because of anger. "You! We have a deal..."

"I regret." Zhu Jiutian kept shaking his head and saying bold words, "Don't you see that I am quitting? I guess you must be numb after being beaten up by our little brother disciple. I regret. I quit. So what? Bite me!"

Zhan Yunfei was lost in awkwardness. He was furious. Blood filled his eyes. He was about to lose control.

They did have a deal earlier about fighting against Ye Xiao.

In fact, they had their secret plan. [He has fooled us around

earlier. We have to take revenge for that.]

Besides, they have completely recovered from their old wounds. They needed to stretch out a bit.

Although they could fight each other for it, they figured it was much easier and funnier to fight the little brother disciple!

One more thing...

Their little brother disciple was named Ye Xiao after all.

It would be great if they could take the chance to beat up 'Ye Xiao'...

That would be a great pleasure!

What a perfect plan they had in mind! They just suggested it to Ye Xiao without hesitation.

"Look, little brother disciple, you have improved a great deal. That is good. That is incredible. Nobody else has ever done it as you did!"

"I am flattered, brother. I can feel my improvement recently..."

"Brother, you are lost in your ego, I am afraid. You must know that even though you have greatly improved, you are still only ordinary. Your battle experience is something you need to spend more time on. Cultivation, mindset, and battles, these three make perfection!"

"Well... How do I keep up the battle experience?"

"Easy. Just do some practice fights with us and you will be in a different level after some time."

"What? Fight with you? As far as I am concerned, I think you want to punch me. What level are you? What level am I? How can I fight you? You two are going to wreck me. I see... I am not a fool..."

"Heh heh. Little brother, don't get me wrong. How would we bully you with our stronger power? We surely will suppress our

cultivation to a low level before we start the fight. Besides... to be beaten is... uh... you know, practical experience is essential. It is something you can learn from!"

"That's right, little brother. You have to believe us. We are just being thoughtful. Don't let us down on this..."

"But you have been in the martial world for many years. You are pretty experienced, aren't you? Not only cultivation but also your mindset and experience are much beyond my league. How is it a fair fight? I will be dead wrecked! I won't do it!"

"Listen, brother. We are just being kind. We will lower our cultivation to the same level as you. Mindset doesn't have an effect on the real battle. We are more experienced than you, but it is a good thing for you. Isn't it what you actually need? You can learn about it from us! Don't you think?"

"That sounds reasonable..."

"Of course it is reasonable. Will we, your brothers, try so hard to set you up?"

"That's true... Hmm... Will you truly lower your cultivation level to fight me?"

"Absolutely. Don't you think we are honest men?"

"But what if you decide not to keep honesty anymore... I can't do anything to you, can I? I can't even tell masters about it since they are all too far away from here..."

"You can be relaxed, brother. We will go one by one. The other one of us will be the judge. It will be totally fair."

"What if you two cheat together..."

"Then we are worse than animals! And we will get punished by the three uncle disciples! What about it?"

"Great!"

So it was decided. Zhan Yunfei was the first to fight. However,

when he started to fight, he surprisedly realized that his experience barely meant anything in the fight against Ye Xiao. It was useless when it was used to deal with Ye Xiao.

Zhan Yunfei kept being pushed down and beaten from the beginning of the fight. He felt embarrassed and awkward.

He couldn't have a chance to fight back at all. In fact, he almost failed to defend himself. The experience that he was bragging about became what Ye Xiao used to set traps for him. Every move that he took according to his experience would lead him to a wave of punches like a rainstorm.

The moves he took to lure Ye Xiao to fall into his trap all eventually failed. Instead, Ye Xiao used those moves to hit back on him.

Zhan Yunfei swore to the heavens, [This is definitely the most embarrassing and humiliating fight I ever had in my life!]

The grudge, grievance, sorrow, and anger nearly exploded in his chest.

When he decided to quit, he was already punched so hard and looked exactly like a pig head!

He was no longer that vigorous and handsome man!

Standing outside the fighting area, staring at Ye Xiao in the area, he was stunned. In the end, he had to admit it unwillingly. [My little brother disciple is indeed a peerless genius in a battlefield.]

[I thought my battle experience is incredible, but it turned out to be useless. It is entirely out of date in front of him.]

[He is like a lunatic warrior who has been spending his life in a battlefield. He doesn't lack experience like any other rookies at all!]

"Brother Ye, you opened my eyes today again. Your cultivation level is too low to travel the martial world. However, your battle experience is definitely outstanding... No, it is unrivaled in the

world!"

After being lost in a while, Zhan Yunfei gave a comment in the end!

It sounded complicated though!

Unrivaled in the world!

That was such a comment of excellence.

...

Chapter 1113: Shuang and Han

"I am flattered." Ye Xiao said, "I was lucky fighting with you. Some petty tricks are all I used. Unrivaled in the world... That is too much. I know about myself."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian looked at each other and nodded to praise.

What Zhan Yunfei said was the voice in his heart but also a test on Ye Xiao.

They wanted to know whether Ye Xiao could stay humble and modest when he was praised.

It was a difficult thing for most of the cultivators.

A man's heart was the easiest thing to cover but also the hardest!

It was difficult for a man to understand himself but he always understood himself the best. The human being was a species of paradox!

However, Ye Xiao did it.

A young man who was younger than twenty successfully kept himself to his true heart!

After what Ye Xiao said, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian felt completely relieved.

At this moment, somebody came to report, "My lord, people from Qiong-Hua Palace have come to Town of Ye!"

Ye Xiao frowned, "Who have they sent?"

He knew Qiong-Hua Palace would return after being humiliated. However, he never expected they would do it so fast. It had been only a few days since their people left, now they sent more.

"I don't know." The servant shook his head.

"What is there to be afraid of? Qiong-Hua Palace is domineering,

but Cold Moon Palace is not soft either! Let's go and see how many heads and arms they have first! I wonder what they can do to us."

Zhan Yunfei had just regained his full power and removed all the old wounds in him. He was in the prime time. He wanted to do something to show his power. Now as he heard Qiong-Hua Palace sent people to make trouble, he wasn't worried but excited instead.

The three of them had the same opinion, so they walked out together.

At the moment, two ladies were quietly standing right before the door of Ye Clan's house.

They didn't seem impatient at all.

Their hairs were long and black, and their clothes were white like snow. They looked cold and arrogant.

They just stood there quietly. It was the place in front of Ye Clan's house, which was surrounded by the markets, but in people's eyes, they were absolutely two snow lotuses on top of a snow mountain!

They were standing high and untouchable!

The uproar and the chaos of the mortal world didn't make them look less independent and virginal.

The coldness was from inside their bones. Everybody could feel it. Because of that, people around the place gradually left.

Ye Nantian was striding out.

Li Yunxuan of Misty Cloud Palace was following Ye Nantian, with a dark face.

She was annoyed!

[I represented Elder Xuan Bing when I was speaking! I represented Misty Cloud Palace! How dare Qiong-Hua Palace keep sticking on this? Are they going to look down on us?]

[How dare they send more people again!]

[I have to do a lesson to them!]

When Ye Nantian stepped through the gate, he saw the two ladies who were cold like frost, pure like the moon. Commander Ye was such a calm and steady man yet he was still shocked!

Li Yunxuan walked out and she was shocked too!

What she saw was far beyond her imagination!

When the two ladies were backing the Ye Clan's house, Li Yunxuan could feel how peerless the two ladies were from the backs of them. When they turned around, they showed her their faces, which were exactly the same!

The two ladies noticed Ye Nantian was out so they turned around. Their moves were exactly the same. Even their eyes were completely the same.

However, Ye Nantian and Li Yunxuan weren't surprised by their faces but with their identities!

[It is them!]

Ye Nantian and Li Yunxuan were both shocked when they saw the two ladies. They were astonished.

They never thought that these two figures would come in this matter. It was going to be a tough day.

Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace!

Shuang and Han were their names.

Apparently, they were twin sisters. They had been abandoned when they were babies.

Nobody knew how they survived their childhood. Their lives only changed when they were about six years old...

An elder of Qiong-Hua Palace went by a small town and found the two poor girls. It was midnight, and the moon was high in the sky.

The two girls were holding each other to stay warm in a broken cottage... They were dying.

That elder of Qiong-Hua Palace felt pity for them. She wanted to help them but then she realized the two girls were in good cultivation condition. Their bodies were Twin Brightness Bodies, which were extremely rare. The elder was glad. She took the girls back to the palace and gave them their names, Yue Shuang and Yue Han.

When the twin sisters grew up, they traveled the martial world together. Gradually, their names resounded in the world. Eventually, they became two of the top-class cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm!

Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace.

People might get their names wrong but they wouldn't get their nicknames wrong!

The two girls were both cold and indifferent. They didn't like to talk. There was a rumor about them among the disciples in Qiong-Hua Palace, saying that the twin sisters hadn't spoken to each other once for one month!

First of all, they were both cold and distant. Second, they didn't need to say it out when they wanted to say something or do something. One would get the idea in the other's mind without any talking, or even with just a hint in the look.

They didn't need to communicate; their minds were connected.

In the recent three hundred years, they seldom appeared in the martial world.

However, when the twins showed up, it meant things were going to end as Qiong-Hua Palace wished!

Neither of them was powerful enough to be the most powerful cultivator, but when they were together, they could defeat any cultivators in the realm!

Including Xuan Bing, Wu Fa...

Well, that was guessing. They hadn't really fought every influential figure. However, nobody denied that the twins, when together, were in the most potent league!

They were the best of Qiong-Hua Palace!

Now, they were in Oracle District, in front of the door of Ye Clan. They just stood there quietly, watching Ye Clan people walking in and out, waiting patiently.

They looked indifferent and cold, just as usual.

The audacious Ye Nantian actually felt terrified and chilled in the heart when he saw them. Li Yunxuan, who was always confident, for the first time thought that she had lost control of the situation. It was going to lose balance at any second.

...

Chapter 1114: We Never Need to Be Reasonable!

"Two honorable elders, Shuang and Han, forgive me! Warm welcome!" Ye Nantian made a cup-fist and bowed slightly.

Li Yunxuan didn't dare to be impolite to Shuang and Han. She stepped ahead and saluted humbly, "Disciple of Misty Cloud Palace, Li Yunxuan here. Accept my respect, great uncle disciples."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han both nodded blandly. "Ye Clan Chief, no need for courtesy. We are here to make trouble for you. It won't help to be courteous to us. It will only waste our time."

Then they looked at Li Yunxuan and said, "Is Xuan Bing here?"

Ye Nantian looked calm but was bitter in the heart.

[The two elders are exactly like what people say they are, cold and indifferent. Extremely distant but frank at the same time.]

However, he knew that the two ladies weren't disgracing him by saying those words.

They were purely speaking out their thought.

It had nothing to with hostility, emotions... or anything else.

When the two ladies talked to their own master, they were also indifferent and distant, emotionless.

Their martial art was Ice Heart Formula!

All the emotions, hatred, gratitude, love, grievance, were nothing the twin sisters would have.

They were two extremely pure-hearted people, who were outstanding!

Li Yunxuan felt only bitter in the heart too. She said in a deep voice, "Elder Xuan is not here."

Yue Han coldly nodded and said, "Isn't she? That saves a lot of time from the mess. If that's the case, we two will take control of everything here."

That was her conclusion.

In fact, since they were the most influential figures, what she said was unchallengeable!

In Qing-Yun Realm, the biggest fist made the call. The twin sisters' power gave them the absolute authority!

Li Yunxuan took a breath. She wanted to say something but couldn't say a word out.

Only a few people in the world dared to speak like that.

These two were precisely a part of 'a few'!

Besides, they were merely telling the truth. The two ladies never tried to plot anything. They didn't need to. No matter what it was, they just say whatever they had in mind and do whatever they wanted to do. They did it quick.

They did things clean and fast!

What they said was pretty easy to understand. [If Xuan Bing is here, we may need to do some negotiation about who makes the call.]

[She doesn't fear us, but we don't fear her too. We may have to fight for the authority!]

[However, Xuan Bing is not here. That means we will rule.]

Yue Shuang looked at Ye Nantian and coldly said, "Misty Cloud Palace people should step away."

Li Yunxuan hesitated but then made up her mind. She said in a deep voice, "Honorable uncle disciples, please allow me to explain. When I came, Elder Xuan told me to keep Ye Clan safe at all cost."

Yue Han blandly said, "Well then, here is your problem. Even if

you give up everything you have, do you think you can protect Ye Clan from our attack?"

Li Yunxuan was wordless. Her will was shaken.

[What could we do to stop the two of them?]

[Who could protect Ye Clan from the Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace?]

"I will ask you once. If we kill everybody here, will Xuan Bing come and fight us at the risk of her life?" Yue Shuang turned over and looked at Li Yunxuan calmly.

That was difficult to answer.

Li Yunxuan understood that the lady wasn't provoking her. It was just a question.

[If we do it now, will Xuan Bing risk her life for a few dead people?]

That was the point!

Li Yunxuan's expression was changing. She didn't know the answer.

Just like Yue Shuang said, Xuan Bing might risk her life to fight when Ye Clan people were alive, but what about when they were dead?

Dead people meant no use!

No matter how valuable Ye Clan people were to Xuan Bing, when they die, they will be nothing!

Li Yunxuan asked herself and she guessed Xuan Bing wouldn't do it.

If somebody else of Qiong-Hua Palace came, including the Moon Queen herself, they wouldn't be terrified.

However, Shuang and Han were here! The top force of Qing-Yun Realm!

That was a guaranteed win!

Li Yunxuan hesitated. She did.

"Off you go!"

Yue Han blandly said.

A sharp coldness in bones rose up and flowed toward Li Yunxuan and three other disciples of Misty Cloud Palace. Nothing moved toward Ye Nantian though.

All the Misty Cloud Palace disciples felt an overwhelming force blasting on them. They couldn't resist it. They were hit off the ground away, and when they stood up, they were dozens of meters away.

When they tried to walk back, they realized they could only stay further, not a bit closer!

Yue Han didn't even move a finger when she did it to them!

What a horribly powerful force!

Misty Cloud Palace people were driven out of the area. Yue Shuang and Yue Han started to look at Ye Nantian with their cold eyes.

"Ye Nantian, we have met nineteen years ago." Yue Han blandly said.

Ye Nantian smiled and blandly said, "It is a pleasure that the two of you remember me, such a small figure."

"Hmm." Yue Shuang nodded and asked, "I want to know what you Ye Clan want to do to end this chaos?"

She just asked it directly.

Ye Nantian laughed and said, "That is a wrong question, honorable elder. It is never how we want to end it. The problem is what you Qiong-Hua Palace wants this to end."

After seeing the powerful strike the two ultimately influential

figures had just made, Ye Nantian felt utterly peaceful and calm.

It was what it was no matter what he did. A real man should be tough when things became worse!

Life and death, that was not important!

[It is not about what we want, but what you Qiong-Hua Palace want!]

That was a tough answer.

Yue Shuang calmly said, "I don't talk much. I don't know how the social rule goes. I never try to be reasonable to others. If I asked a wrong question, so be it! Maybe it is a fortunate mistake!"

Ye Nantian's face was twisted.

[Holy heavens. That can't be more straightforward. I don't think there have been many people who can talk like you. Fine. Now I am seeing one. Fortunate mistake... Really? You truly know nothing, do you?]

No matter what Yue Shuang said, she sounded like it was the law. People who listened would feel like it was the law too.

Yue Shuang said that she didn't know something, then she didn't know! If she asked something wrong, then it was a fortunate mistake!

It didn't matter whether if it made sense or not!

...

Chapter 1115: Qiong-Hua Palace's Conditions

Yue Han continued speaking blandly, "We never follow any rules. We never trust the right or wrong theory. We trust power. If Xuan Bing is here, she decides what is right and what is wrong."

"But she isn't. Then we decide what is right and what is wrong."

Yue Shuang coldly said.

"We are on Qiong-Hua Palace's side, like always." Yue Han said.

"What we are going to do is never going to be fair to Ye Clan." Yue Shuang looked at Ye Nantian and blandly said, "So... You asked me how we Qiong-Hua Palace want this to end. I just gave you my answer. That is the only answer I can give you at the moment."

Ye Nantian carefully listened to Yue Shuang's words. Then he took a breath and blandly said, "I never expected Qiong-Hua Palace would be reasonable to us. The world is a world of power. No matter what you want, just say it."

Yue Shuang peacefully looked at Ye Nantian. Nothing changed in her eyes. She said, "There are a few requirements from us about this unpleasant matter. If Ye Clan can meet all of them, Ye Clan survives."

Ye Nantian looked calm. He casually said, "I would love to know more."

"First, we once asked Ye Clan to expel Ye Nantian, but Ye Clan violated the promise. We need an explanation." Yue Shuang said.

Ye Nantian laughed with a sneer, "I don't understand what kind of explanation you want from us. I have been living down in the lower realm for over ten years. I have been through all kinds of difficulties and pains. Because of my own efforts, I have reached

the position I am now. Ladies, I believe you can see my cultivation level now. According to what you said then, I can see Xue-er again and go on with our own lives as long as I am in Dao Origin Stage! You were there. What I said is true, isn't it? I am a member of Ye Clan. I now achieved a high level of cultivation, then why can't I return to my home? I don't need to keep staying down there, do I? How is that reasonable?"

"What? Because you don't want us to rise, we should just lie down at the bottom? Once we rise a bit, you will see us as enemies?"

Ye Nantian wasn't being nice. What he said was sharp.

However, Yue Han stayed quiet for a while and then said in a low voice, "Yes. As far as I am concerned, that is exactly what we do."

Ye Nantian didn't feel anger; he laughed instead.

"Master Yue Han, do you mean Qiong-Hua Palace is going to bar me forever? You want me to stay away from Qing-Yun Realm forever?" Ye Nantian sneered, "Well then, let me ask you one thing. Your Prime Master, Moon Queen, made a promise... She said I could go to Qiong-Hua Palace and marry Xue-er, regain our family life, as long as I reached Dao Origin Stage... What about her promise?"

"Now I am in Dao Origin Stage. I wonder if you will keep the promise you made?"

"I don't care if you two are reasonable or not. It has nothing to do with me. But... that was a promise the Moon Queen made to me by herself. Are you going to treat it as a blow of wind, leaving nothing dignified after blowing over?"

He kept his hands behind the back, facing two of the most influential figures in Qing-Yun Realm, and sneered, "You want us to give you an explanation. I don't know what explanation I can give you. Instead, I want an explanation from you, about the promise your Moon Queen made to me! I wonder if you know how

to explain it?"

Yue Shuang and Yue Han looked hesitant this time.

They both had pure hearts and simple minds. They always did things in the simplest way. However, they wouldn't go against their conscience. They could simply stand on their sect's side, to do things that were good for their set. They wouldn't mind if those things were reasonable or not. However, what Ye Nantian said was a situation that might either go against their sect's interest or the other way around. They both knew he was telling the truth. That made them hesitate.

Even though Ye Nantian was already in Dao Origin Stage, they could make him into a pile of ashes by waving one hand. It was as easy as turning over their hands!

However, the problem was that the Moon Queen did make that promise, and they couldn't deny a promise the Moon Queen made!

They couldn't go against what the Moon Queen promised to Ye Nantian.

They had two purest hearts which had helped them improve in cultivation. If they abandoned their conscience, there might be lots of troubles in their cultivation path!

When they came to Ye Clan, they never thought that Ye Nantian could possibly reach Dao Origin Stage, and met the condition the Moon Queen made.

Back in the old days, Ye Nantian was only in Dream Origin Stage when he was in the fight against Qiong-Hua Palace. In that fight, Qiong-Hua Palace's people damaged him so hard that he dropped to level one of Dream Origin Stage. When he arrived in Land of Han-Yang, he was already level nine of Spirit Origin Stage. He had carried the hidden wounds in his body. In a low realm like Land of Han-Yang, it was impossible for him to take any improvement. The hidden injuries should make him weaker and weaker.

Song Jue was in the same situation as Ye Nantian. However, he was even weaker than Ye Nantian when he was in Qing-Yun Realm, so he got more badly injured. When Ye Xiao was going to cure Song Jue, Song Jue was only like an ordinary man. His internal energy was all gone. He had no cultivation capability at all. In fact, if Ye Xiao didn't save him, he should have died!

The same as Song Jue, Ye Nantian's hidden wounds were cured by Ye Xiao. His power was back. He even significantly improved. After he took the supreme dan beads from Ye Xiao several days earlier, he broke through the top of Dream Origin Stage and reached Dao Origin Stage. He finally met the condition the Moon Queen asked from him. He finished what the Moon Queen required, which should be impossible!

That was not the most important point at the moment. For Yue Han and Yue Shuang, as Ye Nantian said, they didn't have a reason to ask for explanations.

Then what were they doing in this place?

They had two ultimately pure hearts. They were never ignoble people who were always domineering and ignoring their conscience. Now that Ye Nantian was questioning them, they were shocked.

Ye Nantian took a deep breath in and said, "Ladies, you come to us to ask for the explanation. Well, then, since the chance is right in front of me, may I ask when will your Moon Queen fulfill her promise to me?"

Yue Shuang and Yue Han looked at each other. After a while, they said, "You were right. Let's forget the first thing we want. The second will be... your son. We need to take your son back to the palace to meet Moon Queen."

"Your son is also the son of our saintess. Our saintess is never allowed to have sex, not to mention deliver a child. We must take him back this time!"

Yue Han peacefully said.

...

Chapter 1116: Never Compromise!

She realized it was against her conscience to force Ye Clan to do the first requirement, so she just gave it up. She directly went to the second.

However, the second was more unacceptable for Ye Nantian!

Qiong-Hua Palace's saintess was not allowed to have a baby. It was known to the world. Nobody knew what would happen to Ye Xiao if he went to Qiong-Hua Palace.

Maybe he would be killed before he reached Qiong-Hua Palace. That was possible.

Ye Nantian, a father who loved his son so much, would never put his son in risk, even if it was only a one ten-thousandth chance. Now, they were talking about putting his son into a situation that he would very likely get killed!

"Masters, you can skip the first requirement as you like, but I can't just forget about the promise the Moon Queen made. She promised that... as long as I reach Dao Origin Stage, I can marry Xue-er and get my family back!"

"Now, please, let me ask you two... what does getting my family back mean?" Ye Nantian also talked coldly and peacefully. "We are three people in my family. Is it still my family if there are only two of us? I guess nobody calls it getting my family back! Do you mean Qiong-Hua Palace understands family in a different way?"

"I don't care how you understand it. I don't think that is a family to me!"

"Family means the husband, the wife, and the son together again!"

"That is family!"

"That is why I have to tell you that I can't do the second requirement either!"

Yue Shuang and Yue Han took a deep breath. They looked at each other, and they both looked determined in the eyes.

"The second one relates to the promise of Moon Queen too. Fine. Forget it. Let's go to the third."

Yue Shuang calmly raised her head and said, "I won't deny what the Moon Queen promised. Ye Clan is making their requests in a reasonable way. However, the result doesn't meet our expectation! Then there is only one thing left in the end.

"It is... the way we finish things in the martial world."

Yue Han continued, "The way in which we will draw an end to this mess is to ignore everything except power itself.

"You Ye Clan can gather any forces as you can to fight against us. As long as you can defeat us, we will leave immediately. We won't say a word. Instead, if you can't defeat us, we decide everything.

"We win, then everything goes as we want!

"The Moon Queen will decide whether to fulfill her promise or not. That is something we should care about when we are back to the palace!

"In here now, we just focus on one thing!

"This is this; that is that.

"This is this; that is that."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han said the same words, loud and clear.

"We won't negotiate with you." Yue Shuang looked at Ye Nantian with her clear eyes. "Maybe we are on the wrong side, but it is our job to do what the palace wants us to do. There will be people to deal with other businesses."

"What we are responsible for is... fighting.." Yue Han's eyes were clear too.

When people with pure hearts started to do things without

considering reasons, they were the most horrible people!

People like that saw domineering, tyranny, and bullying as a natural, reasonable, and righteous thing to do!

That was more than horrible!

However, Ye Nantian looked even more frosty than the two ladies. He said, "Since I saw you, I have never expected that you would be reasonable to me. I merely said things that I wanted to say. That's all.

"I guess you have now finished all you want to say. I am done talking anyway. From now on, let's just do whatever it needs.

"No matter what you Qiong-Hua Palace got to attack us, we will defend.

"I have said what we have to say. Ye Clan will never surrender from now on.

"We will not surrender, even when we have to fight Qiong-Hua Palace."

Ye Nantian looked sullen and sharp in the eyes. "We won't give up, even if our bodies cover the land and blood stains the floor!"

"That's right!"

A clear voice suddenly sounded. It seemed somebody was clapping lightly. A young man in white clothes slowly walked over. "My dad is right. That was well said. From now on, we Ye Clan people never need to step back to anybody!

"We will not submit!"

It was exactly Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao stepped out alone.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were hiding in the yard under Ye Xiao's arrangement. He didn't want them to show up to face Han and Shuang yet.

Even though Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were really pissed, Ye Xiao didn't change his mind.

If they showed up and obviously stood on Ye Clan's side, things would be unchangeable.

After all, Yue Shuang and Yue Han would never stop easily if they were about to fight Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian, who were also two of the most influential figures in the realm!

Besides, there was another reason... Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian together couldn't defeat Yue Shuang and Yue Han.

That was the biggest reason.

That was why Ye Xiao didn't want them to step out.

After all, things weren't in a dead end yet.

The two ladies looked cold and indifferent. It seemed they would only follow their hearts. They knew what was right, but they didn't always want to be right.

Ye Xiao knew that they couldn't do reasoning, because they couldn't.

He knew it after observing them.

They had the conscience, and they knew what the right thing to do. However, they were taught to do everything that could bring their sect profits. If what was good for their sect was meanwhile wrong, they would quit being reasonable. After all, they could only use power to win the privilege. Who had the biggest fist decided what was right!

No matter what, nobody in Qing-Yun Realm had a heart that was purer than Yue Shuang and Yue Han's hearts!

Not everyone could become a person with a pure heart!

There was a reason why the two ladies would become two pure-hearted people.

...

"I am Ye Xiao. Accept my respect, ladies." Ye Xiao strode out.

"Ye Xiao!" Yue Shuang and Yue Han heard the name and their eyes shrunk. They started to look at Ye Xiao from head to toe.

Ye Xiao stayed calm and quiet while the ladies were watching him. Then he spoke in a deep voice, "Even though you are here to seek a way to put an end to this matter, you shouldn't block our door in front of the public. It disgraces your honors, ladies. There is a practice area in the house. Why don't we go there and talk about how to end this mess? What do you think?"

He blandly smiled and continued, "I guess you won't bother to suspect that we have set any traps inside, will you? After all, you are two dominant figures in Qing-Yun Realm."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han blandly responded at the same time, "That's true. Let's do it your way then."

"Please, this way, ladies!" Ye Xiao raised a hand and led the way.

...

Chapter 1117: What Are You Doing?

Yue Shuang and Yue Han didn't hesitate. They walked into Ye Clan's house, following Ye Xiao.

Ye Nantian was shocked and stood numbly for a while.

He had never thought that his son would invite the two killing gods into their house by just a few words.

More importantly, he felt that the pace, the conversation, the situation development, and the possibility of what would happen... seemed to be under Ye Xiao's expectation...

Ye Xiao was unnoticeably taking charge of the entire situation.

It brought a strange balance to the two sides. It seemed the balance would only last for a while, but that was long enough under such circumstances!

Moreover, when he met Ye Xiao again in the Kingdom of Chen that day, he realized his son had become a smart, intelligent, and cautious man. He figured that as Ye Xiao showed up all of a sudden, he must have a plan with all the moves afterward! Ye Xiao might be able to save the situation!

"Father, you can just wait outside with our people." Ye Xiao, who was leading the way, suddenly turned around, looked at Ye Nantian, and said, "The two ladies are here for me. Let me talk to them in private. I will put an end to the problem between the two sides."

Ye Nantian believed in Ye Xiao, but he was still worried. He asked, "Will you be okay?"

Ye Xiao smiled and spoke calmly, "They have the knife, and I am the meat on the plate. If they want to do something to me or Ye Clan, father, do you think we can stop them? It will only be a meaningless sacrifice of lives! We don't fear death, but we shouldn't die for nothing. You understand me, don't you?"

Ye Nantian made a long sigh to the sky and helplessly said, "Fine!" Then he continued, "Xiao Xiao, remember, no matter what happens, Ye Clan never surrenders! We would rather all die with dignity!"

He looked determined in the eyes. After the words, he turned around and led the other people back to the inner yard of the house.

However, what he said at the end touched Ye Xiao's heart.

[My clan is not a powerful one!]

[My father is not an influential person!]

[But they will sacrifice everything for me!]

[They would rather die to protect me!]

It was such a weighty promise!

Ye Xiao silently watched Ye Nantian and the others leave. He stayed still for a while.

Then he turned around and spoke emotionlessly, "Ladies, follow me."

Then he led the way again.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han were going to say something but failed to get a chance. They just followed Ye Xiao.

They had the same feeling in the hearts. [Since this young man showed up, even though he is still weak, he has taken over the initiative from our hands!]

The practice area of Ye Clan was empty.

It used to be the busiest place in Ye Clan, but now, there was nobody. Only over a dozen weapon racks stood around the area. It was a several-acres place of deadly silence.

The guards who should be guarding the practice area were gone.

The three of them walked into the place. A cold wind blew over,

and the yellow leaves rolled up, flying along with the wind. It felt desolate.

Ye Xiao was leading the way. He was quiet while walking ahead.

"Ye Xiao, what do you want to talk about in this place?" Yue Shuang couldn't help asking in an indifferent and cold voice as usual.

Ye Xiao didn't answer her.

"There is nobody else around. Whatever you want to do, or you want to say, just go ahead." Yue Han blandly said, "The reason we would follow you is that we are showing respect to your name."

"But you need to understand, we are not respecting you!"

Ye Xiao was still quiet.

"Why don't you talk? How much time can you save them even if you stay silent?" Yue Han stopped and said, "Let's get it done here."

The two ladies stopped at the same time. It seemed they wouldn't walk any further inside.

Ye Xiao still didn't answer them. He just kept walking ahead in silence, as if he didn't care about what the two ladies were doing at all.

[Whatever you do, I don't care.]

He was totally indifferent.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han watched Ye Xiao's back and frowned. He had walked out nearly a hundred meters further. They had no choice but to follow up.

They felt awkward and annoyed, but they kept walking like they couldn't control themselves.

It was such a strange but interesting feeling for the two ladies!

Nobody knew the two sisters better than Ye Xiao in the world.

They were in high positions in the martial world; they were

dominant in cultivation; they were domineering the world; and they were pure-minded.

However, deep in their bones, they followed.

They barely took the initiative in anything, including a fight. When they were staying with somebody, if nobody started a topic, they could remain silent until the end of the world.

"Have a seat." It seemed they had reached where Ye Xiao wanted to be.

There were a set of chairs and table, which were made of stones, served for people to rest.

Ye Xiao had sat down. He tapped the seats to show the ladies to sit down too.

The two seats were opposite to his.

One on the left, while the other on the right.

They sat together like three old friends finally reunited after a long time.

There were no hostility and intenseness, only softness and peacefulness!

Ye Xiao still didn't say anything and just kept staring at the two ladies.

As time went by, Yue Shuang and Yue Hua couldn't bear it anymore no matter how calm and indifferent they were.

[We are such important figures in Qiong-Hua Palace. We are only lower in position than Moon Queen. Do you think we would just follow some stranger because he told us to?]

[We followed you along to this place because you have a good name!]

[Yet you keep wasting time in silence. We can't accept it!]

[We just showed you some respect, yet you started to be so

arrogant. That is not a smart move!]

"Speak. What do you want to say?" Yue Shuang spoke fiercely for the first time. She seemed to be annoyed. "We are here to end this mess, not to sit with you in silence."

Ye Xiao was still bland and calm. He just smiled.

Yue Han was annoyed too. She said, "Why are you smiling? What do you smile for?"

The two ladies both had a strange feeling at the moment. [It seems we can't control our emotion when facing this young lord of Ye Clan.]

...

Chapter 1118: Let Me Tell You A Story

They had lost control of their emotion for several times. It was definitely not a coincidence!

What surprised them both most was that they didn't honestly feel like resisting the emotion. The emotion was the kind of curiosity a little girl had.

They felt so weird as if they were not talking to a young man who was several generations younger... Instead, it felt like they were talking to an honorable senior brother whom they respected.

The weird feeling confused them.

They had never had such a feeling in their lives!

"I am laughing at you two," Ye Xiao blandly said and smiled. He finally raised up his head and looked at the ladies with a pair of profound eyes.

It was like an elder brother looking at two little sisters.

It was full of yearning and pleasure as he finally met someone that he hadn't seen for a long time!

"Yue Shuang, are you fully cured now?" Ye Xiao gently asked.

That was such an abrupt question!

Yue Shuang widely opened her eyes and shouted, "What did you say? Cured? I wasn't sick!"

Ye Xiao was still calm. He continued, "You always felt pain in the left side of your butt when it heavily rained, didn't you? Don't you feel it now? That is such a pleasant thing to know!"

The ladies never knew that the young man would talk about something private all of a sudden!

Yue Shuang's face, which would have remained calm and frosty even when the sky fell down, suddenly turned red. Although she

looked fierce and vigorous with her eyes wide open, when she opened her mouth, the tone of her voice when she shouted seemed to be full of softness. "That's not true!"

That was all she could do—shout like a little girl!

On the other side, Yue Han blushed too. She was furious as she gritted her teeth. "Kid, I will kill you if you keep talking nonsense!"

Ye Xiao turned to Yue Han, who was fiercely threatening him. "Yue Han, Yue Shuang didn't sound confident at all. I guess she is still suffering that illness. Well, then I assume you are too. You always feel pain on the right side of your butt, right?"

"Ah!" Yue Han exclaimed, and her face turned pale as if she had seen a ghost in the daytime.

They were both shocked after feeling ashamed and angry.

What Ye Xiao said was definitely a secret. Nobody in Qing-Yun Realm knew the secret.

[How does he know our secret?]

[Only one person knew, someone who isn't...]

Ye Xiao showed a warm smile.

"Are you shocked? Are you wondering why I, this young Ye Xiao, know about the secret that nobody is supposed to know?" He asked softly.

"Of course... not!" Yue Shuang retorted, and then started to shout again, "That is not true!"

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "Fine. Not true if you say so. Do you really need to be so angry?"

Then he said, "Let me tell you a story... Once upon a time, twins were born... however, they were abandoned since the day they came to the world because they were... disabled from birth."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han's faces were totally pale. They looked

terrified in the eyes, like two little birds trembling in the wild field in the rainstorm. They were no longer the domineering and overwhelming cultivators now.

"The two little girls were a joke of heavens... Their lower halves were stuck together... They actually shared one bone in the lower half of the body. The bone was below the waist but above the thighs... How embarrassing but essential!"

Ye Xiao looked at Yue Shuang and Yue Han with warm and gentle eyes. "Nobody believed two children could survive such a disability. It was nearly impossible to separate them. Any surgery could kill two new-born babies. They might die before the surgery finished. So... they were abandoned when they were born.

"They were thrown to a wild field when it was snowing with howling winds all over. They were just born, but they were going to die soon..."

"When the two girls were about to be frozen, a young beggar walked by." Ye Xiao stared at Yue Shuang and Yue Han.

The two ladies were quivering. They kept staring at Ye Xiao without a blink.

"The beggar felt pity for the two girls. He knew he couldn't leave them like that... so he found a knife and cut the two babies apart..."

"The beggar had experienced a lot in the world, so he clearly knew that the two girls must be separated to survive. If they couldn't be separated, they would eventually die. Cutting them apart would at least bring them hope. Maybe the heaven felt sorry for the little girls. After that stupid and reckless surgery, the two girls were successfully separated. They both lost their consciousness, but they were breathing. They survived!"

"After that, the girls were unconscious for seven days. In the seven days, the beggar had done everything he could to protect the two babies. He robbed and deceived. He did everything he could to

keep the two girls alive.

"The girls had just come to the world, yet they would die at any second. However, to keep them alive was the only hope of the beggar in the world. He was also an abandoned kid after all, that was why he would do everything he could to protect the girls."

"Maybe the heaven was touched or guilty. It gave the little beggar a miracle." Ye Xiao spoke in a deep voice, "In the wind and snow, from the disease that nobody could cure, the two little girls, who were doomed to die, eventually survived."

"They didn't die!"

"What a miracle! It was a miracle of life that there was, is, and will be no explanation for!"

Ye Xiao spoke in a deep voice, "But even after the miracle, things were still not promising to them. The two little girls weren't in perfect physical conditions. They were severely injured right after they were born, and they couldn't move. Even when the wounds were healed, they still couldn't move. They could only lie down all the time."

"The beggar had taken good care of the two girls through the days. Even when he would surely be beaten half to death, he still robbed and deceived for food, medicines, and clothes, just to keep the three of them alive."

"The three of them, with the beggar's effort, lived in a most menial way."

...

Chapter 1119: Story Never Ended!

"They were each other's support, they were each other's only consolation, and they were each other's reason to live on.

"The two girls suffered both natural and artificial wounds. They had been weak. They couldn't talk even when they were already two years old. When they were three, they could only crawl on the bed. The legs which were wounded were crippled.

"When they were four, they learned the first word, and it was the only word they could say."

Ye Xiao smiled and blandly said, "The word... Brother."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han's eyes were filled with tears.

They looked at Ye Xiao with sadness, surprise, confusion and...

It was a complicated expression.

They stared at Ye Xiao and quietly listened to him.

They could even hear their hearts beating more and more heavily as if they were going to pop out of the chests!

"One day... the two little girls finally stood up and talked." Ye Xiao looked calm and sullen. "The beggar was excited. He stole lots of food to celebrate. The girls finally stood up and talked. They started to speak to their brother..."

"That day... at first, they were enjoying the food, they were so happy... but... maybe the little beggar was too greedy. He had stolen too much, so people came... In the end, the little beggar's arms were broken by those people... The girls cried with tears so loudly..."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han finally shed tears while staring at Ye Xiao.

Their pretty faces looked both sad and happy.

"The beggar had his arms injured, however, he still tried so hard to stay up. He knew that he couldn't lie down. If he lied down, he would die, and the two little sisters would die soon after. The little beggar had been through a tough year. Just like that, the three kids finally got each other, lived by luck, fought for survival..." Ye Xiao gently looked at Yue Shuang and Yue Han. "It was the girls' birthday... The beggar stole several steamed buns to celebrate their birthday. He figured he should at least let his sisters have a full meal..."

Ye Xiao sighed. "But he was shocked when he found the girls gone..."

"He didn't know where the girls went. Maybe they were taken away by somebody..."

"He went out and looked for them like a madman, but no traces were found. The girls disappeared..."

"After many years, he still hadn't heard from them." Ye Xiao sadly said, "... He just couldn't find them. The girls couldn't find their brother either.

"They didn't even know what their brother's name was.

"They always called him brother."

"One day, after all the things that happened in his life, the little beggar became a superior cultivator who shocked the world... He happened to see the twin sisters fighting against somebody.

"It was not a good day. It was a stormy day.

"The sisters were not weak, but they were in a negative position." Ye Xiao blandly said, "Their opponents were not that powerful, and their opponents having more people didn't really matter. Although they were already two powerful cultivators, when it was raining heavily, they would feel sore in where they used to be injured. The soreness interrupted their attacks. They couldn't fully operate their full power. They couldn't cooperate in a perfect

rhythm..."

"The little beggar had grown up. He had achieved a lot in cultivation already. He started to think, whether the two ladies were the sisters he had missed for the years..." Ye Xiao took a deep breath and said, "He decided to help them, whether they were his sisters or not, they must be getting through the same trouble as his sisters would have... He figured he should help them.

"He had already reached the top of the cultivation level in this world. As he started the attack, the fight was ended.

"Then he left.

"At that time, he was facing a hell of a crisis...

"He didn't want to ask the two ladies who they were because he didn't want to be disappointed. Besides, if they were his dear sisters, he would draw great danger to them. That was why he decided to leave right away and not to contact the two ladies!"

Ye Xiao blandly said, "He wanted to take revenge for his brother... but not to draw anybody else to dangers.

"He had followed the two sisters for a while though. From what he heard from the ladies' conversation, he confirmed that the two ladies were exactly his lost sisters. However, he was... in great danger at that time...

"He left with his sword while feeling relieved. His two sisters were living good lives. They were two influential cultivators. They had a great force supporting them, and people wouldn't be able to bully the two girls now...

"He was satisfied."

"The girls never gave up on searching their brother, but... he knew he was going to die soon. He didn't want his sisters to be involved.

"The grown-up beggar just left. Three months after, he died in a

hunt, both physically and mentally. He died for his brother."

Ye Xiao blandly smiled, "The story should be ended by then..."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han were sobbing. "No! It can't just end like that! No, it can't!"

Yue Shuang was weeping and trembling. "No wonder... When we were fighting the Master of East Hall, they were surrounding us. Our hidden wounds were hurting us. We couldn't fight in full power. It was a dangerous moment. However, Xiao Monarch, who was known to be a loner, actually showed up and helped us..."

"We never forgot a detail of it. We didn't understand why the arrogant, indifferent, and cold-hearted Xiao Monarch would show up and help us! Now we do..."

"We have been grateful for what he did for us. We always wanted to do something for him..."

"We just never thought that he is our... our brother!"

The two ladies burst into tears. "If we knew it... we would have taken revenge for our beloved brother long ago! We didn't know! We never knew..."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han didn't suspect a word of what Ye Xiao said.

The story had been hidden in their hearts.

Only one person knew their secret story.

...

Chapter 1120: Brother and Sisters Reunited

The ladies had never told anybody else about the story. Even their master, who took them away at the beginning, didn't know the story.

The suffering and the beautiful memory of the old days always replayed in their heads!

The three of them lived together, supporting each other. Two little girls who were completely disabled, and a beggar who had no way of earning a living, lived in a broken cottage in which they always saw the stars all year long.

There was wind blowing through the cracks in the walls of the cottage.

Their life was the simplest and poorest. However, the two ladies felt warmest when they were living in that place!

Since they were taken away by their master, they always thought about going back to their brother. However, they were in Qiong-Hua Palace. Without a guide, they would only get lost in the palace.

Most importantly, their legs were wasted. They felt sore after a few steps. They couldn't travel at all.

Besides, they didn't know where the cottage was! It would be a long way to go!

That was the reason why Yue Shuang and Yue Han had hated their master for a long time. In the end, when they understood what their master had done to them, how she changed their lives by taking them away from that cottage, they stopped feeling hateful anymore. However, they couldn't help complaining and regretting it.

[Why not take our brother away with us?]

Qiong-Hua Palace was different from Misty Cloud Palace and Ice Cloud Palace. The former two only recruited female disciples, while Qiong-Hua Palace mainly recruited ladies, but also guys.

When the two ladies first went out of the palace after finished what they learned, they went back to that small city first, where the broken cottage was located. They went there to find their... brother.

For how many years, they kept going back to that place but failed to meet their brother every time.

That land where the broken cottage used to be located in had become a wild land. The two ladies built another cottage, which was new, with a broken roof where the sky could be seen inside the cottage, and broken walls where the wind blew through.

That cottage had become taboo. Nobody dared to get close to it.

Every time when they returned to that cottage, they would stay in the cottage for a few days.

They were yearning in the cottage, looking forward... [Maybe brother will come back someday?]

Yet it never happened.

Brother... the young man whose name they didn't know, had become the most important person in their lives!

The most reliable person!

For so many times, the two ladies wept in the darkness, making guesses...

Maybe their brother had died in a long time ago...

However, now, this young lord was telling every detail of the story!

He was telling everything about their secret past.

The two ladies still had tears in the eyes, looking at Ye Xiao with

a warm and friendly look. Yue Shuang twisted her lips and wiped the tears. She said, "What then..."

Ye Xiao blandly smiled and said, "Then? Nothing. The grown-up little beggar got killed by the enemies when he was trying to seek revenge for his brother. But surprisingly, he didn't die. His physical body died, but his soul, which should be damaged, lived..."

"For some reason... he became a young man in the lower world... That young man's name is also called Ye Xiao. He had the same name as the beggar."

"After that, he saw his two little sisters... What a surprise! However, his two sisters only showed up to make trouble for his clan." Ye Xiao warmly smiled and said, "That is the end. The story ends right here. I don't know what is going to happen next..."

As Ye Xiao said 'the end', the two ladies started to tremble.

They felt like a strange bolt of electricity rushed up from their backs to their skull!

They were totally numbed because of the excitement. They couldn't help it anymore.

The two ladies stood up abruptly and couldn't stop shaking. Before they said anything, they had burst into tears.

They started to hold each other and burst into tears.

These two were no longer two influential figures at the moment. In fact, they were more like two kids.

It seemed they were two... abandoned children who had finally found their family!

They burst into tears because of the extreme happiness.

They didn't even have time to say anything before the tears hit them in happiness.

There was nothing to be suspected. It had no other possibility!

There was only one man who knew the story!

Even though he didn't look like their brother anymore, as he knew every detail of the secret story, he was definitely the man!

[Not to mention a change of body, even if the entire world changed, you are still that boy!]

[Our brother!]

[That is enough!]

Ye Xiao frowned. He seemed embarrassed. "You little girls. Why are you still such crybabies? You wept tears all the time back in the old days. Look at you. You are big girls now. You are still the same..."

The ladies finally couldn't hold it anymore. They rushed into his arms and moaned, "Brother..."

It sounded peculiar like they still couldn't believe the truth or couldn't accept such a great surprise...

They had rushed into Ye Xiao's arms, but when they were going to do so, their hands were shaking. They hesitated for a while, but then they still held Ye Xiao tight in the end!

They wouldn't let him go!

Ye Xiao nearly got grabbed to death. The two ladies were not the two little girls anymore. They were two dominant cultivators in the realm. If Ye Xiao hadn't improved greatly and reached Dao Origin Stage, and the two ladies didn't hold him in their real power, he might get killed accidentally by the two ladies. He might die in the two beloved ladies' hands!

Ye Xiao, who was nearly dead, didn't have time to shout for help. He found his chest was soaked thoroughly like a big bowl of water just poured on his chest...

[Holy heavens. Women are emotional. They are made of water...]
Ye Xiao made a long sigh in mind.

The two ladies were no longer two of the most dominant cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm and the two frosty ladies of Qiong-Hua Palace. They just kept shedding tears, crying so hard as if it was the end of the world and they were ripped apart inside.

...

Chapter 1121: Denouncing His Fault

Their two small heads were sticking on Ye Xiao's chest. They stood on tiptoe as if they were going to push themselves totally into Ye Xiao's arms. Their tears and snot were all smeared on Ye Xiao's clothes...

That was exactly like the old days.

When the three of them lived together, Ye Xiao was a little beggar, and the two ladies were disabled girls...

Every time when Ye Xiao was beaten because of theft, the two girls would shed tears heartbreakingly as if their entire bodies were going to break into pieces.

After a while, the ladies stopped crying. Even though they were already two grown-up women, they still had limited tears no matter how powerful they were. However, the emotion in their hearts wasn't vented yet. They were still sobbing, only without tears.

The place had been locked out by the ladies with their capability of level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators. Otherwise, they would have shocked the entire Town of Ye when they cried!

In fact, they didn't care if others knew that they also had a weak side, but they just didn't want others to make any inappropriate guess!

What was it that could make the two frosty ladies cry out like that?

That must be embarrassing!

"I mean, enough now. Could you stop crying now? How old are you? This is enough, isn't it?" Ye Xiao was domineering, but he sounded soft and gentle.

"Not enough! No!" the two ladies shouted annoyedly to Ye Xiao at

the same time.

After that, their tears were flowing down again.

[Holy hell? Level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators can store their tears to shed whenever they want? What a historic discovery!]

Back in the old days, no matter how the two little girls cried, the little beggar would never comfort them. He would only wait till they stopped crying, and then ask them, "This is enough, isn't it?"

The two little girls would shout back at him with anger and bashfulness. "Not enough! No!"

Then they would stop crying.

However, after all these years, they finally met their brother again. As they heard him saying 'this is enough', they were touched on the softest part in the heart!

They didn't stop crying like the old days; instead, they cried even worse.

[How old are we? We are just the same little girls in front of you, brother! How old could we be?]

[We cry! We won't stop crying!]

Ye Xiao was surprised, and he made a helpless long sigh.

"Come on. This is enough for real... I mean... You are both dominant cultivators now..." Ye Xiao said, "How could you cry like two little cats... What if others saw you... Are you going to stay in the martial world or not?"

"So what? We won't be afraid!" Yue Shuang angrily said.

"Humph! That's right! Somebody saw us, so what?" Yue Han was angry too. "We want to cry!"

Ye Xiao raised both his hands and submitted. "I know. I understand. I see. I could never win a quarrel with you two. The best way to end it is to give in. How about that? Can you stop now?"

Silly girls!"

Finally, the two ladies smiled through tears.

Then they were silent again and just kept staying in Ye Xiao's arms together. They looked happy and peaceful.

Nobody talked for a long time.

After a while, Ye Xiao finally couldn't help saying with a complaint, "Holy heavens. You won't just fall asleep on me like you always did when you were babies, will you?"

"Of course we won't." The ladies denied at the same time. "We are just thinking about something..."

"That's right... You both have grown up... You are big girls now... You have your secrets." Ye Xiao laughed. The two ladies felt his chest shaking when he was laughing. They felt warmed and surefooted.

They actually nearly cried again.

"Humph!" They both humphed to suppress the tears back.

"Well, you are truly two big girls now... What if somebody sees you two in my arms like this? Wouldn't it be embarrassing?" Ye Xiao was talking seriously to them.

"So what? We like staying in your arms!" Yue Shuang humphed and said, "Who dares to interrupt?"

"We never want to get married after all. We don't care about those mortal people's views!" Yue Han wrinkle her nose.

"Ahem..." Ye Xiao rubbed his nose. He decided to skip the topic.

The two ladies didn't say anything but just kept holding him and sniffed the smell on Ye Xiao's body. They were actually making the sound of two relaxed cats.

After a while, they started to grumble.

"No wonder... we forced Master to go back to find you,

threatened her that we would eat nothing before she promised. She didn't find you."

"You must have been taken away by your master then..."

"No wonder... We couldn't find you all these years. You have your own destiny..."

"You were a man in chaos already. What a brother of ours! Of course, our brother is a great figure..."

"No wonder... Xiao Monarch, who would never pay attention to other's business, suddenly helped us..."

"It was you..."

"No wonder..."

"I see..."

When one of them said 'no wonder', the other would go on to explain it.

One started, and the other continued as if they were talking in a dream. They actually answered all the questions that had stayed in their minds for all those years.

The third person in the story, Ye Xiao, who was listening to their murmuring, just felt hilarious.

"Bad brother!" Yue Shuang suddenly complained, "You were in such a great danger! Why didn't you tell us?"

"Right! Why didn't you? How dare you not?" Yue Han widely opened her eyes. She looked quite aggressive.

Ye Xiao made a grumbling sound and then stayed quiet. It was impossible to give a good explanation for it.

"Did you think we were afraid of the three factions?"

"Did you? We weren't afraid!"

"You were disgracing us by ignoring us!"

"That's true! You were ignoring us!"

"You still treated us as two useless little girls!"

"True! That was stupid and selfish!"

"Humph! You would rather die then let us know... You... such a wonderful brother! Did you think we wouldn't want to be involved to your trouble? How selfish!"

"That's right!"

"You would rather die than tell us anything about the truth... That was unforgivable!"

"Unacceptable!"

The two ladies were getting more and more pissed as they kept talking.

They actually raised up their anger. They raised their heads, staring at Ye Xiao fiercely, and said, "Say it! Why? Give us an explanation!"

"We want an explanation!"

"That's right! An explanation!"

"We won't forgive you if you don't give us a fair explanation!"

"That's right! We won't forgive you!"

"Say it!"

"Now!"

They pointed at Ye Xiao on the nose with their fingers.

...

Chapter 1122: What Happened?

The ladies were emitting fierce qi while staring at Ye Xiao with two wide-opened eyes. "Bad brother, just say what you meant!"

"Right! What did you mean?"

Ye Xiao was totally blank. He felt like his head was going to explode...

The four small hands of the two ladies grabbed his clothes. Their eyes were full of fierceness and tears. They were questioning him, denouncing his fault.

Ye Xiao kept a pair of eyes wide open for a while and finally submitted, "I... I was wrong..."

"Not that easy!"

"You are not going to get away from this by just admitting your fault!"

They shouted together!

They exclaimed together!

"What exactly do you want me to do then?"

...

The ladies blinked and couldn't think of anything they wanted him to do as a compensation.

Ye Xiao was smiling. He touched the two ladies' hairs in a spoiling way. "Girls, enough of the childish play. I promise you that no matter what happens, I will always talk to you first. How about that?"

"Do you mean it?" The sisters blinked their eyes. They were apparently touched.

"Absolutely!"

"Then... what about a palm to palm promise?"

"What palm to palm promise? That is too unceremonious! Let's do a finger hook promise!"

"Right! A finger hook promise! That is a formal promise!"

The two soft white tail fingers reached out to Ye Xiao...

Apparently, they had started the formal promise procedure...

Ye Xiao didn't mind. He casually reached out both his hands to pull the ladies' fingers. "Finger hook hang; ten thousand years no change!"

The three of them all felt touched.

They used to do the finger hook frequently after the girls started talking.

It was always the formal promise among the three of them!

"Brother, don't steal anymore. You will get beaten."

"Hmm. I won't anymore."

"Finger hook?"

"Sure."

What a shame! He never kept the word!

After the finger hook, the little beggar still had to steal whatever he needed to and got himself beaten up badly...

He could stop stealing for one or two days...

However, he had to steal something; otherwise, his sisters would die starving, so he would...

They were living in a city where all the citizens were poor. He just couldn't find a way to earn a living.

He wanted to have a proper job too. It would at least give him money for food...

However, nobody would hire a beggar who wasn't even strong enough to lift things up...

Nobody knew how much the little beggar had carried on his shoulders.

Three kids' lives, their hope for the present and the future!

Sometimes, they were hungry, while sometimes, they finally ate something. He would try to dig some wild leaves, pick some tree leaves and wild mushrooms, whether he had stolen something or not... He would collect everything that could fill their stomachs and put them beside the bed. He would save every bit of the food he had and store it...

He kept storing food because he wanted his two sisters to still have something to eat when he was beaten so hard that he passed out... He would store enough food for the girls to eat during the days he was conscious. When he was recovered, he would go steal and collect food again...

Now, the brother and sisters reunited!

An older brother and two younger sisters held each other again after so many years!

Nobody would imagine that the beggar and the two crippled baby girls he kept raising... would actually become dominant figures in Qing-Yun Realm!

The small figures who were stepped below people's feet finally rose up to the top. Anyone of them only needed to wave one hand to destroy the city entirely!

They were holding each other for a long time. In the end, Ye Xiao finally made a sigh. "The bloody heaven finally gave us a treat after all those years!"

The ladies gently nodded.

After they recognized Ye Xiao, they never left his arms.

They stayed in his arms even when they shouted at him and quarreled with him.

Deep in their hearts, they were afraid that they would lose their brother again if they let go of him.

"Bad brother!"

"Smelly brother!"

The ladies felt grudge in the heart, so they grumbled to vent the anger in their chests, although what they felt most was the pleasure of reunion.

When the three of them stayed together in the old days, the girls would always call the beggar dead brother, smelly brother, bad brother or something like that. However, after what they had been through, they never wanted to call him dead brother again!

They wouldn't mention the word, even if it were just a joke.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han finally understood what the word meant in the real world!

They didn't want to use that word on their brother again, not even the words like wounded, sick, and ill!

He could be bad or smelly, but never dead, ill, or sick!

He could never be bullied by others!

[Humph!]

[Who dares to bully my brother, I will put my life at risk to kill him!]

It was the only thought the ladies had in their heads. It was the only thing they cared!

...

Ye Nantian and the others were waiting for the result. They were all anxious.

Ye Xiao and the two murderous figures of Qiong-Hua Palace had gone to the practice area, and nobody had heard anything about them after.

Even Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian weren't able to hear anything from them.

It was reasonable though. The two of them had just recovered from the old wounds. They had only reached level nine of Dao Origin Stage, and it was already good enough to make them members of the first league of the powerful cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm. However, compared to the two ladies, who were on top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage, Zhan and Zhu were just weak. The ladies had blocked out the entire place, and Zhan and Zhu could never break in!

However, Han Bingxue was different. He was equal to the two ladies. He was strong enough to break through the area which was blocked by the two ladies together.

However, when he sneakily tried to get into there, he was surprisingly resisted by the joint force of three people!

He would feel reasonable if he was resisted by the joint force of the two ladies, however, he was surprised that there was a third power. When he noticed the resisting force, he recognized the third power. It was the weakest among the three, and it was apparently from Ye Xiao. He could easily identify it.

He was surprised but also relieved. As Ye Xiao was joining them on the resistance, it meant he was pretty safe inside!

Han Bingxue was relaxed, and he stopped trying anymore. As long as Ye Xiao was safe, there was nothing he should concern himself with. If he kept trying to get involved, things might go worse!

...

Chapter 1123: How Dare You Hit My Son?

The others who were weaker in cultivation wanted to get close to know what was happening. However, they were too weak to get in that area.

It appeared like that practice area had become a restricted area of the entire world.

It was a place that only belonged to Ye Xiao, Yue Shuang, and Yue Han, nobody else!

"He's fine. At least for now." Zhan Yunfei looked sullen. He blandly said, "We don't know what is happening inside, but I can still feel little brother disciple's breath. It doesn't seem any weaker. That means nothing had gone wrong, and it is good."

Ye Nantian felt relieved.

That was true. Nothing happened meant everything was fine. After all, Yue Shuang and Yue Han didn't have to start a fight if they wanted to kill Ye Xiao... What they needed was only to flick of a finger.

Since they weren't going to solve the problem by fighting, they must be trying some different solution. No matter what, it was good that nothing happened!

"However, what are they talking about that would take them so long?"

People were confused.

It was indeed a long time. It had been nearly half a day since they left for the practice area!

Like the others in Ye Clan, Ye Nantian didn't know much about his son's personality, but he knew his son was a decisive person. Besides, according to the stories that were told in the martial world, Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace should neither be

hesitant people.

The two ladies looked frosty and distant. They wouldn't even talk much to each other. Why would they talk to a young lord of Ye Clan for such a long time?

It was impossible.

It was against logic!

...

Outside Ye Clan.

Some other clans that hadn't returned to their homes and had sharp ears were gloating at the moment. [Humph! Aren't you Ye Clan powerful? Weren't you celebrating? Don't you have Misty Cloud Palace's support? Don't you have Cold Moon Palace's help? Now what? Aren't you going to dominate the entire Oracle District?]

[Now what?]

[Humph!]

[Qiong-Hua Palace has sent their ace-cards!]

[The names of Misty Cloud Palace and Cold Moon Palace are not powerful enough to save your ass!]

[What you need is absolute power!]

The two ladies were known as two dominant cultivators. Since they stepped into the area of the martial world, they always fought together. They could literally look down upon all opponents. The only failure in a fight was the fight against Xue Danru of Ice Sky Palace. Xue Danru was a woman who was as equally powerful as Xuan Bing, a super influential figure of Qing-Yun Realm. Shuang and Han had been fighting Xue Danru for over a hundred rounds before they were defeated. In that fight, the two ladies hadn't reached the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage yet. However, Xue Danru had reached the first phase of the three hidden phases! She

was in Tittle Phase! That was why Shuang and Han lost the fight!

It still showed the offensive power of the two ladies!

If Ye Clan was going to solve the problem with a fight, they only had two possible ways to survive. First, they needed at least two of the three grand elders of Cold Moon Palace to fight for them. One grand elder was not enough. Second... either Xuan Bing, the great elder of Misty Cloud Palace, or the Prime Master of Cold Moon Sect show up and fight for them.

There was no other option.

Apparently, these were two impossible ways.

[Is Ye Clan going to be swept out?]

The other clans all had the same question, and they were all expecting it...

However, after waiting for a long time, they didn't get any news. They started to feel impatient after waiting for a long time.

[Since Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace, two dominant ladies followed Ye Xiao into the house, there has been no other information out...]

[It is horribly quiet!]

Nobody would guess that the two ladies got killed in Ye Clan's house because it was absurd. After all, the two ladies could even make it out safely after entering Misty Cloud Palace!

One of the two ladies would be merely a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator. However, when they joined forces, they had a chance to defeat a super powerful figure like Xue Danru. Nobody in the world would want to fight against the two ladies!

[How could anything go wrong on the two dominant figures' side?]

[Since nothing went wrong, why don't they just make a massacre in Ye Clan...]

[We have waited too long!]

[What are they waiting for? There were many people who were supposed to defeat their opponent with a flick of a finger, and yet they got defeated because they kept giving time for their opponents! They wasted time! That's why they failed!]

When everybody was watching, worried and expectant of the result of what happened in the practice area... the gate of the practice area finally opened again.

Ye Xiao, young Lord Ye, looked badly beaten. His clothes were stained, and his chest was soaked. That seemed like a hell lot of sweat. He appeared as if he had been rolled back and forth on the floor for a long time. All in all, people assumed he got beaten up really hard in there.

They also thought that the two ladies must have shown mercy to him because his face was totally unharmed, which was still handsome...

[Holy hell! It shouldn't be!]

[It doesn't make sense!]

However, nobody said anything when Ye Xiao came out.

He wasn't the focal point after all.

The focal point finally appeared. The two ladies stepped out of the door of the practice area side by side.

Their clothes were still white like snow; their faces were still cold like the moon, frosty like ice. They still looked indifferent and calm, two fairies descending to the mortal world!

Their faces and postures... The situation and the atmosphere...

They were just the same as before they entered the area.

Everybody was waiting... some clan chiefs of the other clans came to ask for latest information with the excuse of showing their concern to Ye Clan. Before they left, Shuang and Han had walked

out. The clan chiefs only felt anguished.

[What if the two ladies start to kill? What if they think I am on Ye Clan's side? What if they just casually kill me... What to do? I just want to gloat over Ye Clan's failure... That is all...]

Ye Nantian stepped ahead and stopped in front of Shuang and Han. His clothes were flicking the air. His face looked solemn. What an imposing posture!

"You two are senior masters! How could you beat my son, a young generation to you?" Unexpectedly, this was what Ye Nantian said first!

He was actually questioning the two ladies!

He even spoke in an angry tone, with his eyes wide open!

It seemed nothing was more important than his son. [How f*cking dare you two little girls beat my son?]

Nobody had ever seen a father that was more protective of his son than Ye Nantian.

A few of the people actually passed out immediately.

...

Chapter 1124: Extremely Protective of His Son

The eyeballs of the clan chiefs all most popped out because of shock.

[Holy hell! Isn't he too tough?]

[Man, you are a big brother indeed. I understand you are protective of your son, but could you try to understand what situation you are facing and who are you talking to, could you? Do you know who you are talking to? Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace!]

[Not to mention hitting your son, even if they hit you, slaughter every one of your clan, it would be a piece of cake for them, wouldn't it?]

[Look at you! You are no better than an ant in front of them. How dare you blame them?]

[I assume you have eaten some leopard gall or a bear heart, but that shouldn't be able to give you this much courage!]

Shuang and Han, the leading figures in this event. were actually stunned. They confusedly stared at Ye Nantian and felt only scared.

The reason why they would feel scared was simple. That man... was their brother's father...

Most importantly, the man was protecting their brother!

"Ahem!" Ye Xiao hurriedly coughed.

He was trying to warn the two ladies. He knew pretty well about the two sisters. If he didn't inform them, they might directly apologize to Ye Nantian or even kneel down to submit!

If Ye Nantian started to attack the ladies, they would not even

defend themselves, not to mention fight back!

Their brother's father was just like their own father!

"So what if we hit him? So what if we didn't?" Yue Han pretended to be calm and indifferent. She truly wanted to wipe the sweat on her forehead though...

"Humph!" Ye Nantian was furious. "So what? My son, I haven't even scolded him one time since he was born! Let alone hit him..."

He was raging up. "How dare you hit my son! You have to pay for it... I..."

Before the furious father finished yelling...

"We didn't hit him!"

Yue Han hurriedly explained with a few words, widely opening her eyes. [I should stop being indifferent now. I should better tell him the truth. Things are going to end up entirely wrong if we explain late.]

- Boom! -

Some people were so shocked that their hearts stopped beating. The clan chiefs of the other clans were so appalled that they actually sat on the floor right away. They were gasping heavily right now.

[Holy hell...]

[Did I see a ghost or was I dreaming?]

[This must be a nightmare!]

[Why would such horrible, terrifying, scary, astonishing, and unimaginable scene happen in my sight if it isn't a nightmare...]

"Why would we hit him?" Yue Shuang added. She still looked cold and bland. "We are here to end the chaos. You will be dead if we want to fight. What is the point?"

What she said, she said it in the typical way in which the two

ladies usually acted.

However, Ye Nantian was stunned. He said, "Then why is he..."

"Father, I suddenly felt sleepy when we were having the conversation. I wanted to wash my face to stay sober, but I slipped. That is why my clothes are wet. It was my fault... Not theirs..." What a lousy story!

[You are a level one Dao Origin Stage cultivator, a superior cultivator. Even though you are nothing in front Shuang and Yue, you are the most dominant figure in Oracle District. In a conversation which concerns the future of our clan, that might decide our rise or fall, you actually told me you felt sleepy...]

[How sleepy were you?]

[How sleepy were you that it made you slip and fall to the floor...]

Even Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian felt like passing out when they heard it.

[Come on, brother, you should do better at making up a story...]

[Even pigs won't believe it!]

[If you have to make a stupid lie like this, please don't let anybody know that you are a disciple of Cold Moon Palace, okay? We can't bear the disgrace! Please!]

What surprised them most was that the ladies helped him with that 'pighead' story...

"That's true. He fell asleep..." Yue Shuang and Yue Han actually tried to cover his lie. "He got a washbasin of water from somewhere and tried to stay sober. Something happened. He slipped... The water all fell on him. That is why he looks muddy... How careless..."

Everybody, who heard their words, showed the same face, opening their mouth and widening their big round eyes, numbly looking at Ye Xiao and the two ladies. Nobody talked. They froze!

They all deeply felt like being struck by the divine thunderbolts right on the heads!

Even those who claimed to be smart and enterprising all felt muddy in the head. They were totally blank, not knowing what to think of.

What happened was beyond a human being's recognition!

Everyone had the same thought, [I am going crazy!]

[This is such a crazy world...]

Even Ye Xiao, the only man who got supported, rolled up his eyes.

[Holy hell. How did Qiong-Hua Palace teach their disciples? How did the little girls live till present? They are not even close to two murderous figures who are experienced in the martial world!]

[They are obviously two ignorant and innocent young stupid foolish silly girls...]

Ye Nantian was numbed. When he returned to consciousness and closed his mouth, he found his face was stiff...

He tried to move the lips and then said, "Well..."

"Hmm... That..."

Yue Shuang was going to say something too.

When they heard the other start to talk, they both stopped to let the other talk.

However, what happened next was nobody talking...

Zhan Yunfei had a muddy head at the moment. He secretly pushed Zhu Jiutian with a finger and said, "Do you understand what is going on?"

Zhu Jiutian rolled his eyes up and said, "How could I?"

"This is too weird. So strange... Like magic..." Zhan Yunfei touched his head and grumbled.

Zhu Jiutian was wholly lost in it too. "That's right. This is too... much... that..."

"I just feel that it's impossible to understand it..." Zhan Yunfei looked deeply lost in thoughts. "The only thing I have in my mind is... I feel like I am your surname at this very moment..." [1]

"My surname?" Zhu Jiutian was confused, and then he realized what Zhan Yunfei was talking. He shouted in a fury, "Zhan Yunfei! You prick!"

...

—————

[1] Zhu Jiutian's surname, Zhu(朱), sounds the same as the word pig(猪) in Chinese. Pig is the symbol of stupidity in China.

Chapter 1125: Must be in A Dream!

In a peaceful silence, Zhu Jiutian's angry shout was abrupt and shocking.

The others all turned their stiff necks to look at Zhu and Zhan.

Some of them turned their heads so fast that their neck bones cracked, which made them feel sore.

"Ahem..." Yue Shuang coughed. She looked calm and cold again, and she blandly said, "We have discussed the current situation with Lord Ye. We have gone through the event from the beginning to the end, and we exchanged our thoughts, then had a negotiation in the end."

"It did take a long time. Considering how much we should talk about and how important it was, we had to go deep into it, so that nothing would be missed," Yue Han added.

However, it was worse than saying nothing. As she said more, the more it felt like covering a lie!

"Puff... Ahem... cough, cough, cough..." Zhan Yunfei choked and started to cough.

Zhu Jiutian widely opened his eyes like he had seen a ghost...

Ye Nantian was totally numb. He literally didn't know what to say...

[Discussed it... Exchanged thoughts... Had a negotiation...]

[How much we should talk about and how important it was...]

[So that nothing would be missed...]

[What the hell?]

[If somebody else said these words, it would be fine.]

[But... who are you?]

[You are Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace!]

[You said it clear and loud, that you would never negotiate, that you never cared about right and wrong, that you only bent to the bigger fist!]

[Now you have changed your mind... Can't you take it seriously...]

"Well, in fact, I think everybody should be reasonable," Yue Shuang said solemnly as if she had heard the voice in Ye Nantian's head.

"That's right! Justice is among us! Those who are unreasonable are all bad guys!" Yue Han added.

"So we must be reasonable. We must choose right over wrong!" Yue Shuang kept speaking in a bland voice.

"We are the good guys," Yue Han peacefully announced.

Ye Nantian couldn't help keep his eyes wildly opened. He only felt like he was in a dream!

He couldn't find a word to describe what was happening at the moment!

Zhan Yunfei got down on the floor and coughed severely like his world was collapsing. It seemed he was not going to stop coughing until the world ended!

It wasn't exaggerated. It was true. Zhan Yunfei was wholly lost in it. He didn't know what to react and only ended up being choked. As they said more, he felt worse. It was sure that he would cough so bad considering how speechless he was at the moment!

He even shed tears because he had been coughing so hard for so long.

Zhu Jiutian wasn't any better. He kept stretching his neck like a dumb bird and opening his mouth. He kept making the same posture for a long time already.

Others might think that the two ladies might be two sensitive

people.

What they said was all quite right after all...

However, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian both knew how horrible the two ladies were.

They knew much more about the two ladies than the others!

The two horrible women never bothered to be reasonable. For them, the only thing that mattered was power! The strongest fist represented justice!

Han Bingxue, who had been hiding somewhere in the dark, was also shocked. He kept his mouth open for so long that when he wanted to close his mouth, he nearly bit off his tongue.

[What... What the hell is going on?]

Han Bingxue was one of the several persons who knew Ye Xiao well in Qing-Yun Realm, and he knew exactly who Ye Xiao was. However, even he was utterly muddleheaded!

He felt that he was a complete idiot at the moment!

[The others don't know Ye Xiao's real identity so I can understand why they are shocked. But I know everything... I know much more things than the others! Why am I also confused?]

[Why?]

Indeed, everybody knew one thing for sure. They knew that no matter what was happening, the conversation in the practice area must be the reason! Everybody knew it.

However, nobody knew what Ye Xiao had said or done to the two ladies, that actually changed the two ladies so abruptly, amazingly, shockingly, and magically.

Even Han Bingxue, who knew Ye Xiao the best among all these people, could only think of one possibility.

It was... the only reasonable possibility that Han Bingxue could

think of. [Did... he actually put on a great power show... during the time in there... to r-ra-rape... the two ladies?]

[Did he turn them his women?]

This was the only possibility Han Bingxue could have in mind, even though it was ridiculous and brain-burning.

However, he had a new question about it... [Boss is merely level one of Dao Origin Stage. How did he manage to do that near-impossible thing?]

He grabbed his own hair and thought hard. [What did he do to make the two ladies his own women? They were his sworn enemies just a while ago! How? What did he do to get them?]

[If he didn't make them his women, they shouldn't be acting this way...]

[Is it because of his face? He has a handsome face! Wait... If he could do it with that face, can't I... Can't I also take care of the two ladies at a time...]

As he thought deeper, his mind diverged further...

The broader the universe is, the further a man's mind goes. How true!

What happened in Han Bingxue's mind perfectly proved this saying right...

"After we got to know the truth, we felt... ashamed." Yue Shuang talked seriously. She continued with her cold and indifferent voice to shock and surprise all the others.

[Ashamed?]

People were all freaking out in an unconscious status.

[That's right! We are dreaming!]

[We must be dreaming!]

[We all, together, are having a strange, magical, amazing,

incredible, unbelievable, and terrible dream!

Ye Nantian automatically inhaled a cold breath. He unbelievably stared at Yue Shuang and Yue Han.

He was literally stunned.

The two ladies, who hadn't change their frosty face expression for hundreds of years, started to feel panicky while Ye Nantian was staring at them. They hurriedly coughed to cover their anxiety. Yue Han nodded and said, "That's right. We felt ashamed."

Ye Nantian was still in shock after he confirmed the ladies did mean what they said.

...

Chapter 1126: We Were Wrong!

Ye Nantian surely had seen big scenes quite often. Who was Ye Nantian? A significant figure in Land of Han-Yang who was in an equal position with a king. His cultivation might be just regular in Qing-Yun Realm, but he wasn't weaker than anybody in other aspects. However...

What happened during the day raised one wave after another. Things had been so weird so far!

No. Weird was not the perfect word. It should be magical! It was against logic!

Ye Nantian honestly didn't know what to say. It seemed he would be wrong no matter what he said. [I guess I should just keep my mouth shut!]

"We realized that we were wrong. The biggest reason is that our Moon Queen had made the promise to Ye Clan in the old days. Qiong-Hua Palace should keep the promise," Yue Shuang seriously said.

Hmm. It was a fair reason!

"That's right. Who violates one's own promise bears guilt. It is what a cultivator should never do!" Yue Han nodded to agree.

"Thanks to Lord Ye, we were enlightened. He has kept us from falling into the situation that we would be haunted by the guilt!" Yue Shuang sounded admiring.

- Puff, puff, puff... -

Some people directly passed out.

[Not that I can't understand, but the world just changed so fast!]

[Not that I can't endure it, but... what I have been hearing are all shocking, unbelievable, and magical words from an influential figure.]

Ye Nantian could still endure it, but his face turned pale, and he was trembling.

He honestly couldn't understand it.

[What is going on?]

He was sure his son must have said something or done something which led to the current change.

That confused him evermore!

[A kid like you... how did you talk it over since you don't know the details about what has happened in the past? How is it possible for you to convince others? Especially convince the two ladies!]

[You are so much younger than them... You are in such a different background from them... You are so much weaker than them...]

[Most importantly... Who do you think they are? They are the last two persons in the martial world who would be reasonable to others... They are merely unreasonable people. How did you talk it over against them?]

[You can't defeat them in a fight; you can't convince them either...]

[There is no way you can make them submit... Yet... they are submitting... How did you do it?]

Suddenly, Ye Nantian froze because of the shock, astonishment... He even didn't feel happy when the ladies decided to spare Ye Clan because he was too stunned!

He just stood there, numb and stiff.

"Therefore... I, Yue Shuang..."

"I, Yue Han!"

"We announced a few things, in the name of Qiong-Hua Palace!" Yue Shuang looked sacred and solemn.

"Listen up, everybody!" Yue Han added.

"First... Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue fell in love. It was the nature of a man and a woman. It ought to be blessed," Yue Shuang announced the first thing, which astonished all the others.

[Holy hell! What is she doing? Is she acting against her own sect? Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue violated the rules of Qiong-Hua Palace! That was where everything began! How could you just turn against your own sect?]

"Due to some unavoidable mistakes, Qiong-Hua Palace made a wrong judgment. We made the attack first, and it caused a tragedy. Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue were separated for seventeen years. It had consumed the youth of their lives." Yue Han sounded sullen.

"Thus, Qiong-Hua Palace owes Ye Nantian, Yue Gongxue, and Ye Clan the most sincere apology and compensation!" Yue Shuang had returned to calmness and coldness. Yet what she was saying was like a hammer striking on everybody's heart!

"As the elders of Qiong-Hua Palace, we sisters will be fully responsible for it. We will make sure the compensation is made." Yue Han made a decision.

"Second... Qiong-Hua Palace did terribly wrong in expelling Ye Nantian! It was against human nature! It was an unreasonable crime!" Yue Shuang sounded solemn and sullen.

"Qiong-Hua Palace shall make compensation as well to Ye Nantian. We will not only arrange a wedding for Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue but also compensate them both physically and mentally," Yue Han announced.

"Third, we sincerely apologized to the only son of Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue," Yue Shuang said.

"That's right. Because of our mistake, the poor kid has lost the company of his beloved mother for eighteen years. There is nothing we can do to make it up for the loss of his life. However,

Qiong-Hua Palace will take the responsibility to try out best to compensate the kid!" Yue Han said.

"We two will make sure everything gets done well and soon."

"Last, about the fact that we came here to denounce the inexistent fault, what we were going to do is against justice and a human's conscience. We Qiong-Hua Palace is a righteous sect. We follow the rule of justice. What happened was that we were blinded by the vile people. Now, we have known the truth. We won't allow anybody to do such ignoble and despicable thing!" Yue Han said.

"Thus, we decided to call it off. To the abominable result that we have caused today, we, representing Qiong-Hua Palace, apologize sincerely to Ye Clan!" Yue Shuang said.

"Yes. Sincere apology!" Yue Han sounded solemn.

The two ladies bowed.

"At last, in order to compensate Ye Clan, Ye Nantian, Yue Gongxue, and others involved..." Yue Shuang solemnly said, "We represent Qiong-Hua Palace to make this promise. From now on, Qiong-Hua Palace and Ye Clan will be allies, support each other when either side is needed."

"That's right! From now on, who dares to mess with Ye Clan will have to face our anger! Face Qiong-Hua Palace's anger!" Yue Han was fierce!

"We announce it here now because we hope that all of you can help spread the news to the world. I hope everybody in the martial world shows me some respect on this subject." Yue Shuang smiled, but her voice was still cold and distant.

"Who dares not, we will wipe out their entire family!" Yue Han humphed. That was a deadly threat.

"Now, it is the end of the chaos. We sisters have traveled a long way to come here. Is it possible that we stay in Ye Clan for a good rest? I guess it won't bother you too much, will it?" Yue Shuang

looked tired, and she abruptly asked.

"Yes. We are tired. Generous Ye Clan people, you won't shut us out the door, would you?" Yue Han stood unsteadily as if she would fall to the floor the next second. "I think it would be better if nobody disturbs us when we are resting!"

...

Chapter 1127: Rising Slowly!

Ye Xiao spoke right in time, "Whoever comes with kindness is our honorable guest. Ladies, your stay will lit up Ye Clan's humble house! You are most welcome!"

"Hmm. Thanks a lot for your kindness. We sisters will accept the favor... This is it." Yue Shuang waved his hand.

"You can leave now, all of you!" Yue Han waved her hand after.

All the others, including Ye Nantian, Li Yunxuan, Zhan Yunfei, and Zhu Jiutian... nobody left as Yue Han said; they just stood there like sculptures rooted in the on the ground.

Everybody stood still, not even moving their eyeballs!

Apparently, they were too shocked by the announcement to move!

The two ladies actually said they were tired because they had traveled a long way... They were two dominant level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators!

They were two dominant figures in Qing-Yun Realm!

[How is it possible that they actually feel tired just like that?]

[And they even talked like Ye Clan was doing a great favor to let them stay! What the hell?]

[Don't you think you should think of some better excuses when you try to fool others?]

[Holy hell... Can't you stop treating us like a bunch of fools?]

Only one person—literally one person—at present, stayed sober.

That only person was exactly Ye Xiao, who was responsible for all that had happened!

He stepped out casually, pretentiously, handsomely, and imposingly, and said, "Ladies, please follow me to the guest room."

Yue Shuang suddenly looked soft in the eyes and spoke in a gentle voice, "Thank you, Lord Ye. We appreciate it."

"You are being too polite, sister... I mean, we are allies from now on. We don't need to be too polite to our friend." Yue Han smiled. "Doesn't it feel like we are back home here..."

People were shocked again.

[Like you are back home?]

...

[You... are genuinely not too polite!]

However, everybody looked at Ye Clan's people with no more gloating in the eyes. Instead, they were so ultimately jealous that their eyes seemed to be blue...

[Oh heavens... Oh earth... How could things become so absurd?]

[Shouldn't the two ladies start a bloodshed in Ye Clan?]

[Shouldn't they kill every living thing in Ye Clan?]

[Shouldn't they attack them as fierce as they could?]

[Shouldn't they even kill some irrelevant people like us with the Ye Clan people?]

[I wouldn't be this surprised if you did...]

[What the hell is following the rule of justice? Since when did Qiong-Hua Palace become a righteous sect?]

[What the hell is this ridiculous storyline?]

[Does anything even make sense in the world now?]

[Oh heavens! Oh god, where are your eyes? Didn't you see Ye Clan was already unacceptably powerful in Oracle District? They got fully supported by Misty Cloud Palace, and it was already unacceptable! Then their young heir is the disciple of the three grand elders of Cold Moon Palace... That was killing us already!]

[Ahhhhhh!]

[Finally, Qiong-Hua Palace's ace force, Shuang and Han came to denounce Ye Clan! I thought there was still justice! I thought the heavens couldn't endure Ye Clan! I thought a divine thunderbolt was going to destroy the Ye Clan once and for all!]

[However... How come things would end up this way?]

[Their only sworn enemy, Qiong-Hua Palace, who had hated them for so many years, suddenly becomes their most stable ally!]

[What is wrong with this f*cking turnover?]

[Oh lord! Oh heavens!]

[Please tell me, show me mercy, why... why would all this happen!]

The chiefs of the other clans were holding tears in their eyes. The only thing they could do was to ask the heaven while their tears shed out. They could feel their hearts breaking into pieces!

[Why couldn't my clan have such great fortune...]

[We never wanted three dominant sects to support us at the same time... We just need one... Please... Please...]

...

Yue Shuang and Yue Han followed Ye Xiao into the house, just like they did earlier.

After a while...

- Crack! -

- Crack! -

The same sound appeared from everywhere.

It was the sound a man's mouth made when he kept the mouth open for too long and suddenly closed it. It was good that their mouths still made the cracking sound though because they could at least close their mouths. Some people already dislocated their jaws

because they kept it open for too long...

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian, the two superior cultivators, were in the best situation among the people. They just felt like they were sleepwalking... They staggered to their room and then fell to their beds... They wouldn't get up...

There was a voice that kept sounding in their heads. "Why... Why... What is going on?"

The chiefs of the other clans finally realized what had happened. They slowly turned their head to look at the chief of Ye Clan, Ye Xiao's father, Ye Nantian.

They didn't know. Ye Nantian was also muddleheaded. He didn't even have time to react.

"Heh, heh, heh..." A few people started to laugh. That was such a dry laugh. Their throats were dry, and the laughter sounded just like chewing bones...

"Chief Ye, congratulations..." Even though they were all showing a complicated expression on the face, they bowed and congratulated Ye Clan humbly.

As these people faced Ye Nantian, they would like to kneel down and kowtow to him directly!

Because they confirmed one thing.

Before what just happened, Ye Clan still had an enemy hiding in the dark. The other clans might be useful to Ye Clan...

However, Ye Clan was no longer the Ye Clan the other clans knew anymore!

Ye Clan was in a high position that the other clans couldn't even see it!

Ye Clan had solved the only hidden crisis in such a weird and magical situation! It was thoroughly resolved!

From now on, Ye Clan was a clan that nobody dared to mess with

even in the entire Qing-Yun Realm!

Misty Cloud Palace was Ye Clan's ally!

Qiong-Hua Palace was Ye Clan's marriage-related ally!

Cold Moon Palace also had a stable relationship with Ye Clan.

It was their young lord's sect! Ye Xiao, the young Lord Ye, was the most important disciple in Cold Moon Palace!

He was totally the lifeblood of Cold Moon Palace!

The only lifeblood!

This might be the last chance of the chiefs of the other clans to see Ye Nantian!

Because... they were totally in different stages in the world! There was a vast difference between Ye Nantian and the others!

After what happened, with all the problems solved in a high-profile way, Ye Nantian was already in a high position beyond the clouds. The other chiefs were still struggling for living in the mud...

...

Chapter 1128: One Step to Paradise!

"Chief Ye, congratulations! What a wonderful day today! We are honored and lucky to witness such a historical moment. I feel proud!"

"That's right, Chief Ye. From now on, we Li Clan, will humbly follow Ye Clan's lead! We will disobey no order from Ye Clan!"

"Aye! We Ma Clan too!"

"Huang Clan too..."

"I humbly wish that the honorable chief of Ye Clan will show generosity to us..."

"We all depend on Chief Ye now..."

When these guys realized what was happening, they hurriedly showed loyalty to Ye Nantian. They thought that if they didn't do it and Ye Clan decided to take revenge on what happened in the old days... their clans might be wiped out by Ye Clan...

After one day, if Ye Clan showed dissatisfaction to a clan, Ye Clan wouldn't need to do it, nor would the three dominant sects. Many other clans who wanted to relate to Ye Clan would wipe out that clan to earn a favorable impression!

They knew that they should seize the moment to fawn on Ye Clan! Once they lost the chance, it wouldn't come back!

None of them wanted to spend the rest of their lives in regret!

Ye Nantian might not become equally convincing as the prime masters of the great sects, but he was not much weaker than them. It would be more difficult than climbing the clouds for the other chiefs to see Ye Nantian in the future!

Ye Nantian coped with this bunch of people as if he was in a dream. Finally, all was done, and he returned to the house.

Indeed, nobody dared to stop him. They just smiled and watched

the Ye Clan people got back into their house, and the door of Ye Clan's house closed slowly behind them. The other chiefs didn't even dare to go in that door to have some tea.

[Ye Clan's tea is no longer something I can have as I wish!]

One could be ignorant of many things in the martial world but should never ignore the absolute power!

It was no longer a place these people could go in and out freely!

After the door was closed, the chiefs hurriedly returned to their residence fast like their asses were on fire. They gave an order as soon as they arrived, 'From now on, everybody should be cautious and respectful to Ye Clan people!'

'Everybody should treat Ye Clan people, including their servants and maids, in the highest profile as if they are our ancestors! Do not expect you can please Ye Clan, but just do not offend them! If any of you recklessly offend Ye Clan people... not only you will die, but also the entire clan... We will all die because of you... Remember the iron rule now...'

After the rules were made, the entire Town of Ye fell into absolute silence. There were no more useless voices.

Those clans had been in equivalent positions as Ye Clan, even higher position than Ye Clan a few days earlier. Their people had been laughing loudly, talking freely in the Town of Ye. However, when they walked over Ye Clan's door now, their faces turned pale, and they walked sneakily like they were walking by the gate to hell!

When they were passing by the door, they sweated.

"Stay low!"

"Stay respectful!"

"Stay..."

...

When Ye Nantian walked back to his home, he felt like his head was stricken by eighteen thousand thunderbolts. His head was muddled, his eyes were dazzled, and it felt like the entire galaxy was shining in his sight!

He was stepping firmly on the floor, but he felt like he was stepping on clouds. It was soft and weak. He felt dizzy. He felt it was unreal.

Everything felt like a dream to him!

He looked around the people who were following him. Li Yunxuan, who was a disciple of Misty Cloud Palace, also looked pale on the face. She seemed soulless. Apparently, she didn't know what she was doing.

The other Ye Clan people were only worse.

Everybody was staggering like sleepwalking. Some of them still kept opening their mouths and eyes, with their eyeballs almost popping out... Some of them who were under level six of Dream Origin Stage actually fell forward and hit the floor when they first stepped into the door. Their faces hit the floor directly, and they were stained with blood.

Even though they were bleeding, they still looked numb, as if they couldn't feel the pain.

Ye Nantian had been fighting in the battles for many years. He didn't hesitate as he immediately pinched his own leg and felt the pain! He trembled and returned to consciousness!

[This is not a dream!]

[This is never a dream!]

"This is not a dream!" He made a long shout. His voice spread up to the sky, and the clouds broke into pieces!

Everybody, no matter what status they were in, completely woke up from muddledness as they heard the shout! They felt a bolt of

lightning striking their heads!

They were back to consciousness!

[It's not a dream!]

[This is the reality!]

[It is real!]

[We, Ye Clan, are going to be great! We are going to be literally a dominant force in the district!]

Nobody talked. However, everybody's eyes were shining with the light of hope.

Many of them stood still blankly, with a big smile. Tears gathered in the corners of their eyes. In the end, tears dropped off. Some people got down to the floor, holding their faces, and letting the tears get through their fingers!

Nobody knew what kind of lives these people of the three groups of Ye Clan had been through in these years!

In the clan, they had to endure the suppression from Ye Shuxin and the three groups under his lead; outside the clan, they had to bear the suppression from the other clans and the domineering force of Qiong-Hua Palace, one of the most powerful sects in Qing-Yun Realm! They had been struggling for survival!

They had to endure it, day after day!

When they were outside the clan, they didn't even dare to stand straight up.

Nobody knew whether Qiong-Hua Palace would just wipe out the entire Ye Clan just because of a bad mood!

They didn't dare to offend the dominant forces, nor did they dare to respond to the provocation of the other clans recklessly. One mistake and they would have to face the force from outside the clan as well as the punishment in the clan. The opponents in the clan would seize every opportunity to punish them!

The infighting had always been a big problem!

The people of the three groups who supported Ye Nantian to fight against Ye Shuxin and his people were risking their lives when they chose the side.

They already had enough of that kind of miserable life!

They would rather die fighting against the evil than live with disgrace!

However, they never expected things would become so promising and enchanting on their side!

What happened now was not only promising and enchanting; it was like a boost that made them reach paradise with one step!

...

Chapter 1129: Banquet

Ye Clan once fell because of Ye Nantian and had been suppressed for seventeen years. Now, also because of Ye Nantian, it rose again! As it rose up, it was a strong eternal foundation that was built under it!

As a clan, it was allied to Qiong-Hua Palace, Misty Cloud Palace, and Cold Moon Palace at the same time. It was definitely unique in the history of Qing-Yun Realm!

At the same time, Ye Nantian's shout had sounded in the other clans' places.

The people of the other clans all trembled when they heard the shout! They were terrified!

That shout was the roar of a great lion who had been sleeping for many years and suddenly woke up!

An awakened lion descended to the world like a king.

In the roar, it indicated the domineering attitude and the splendidity of a king!

...

Ye Nantian strode forward. He directly went to his study room!

After that, he sat in front of his desk.

After a while, he quietly lowered his head to touch the desk. He just stayed low on the desk.

After a long while, he raised his head with tears in his eyes.

He took a deep breath, stared at the void, and murmured, "Xue'er, our misfortune is going to end!"

"We created the disaster because of our impulsive love! Because of the disaster, we have our son!"

"Now that all is ended, our suffering is going to end because of

what our son has done!"

"Our son ended the suffering of us!"

"We are going to take you home!"

"We will be reunited. You and me, we will never be apart again!"

"Xue'er, wait for me!"

...

Everybody was guessing what the reason was for all that had happened, except Ye Nantian. He knew his son had done everything.

He didn't know what Ye Xiao had exactly done and how he managed to do it!

However, he knew that there would be no other people who could lead things to such a result.

Those dan beads were brought to him by his son!

His son fought and killed to create Ye Clan's solidarity!

Misty Cloud Palace became an ally of Ye Clan not only because of Xuan Bing's strange favor, but also because of his son's lotuses. A firm relationship was built beyond a stable exchange of interests. Misty Cloud Palace suddenly announced the alliance with Ye Clan because they wanted the lotuses from his son. Nobody else in Ye Clan had done anything to contribute to the alliance.

Cold Moon Palace supported Ye Clan because of his son. Ye Xiao was Cold Moon Palace's most important disciple. That was why they would fully support Ye Clan.

Qiong-Hua Palace supporting Ye Clan was an abrupt change. Ye Nantian didn't understand it, but he was sure Ye Xiao had played an essential role in the change.

Ye Nantian had spoken to the two ladies before they had the conversation with Ye Xiao. Ye Nantian also had told them

everything he could, but the two ladies wouldn't care about justice or righteousness at all... However, before the two ladies changed their minds, Ye Xiao was the only person who had talked to them, nobody else did!

So...

Ye Nantian took a deep breath.

He felt that he didn't know his son well enough anymore.

Although he had felt Ye Xiao's strangeness before when they were in the Land of Han-Yang, however, that feeling had risen to the strongest point at the moment.

He felt a ring of mystery on his son!

No matter how he tried, he couldn't see the truth behind it!

[No matter how mysterious he is, he is still my son!]

[The more mysterious my son is, the better!]

[Let the ring cover him from the eyes of all the people in the world, and that will keep him absolutely safe!]

[The secrets of him...]

[Humph!] Ye Nantian suddenly laughed. [No matter how arrogant he is, no matter how mysterious he is, he is still my son!]

[I shout at him when I want to shout at him; I hit him when I want to hit... Wait... He hasn't done anything wrong. I shouldn't beat him. Right. Just shout at him!]

[That means all to me. Nothing else matters!]

[To dig the secrets behind him...]

[I am better than that!]

[A secret means a secret!]

[I raised him up by myself. I changed his pants, and I fed him what he needed. I am literally like both a mother and a father to

him...]

[What else should I care? Why would I be worried?]

...

That night, Ye Clan held a big banquet to entertain the guests!

Some of the other clans that hadn't left Town of Ye all received the invitation!

They would probably disdainfully throw the invitation letters away like trash if they received it a few months earlier. Few of them would attend the banquet in the old days.

However, now they felt flattered.

[Oh god! Ye Clan actually invites us to the banquet!]

[What an honor!]

[What a compliment!]

[How surprising!]

Everybody started to dress up formally like an important figure. Every clan had prepared a priceless gift that literally had cost so much that it made them feel hurt. Everyone went to Ye Clan beaming cheerfully.

It was a big banquet, but in fact, there were only eight tables.

In the outer hall, those who represented the other clans were eating quietly in the company of the elders of Ye Clan. It wasn't as bustling as the typical banquets, but both the guests and the host were having a wonderful time.

There was a table that was specially arranged in the side room of the inner hall. It was for the ladies from Misty Cloud Palace, accompanied by the ladies of Ye Clan.

In the inner hall, there was a big table.

Whoever sat around this table were the main figures of this banquet.

Whoever was invited to sit at this table should be powerful enough to earn respect from the most powerful sects in Qing-Yun Realm!

Ye Shuqing didn't sit here; instead, he was sitting at a table in the outer hall. He should be qualified enough to sit here, but he didn't like to relax in a depressing atmosphere. He shouldn't be forced to sit down after all...

Around this table, there were Zhan Yunfei, Zhu Jiutian, Li Yunxuan, Yue Shuang, Yue Han, Ye Nantian, and Ye Xiao.

Such a big table was shared by only seven people!

Han Bingxue didn't show up.

Ye Nantian wanted this mysterious figure, who had been supporting his son all along, to join the banquet!

Could Han Bingxue join them?

No!

So he pretended to be fussy. He said, "I don't like a noisy situation!"

As he said so, Ye Nantian felt more admiring of him. [That is such a superior cultivator's behavior! I honestly am much worse!]

In such an enjoyable day, Han Bingxue was sitting at a small table on his own in a secret room. It was sad. He drank to himself and refilled his own bowl. The poor Frost Sword was still in confusion.

He took a sip of the fine liquor and made a sigh.

...

Chapter 1130: Weird Harmony

"What is wrong with the world..." Han Bingxue sighed. His clothes were white like snow, and his eyes looked sullen. "I am such a handsome, generous, outstanding, charming, and imposing young lord... yet I am staying alone with the food and drinks to myself... Where is justice..."

...

The liquor was fine.

The cuisine was good.

It was the first time for some people to sit together at the same table and enjoy the same food and drinks!

Even though they all had prepared to sit together, they still felt stiff when seated with the others.

If Ye Clan didn't hold the banquet, maybe Li Yunxuan, who was from Misty Cloud Palace, would never be able to have dinner with Yue Shuang and Yue Han of Qiong-Hua Palace.

She wasn't qualified to!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were roughly the same.

They were in almost equal positions in the martial world as the two sisters, and they were practically likewise powerful. They weren't that much different after all, but they were men, while the sisters were women.

Everybody seemed to be quiet. Every word they said, they said it cautiously. The atmosphere was quite depressing around the table. Nobody dared to mention those sensitive topics, such as how the sisters changed their minds, why they did what they had done...

However, after the dinner, because of Yue Shuang and Yue Han's behavior at the table, everybody felt that they were not like the ladies they heard about! [Are they truly Shuang and Han of Qiong-

Hua Palace?] What a weird feeling...

The two ladies weren't frosty, indifferent, distant... Not even a bit!

More surprisingly, they were just like two little girls who had just come to the society.

All superior cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm knew that the two ladies were pure-hearted and indifferent. They were indifferent because they didn't care about anything of the martial world. They didn't even care about the underlying social rules. Right and wrong, justice and injustice... they didn't care. There were three reasons why they would become like this. First, Qiong-Hua Palace kept them away from the outside world all the time. Second, they didn't like to relate to anything outside the world. Third, the martial art they cultivated made them to...

Although they were powerful and dominant in the world, they were always pure in the hearts.

However, what they showed had shocked everybody at the dinner table.

It actually opened everybody's eyes!

"This one! It's delicious." Yue Shuang half closed her eyes and picked up a piece of sugar-lotus with the chopsticks. When she put it into her mouth, her eyes lit up with a strong light. Then she ate another piece. And then a third. She did enjoy the taste.

"It tastes so good indeed!" Yue Han ate a piece of it after her sister. She looked satisfied too.

"Aren't you going to try one?" Yue Shuang looked at Ye Xiao, who was sitting between the two sisters. In her eyes, there was only affection. Deep in her eyes was a sweet obsession. "Come on, try one."

Then she picked one for Ye Xiao.

Zhan Yun Fei, Zhu Jiutian, and the others were twisting their mouths.

"Excellent choice! It does taste good." Ye Xiao laughed and chewed hard. "It is sweet but not greasy. It actually removes the greasy taste in the mouth that was left by the meat. Hmm. Lotus and the meat make a perfect match. It is the meat of a Land Dragon. It tastes good too. Try it."

Then Ye Xiao picked a piece of Land Dragon meat and put it into Yue Shuang's plate. Then he saw Yue Han pout, so he picked another piece and put it into Yue Han's plate too.

The other four people froze immediately!

Ye Nantian's mouth was quivering, and he felt stiff on the face. He looked at Ye Xiao as if looking at a god!

He nearly scolded aloud!

[You prick!]

[The lady put that into your plate because she was nice. Most importantly, she has a pure heart! She didn't think of anything improper...]

[You are a man! How could you use the chopsticks of your own to pick the piece of food to the ladies?]

[You... actually did it to two ladies at the same time!]

[Weren't you asking for troubles...]

[What if they are neat freaks? What if they don't like your chopsticks, and they are mad about it...]

[Do you really think this is rare?]

[It would be a disaster...]

[Can't you see the share chopsticks? You don't even know manners at a table! That is embarrassing!]

[According to the story about the two ladies, they are very likely

two neat freaks!]

[This is going to end terribly!]

[No, I can't just sit and watch. A father should take responsibility for what his son has done. Well, what should I do... This is a problem!]

However, before Ye Nantian figured out what to do, Yue Shuang picked up the piece of meat with her chopsticks and put it into her mouth without hesitation. As she chewed hard, she praised, "It is chewy! It tastes like the cowbells we used to eat when we were kids..."

"That's true! It is chewy indeed! Delicious!" Yue Han was chewing the meat in her mouth too. She looked satisfied in the eyes. "Excellent taste!"

"Two more for you then! We should always feel free to eat when we are sitting with our families. Just don't stop until you truly can't eat anymore." Ye Xiao smiled warmly, and then put two pieces into each of the ladies' plates.

Everybody was shocked while watching Ye Xiao. He just kept ignoring the shared chopsticks and used his own to pick the food for the two ladies. After a while, the ladies' plates were filled with different kinds of food.

The ladies didn't feel anything wrong at all. They just kept putting different cuisines into their mouths, but they only ate those in their own plates and ignored all the other food on the table. They just looked satisfied and happy.

The others froze in confusion again!

"Just eat more if you feel like to. I think you two are too skinny..." Ye Xiao smiled. "Girls should stay in good shapes, but not too much. It is always better to be a little bit overweight."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were terrified. [Holy sh*t! Little brother! You are too young and naive indeed! How could you

mention that word which would definitely offend all female cultivators?]

[There are some common weaknesses of women. Words like overweight, fat, ugly... are never allowed to be mentioned! You have just offended the ladies deadly! You are asking for death!]

However, what happened next astonished them! They were totally stunned!

"We are in perfect shape! We don't want to be overweight!" The two ladies rolled up their eyes at the same time to disagree. However, that was all they did. They just kept eating the food in their plates after responding with a few words.

"Urh..." Ye Nantian raised up his liquor bowl in the air and stayed still. He was apparently shocked. Then he grumbled, "Please... Please..."

Nobody knew what he was asking!

Zhu Jiutian raised his bowl and tried to drink the liquor...

- Puff! -

He poured the liquor into his nose instead!

...

Chapter 1131: The Past; Our Brother

Li Yunxuan, the only woman except for Shuang and Han, was also in shock. She kept asking herself one question. [Why wouldn't Shuang and Han mind? It doesn't make sense! If the young Lord Ye said those words to me, I would at least glare at him if not turned furious. This is so wrong! How come? It seems people are right about the two ladies. They are truly pure-hearted. They are ultimately pure. Their hearts are absolutely pure!]

"Oh? The liquor is good too!" Yue Shuang raised the liquor bowl and drank it up without looking at it. Then she inhaled through her teeth, smiling as she spoke, "I still remember when we were kids. Sister and I were both disabled, lying on the bed. Brother went out for food. He stole half a jar of liquor at that time... It was the first time I had the taste of alcohol..."

"That's right..." Yue Han remembered too. She giggled. "We were five years old if I remember it right. I took the first sip of our life, and got drunk..."

"Me too... Hahaha..." Yue Shuang smiled innocently. Her eyes were filled with warmth and recollection of the past. She felt like they were in that broken cottage again.

The brother and sisters still remembered eating the remains of others' meals, holding half a broken jar of liquor...

One sip for him, one sip for them...

They were enjoying it... They were satisfied...

That day, their brother got hit again. He was bleeding on the corner of his mouth, with a crippled leg, holding and protecting the food and liquor so well. He had lost the food to those guys who beat him up, and those guys stepped on it... He was lying on the floor when they stepped on his food. But then when those guys left, he picked the food up and wrapped it well again...

He hurried home with the food and liquor in his arms with swollen lips. The jar was broken because those men hit him with it. His head broke the jar.

His head was still bleeding...

"Do you remember, Yue Shuang?" Yue Han was recollecting the past while chewing the Land Dragon meat with satisfaction, and she said, "This meat... I mean it... It chews exactly as the cowhells brother stole for us..."

Yue Shuang was chewing it too. She answered, "Of course I do. It was the first time we ever ate meat. Cowhells is so stiff... I could barely chew it. However, I just didn't want to spit it out... I kept trying to chew it... When we finished the cowhells, my cheeks were sore for several days..."

"Me too! I swallowed one after a hell of an effort, and then put another piece into my mouth. I just wanted to finish the meat, because all I learned was that meat was good. But... you and me, we ate all the cowhells... Brother didn't taste any. Not even one tiny piece..." Yue Han said. It seemed she was slightly sobbing.

The two ladies kept talking about the past as if nobody else was present.

Ye Nantian, Zhan Yunfei, and the others were all touched. [They seemed happy when they talked about their past like they could still feel the warmth from it. However, it was such a miserable story. The two dominant figures, who shocked the entire Qing-Yun Realm, turned out to have such a piteous childhood...]

"It turns out the two ladies have such an unspeakable past..." Zhan Yunfei sighed and looked at his brother disciple Zhu Jiutian.

Zhu Jiutian saw the hint in his eyes and understood what he meant.

Zhu Jiutian also sighed. He felt pain and sour in the heart as well.

[Childhood...]

[Brother Zhan and me used to be two negligible little beggars in our childhood. We used to get punched and abused every single day just for some food...]

[Every time when we recollect the past, the pain will relive in our hearts. I thought what happened to us was an incomparable tragedy in the world. However, it turns out the two dominant ladies had exactly the same experience of childhood. They even had worse lives.]

"Many great figures in Qing-Yun Realm... got their opportunities in various miseries... That was the moment they thrust up to the top... Because of what they had been through in their past, they were more flexible and resilient than others. They always know how hard it is for them to get what they have today. They always value what they have at present!" Li Yunxuan sighed.

"That's true. Because of all the miserable hardships they have been through, they stand more stable and firm than others!"

Zhan Yunfei sighed and said, "The purest desire in their hearts gave them tremendous flexibility, fierceness, and toughness. They shared the same thought which was deeply stamped in their hearts... They would rather die than go back to the life they used to have! They couldn't allow themselves to experience the same pain again!"

"That's right!"

Tears flickered in Zhu Jiutian's eyes.

The two ladies' story reminded him of the miserable days he used to live in with Zhan Yunfei.

"The great clans, big sects, and dominant forces have many talented kids. Those kids are always starting from a high position. They are talented. They are smart... But most of them can't reach the top! Because they lack hardships of the nature of lives!"

"The hardships, the miseries, and the sufferings are the true

wealth of one's life!"

Zhan Yunfei made a sigh and said, "However, most people just destroy such wealth after it was accumulated to a certain level!"

"Not really." Ye Xiao smiled. "Only people like you brothers, or the two ladies, recollect the miserable past, it could be a valuable and priceless memory!"

"The sufferings might be an inspiring story of those who eventually made a success. They would keep talking about it with satisfaction. It is definitely enjoyable to recollect the poor old days. However, for those who have suffered greatly but eventually failed, misery means misery, and nightmare means nightmare. It is painful and unbearable to remember!"

Ye Xiao said something meaningful.

Everybody else stopped their chopsticks and listened to him quietly. After being lost in thoughts for a while, they finally nodded to agree.

Yue Shuang raised her head up and stared at Ye Xiao. Her eyeballs rolled round and round, and then she nodded too. In the end, she just lowered her head to keep on eating.

She was so incredibly adorable.

"The misery of the two ladies has pushed them well, so they finally have the current achievement! It is a pride!" Ye Nantian spoke gently and raised up his liquor bowl.

Everybody drank up, to show respect to the ladies.

Yue Han wiped her mouth and solemnly said, "That's right. We sisters have been through too much. We won't belittle ourselves and pretend to be modest. However, I have to add one thing to the conclusion. For the two of us, what makes us proud are not ourselves, but our dear brother."

...

Chapter 1132: My Brother Xiao Monarch

Yue Han looked sentimental in the face. "When Shuang and I were born, we were born crippled. That was a curse. We couldn't even move..."

"Brother was a kid who was several years older than us. He didn't have any method to earn even his own living. He begged others, kneeled down to everyone he met, to beg for food to feed us... When he got nothing of sympathy, he stole... We have seen a lot of the images of him being beaten by several men whom he stole from..."

"We just waited for food..." Yue Shuang's eyes turned red. "Those years... Brother got punched a lot for us... He suffered a lot for us..."

"Now, his sisters have grown up..." They both suddenly stopped taking and twisted their lips, as if they were going to cry out. However, they held it, took a deep breath, and stayed calm.

The others all nodded to show support. They could imagine how hard life could be for a little boy who was only six or seven years old, taking care of two disabled sisters, living on his own...

They all sighed in sorrow.

"Your brother must be a great man who stands in the world firmly." Zhan Yunfei sincerely said, "He must be a man who stands firmly on earth and holds the sky over his head. May I ask for your brother's name? Would you mind telling us where he resides at the moment?"

Yue Han answered without thinking, "My brother is Ye Xiao. He..."

Then she realized she had said something that shouldn't be said. She hurriedly stopped and covered her mouth with one of her small hands.

Yue Shuang looked at her with the hint of scolding in her eyes.

Yue Han surely knew she had said something she should have never mentioned to others, so she lowered her head with regret.

However, when she said the name 'Ye Xiao', everybody became silent!

Except for Yue Shuang, Yue Han, and Ye Xiao, the others all showed dark and weird faces!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian's faces were the darkest and palest!

The abrupt breaking news exploded everybody's head! The two men's hearts started to beat rapidly like never before!

Ye Xiao!

The name showed up in everybody's heart. They all had the same thought at the moment; Yue Han didn't mean Ye Xiao who sat here eating with them!

What she meant was the Xiao Monarch, who used to rule the world, shock the martial world, and sweep the Qing-Yun Realm!

'Laughing at all heroes in the world;'

'I am the Monarch in the firmament!'

It was Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch!

The deadly sworn enemy of the three factions!

However, nobody had expected that... Shuang and Han were exactly sisters of Xiao Monarch!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian felt their heart beating out of their chests.

They were in that exact fight, in which Xiao Monarch died! They were a part of the people who fought and killed Xiao Monarch!

They were partially responsible for Xiao Monarch's death, even though what they did was just a tiny part of it, and they had nearly died in Xiao Monarch's hands instead!

The reality was that they survived, and Xiao Monarch died. Now, they had even recovered from the wounds that were caused in that battle!

Now...

They suddenly got to know the truth that Xiao Monarch, who was known to be a loner, was actually a brother to the two ladies!

Besides, the two ladies were each a horrible cultivator, and they could be much more frightening than Xiao Monarch when they fought together!

From the way they recollected the memory of their brother, it could be seen that they unimaginably loved their brother.

[They won't spare us if they know we are a part of the people who killed their brother!]

[The problem is, who doesn't know we are a part of it?]

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were shedding cold sweat on their foreheads.

They suddenly didn't know what to do.

On the other side, Ye Nantian thought that he knew the reason why the two ladies had suddenly changed their minds and turned against their own sect.

"The reason why you changed your minds..." Ye Nantian said sentimentally, "You actually did it for my son..."

Yue Shuang and Yue Han were both shocked. [Did they know? No! This is bad! Brother seriously warned us that it is not a good time to reveal the truth about him yet!]

Yue Han looked self-condemned.

"... My son's name... His name..." Ye Nantian sighed. "We named him Xiao Monarch's name. Back in the old days, my wife and I were being chased. We met Xiao Monarch's close friend, Jun Yinglian. She felt pity for us and decided to help us. She pointed at

my wife and told us to name our child Ye Xiao... We never thought that the name of the great Xiao Monarch would benefit us even now... Ladies, you spared us because of the name..."

"I never thought that we, Ye Clan... would owe Xiao Monarch another great one in eighteen years..."

Yue Shuang was stunned, and then she hurriedly said, "That's right! That's the reason. Your son has the exact same name as my brother. If we kill him, it would feel like we are killing our own brother. We didn't know you indeed named him after my brother. I guess we did it right to spare you all."

"How could we displease our brother..." Yue Han tried to make it up, but only saw the fierceness in Yue Shuang's eyes.

The warm atmosphere was cooling down at the table.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian looked sullen.

They had been worrying about whether the ladies would deal with them or not, but now they were thinking... whether they should send the message back to their sect.

Jun Yinglian had been fighting alone, yet she alone had stirred a substantial chaotic storm in the three factions.

If Yue Shuang and Yue Han joined her... the two much fiercer figures...

Well...

It was not going to be a happy future for Cold Moon Palace!

Zhan Yunfei gave a dry giggle of laughter and said, "In the past..."

"I know what you three factions did in that year." Yue Shuang and Yue Han suddenly looked fierce in the eyes. Their gazes were like four beams of sharp lights that could cut through the firmament, with hatred and murderousness. They angrily said, "We will get to the three factions sooner or later!"

"However, for the sake of the name Ye Xiao, I don't want to talk

about anything relevant to that filthy past." Yue Han spoke word after word, "But all debts will be paid in full!"

At this moment, the two ladies didn't look innocent and naive like two little girls anymore. Instead, they were emitting the murderous and overwhelming qi that belonged to two true dominant cultivators.

...

Chapter 1133: Town of Anxiety

Zhan Yunfei woodenly said, "It is the rule of nature that the winner decides life and death. We Cold Moon Palace will patiently wait for your attacks, ladies."

He was a dominant figure in Cold Moon Palace after all. Facing the ladies' threat, no matter how influential, potent, and robust the ladies were, he couldn't disgrace his own sect. That was why he responded neither humbly nor arrogantly. However, he still sighed sullenly.

What should happen would eventually happen.

"If anybody listens to me..." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "... It is always better to make peace than to make contention. Ladies, calm down. Why can't we just talk it through instead of having endless fights... In my opinion, Cold Moon Palace... is a fine sect. If... If we can all put that grudge behind, it will be much better than falling into an endless war for both sides..."

What he said totally shocked everybody else! Nobody talked for a while after him!

[Is he out of his mind? What? Is he going to thrust up to the heavens? Or is he simply going to get himself killed?]

[How dare him say these words at this particular moment?]

[They killed their beloved brother... How could you try to make them talk the hatred off?]

[Even though you are also named Ye Xiao, and the two ladies showed respect to you because of your name, you should always know clearly what the situation really is! They showed respect to you just because they loved their brother too much! Aren't you overestimating yourself, saying something that you shouldn't have said?]

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were both surprised. [Come on,

little brother disciple! I know you want to make a contribution to our sect, but you should first make sure you are speaking in a situation that you are allowed to speak. What you said, you were denying the love of the two ladies to their brother! Considering how much they loved their brother, they could have killed you instantly just now!]

They would like to do something to keep Ye Xiao safe, but they just couldn't. First of all, they were not strong enough. Second, Ye Xiao was sitting between the two ladies. The two brothers literally had no idea how to save Ye Xiao from that position!

Ye Nantian was worried and anxious too. He was glad that Ye Xiao was loyal to his own sect, but he also knew Ye Xiao had spoken the wrong words in a wrong situation! He was the weakest among the people at the table, so there was nothing he could do except being anxious about it.

"No. The hatred will remain. We will take revenge for our brother someday." The two ladies talked fiercely. However, they gave in a bit and said, "Well, we might see the three factions in different ways though... Cold Moon Palace didn't send many men to fight my brother. We know what to do with them particularly..."

That meant there was a slight chance for Cold Moon Palace to be safe. It was quite an influential statement!

The latter part of the dinner was full of awkwardness and complexity.

After the dinner, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian returned to their room with heavy hearts. They kept sighing.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han were too powerful...

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian could see the dense blood mist in the air of the Cold Moon Palace in the future.

Ye Nantian, the host, could do nothing about it either. He only

made a long sigh.

Xiao Monarch's death was an unsolvable problem.

At the very least, if not for Xiao Monarch's friend Jun Yinglian, Ye Nantian, his wife, and his son would have died for a long time!

He didn't need to take revenge for Xiao Monarch though. However, if anybody told him to stand on Xiao Monarch's enemy's side, he would never be able to do it!

In fact, Ye Nantian didn't know all about the truth back in the years. The reason why they could survive the hunt, and the reason why Moon Queen would make a promise to give Ye Nantian a chance, was that Xiao Monarch and Jun Yinglian had gone together to Qiong-Hua Palace and asked the Moon Queen to spare them!

...

"Yue Han!" In the room, Yue Shuang strictly stared at Yue Han. "What's wrong with you! How could you be so muddleheaded?"

Yue Han's lips were twisted. She kept her head low and stood straight up like a kid who had done something wrong, standing there to be scolded.

"Come on, it's fine... She did make it up in the end, didn't she?" Ye Xiao didn't want the little sister to feel bad. "It doesn't need to be so harsh. She didn't mean it anyway. Do you have to scold her like this..."

"Humph!" Yue Shuang didn't stop. "The girl never watches her mouth. She won't remember the lesson if she doesn't feel the pain of it!"

"I will make the decision. Let's just get this over." Ye Xiao was helpless since Yue Shuang didn't give in even a bit. He decided to forcibly end the matter soon.

"Brother, don't blame sister. It was my fault..." Yue Han's eyes

were twinkling with tears.

"You know it, you admit it, and you correct it! Your punishment will be to protect me well afterward." Ye Xiao rolled his eyeballs around. "It is time for you two to protect me as a return."

"Absolutely! We were going to say so!" The ladies decisively said together, "From now on, we will rather let ourselves break into pieces than let anybody hurt you a bit!"

They sounded so decisive as if they were humbly making a vow to the gods!

It was emphatic!

It was undoubtedly!

Ye Xiao could feel the determination from their words!

"Fine. Good. Go rest, you two. It will be another brand new day when you wake up." Ye Xiao said, "I can't stay with you for too long. I will come again tomorrow when I get up."

"Okay!" The ladies said yes but looked at Ye Xiao intently, unwilling to let him leave. Ye Xiao felt soft in the heart. He almost decided to stay, but then wisely left!

...

The next day, when Ye Xiao saw Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian, the two brothers looked extremely sleepy.

Their eye frames were dark.

Apparently, they had been through a sleepless night.

They were two great cultivators, who wouldn't look so bad even after ten sleepless nights, let alone only one night. However, because of the two frosty ladies, they were suffering a colossal depression all night. They just felt powerless about it.

When they saw Ye Xiao, they sighed at the same time.

Ye Xiao honestly understood how they felt.

Back in the old days, Xiao Monarch and Fierce Blade had stirred the three factions in chaos. The three factions had lost many good men in the fights. In the end, the three factions sacrificed almost over half of their force to kill the two dominant figures.

After that, Jun Yinglian, who was not much weaker than the two guys, kept harassing the three factions even till present.

Jun Yinglian hadn't finished what she started yet. However, two ladies who were much stronger than Jun Yinglian popped out to declare enmity to the three factions. Besides, there was a Shadowless Assassin... For the three factions, Han Bingxue was another hidden threat that hadn't shown up yet...

How could Han Bingxue not go seek for revenge? He was Ye Xiao's most loyal friend after all!

Once somebody stirred a wave against the three factions, Xiao Monarch and Fierce Blade's friends, the forces that had been supporting the two of them, might join together and become a horrible wave of a blast! It might end up to be a big disaster for the entire martial world!

However, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian only felt hopeless and powerless about it.

"Brother disciples, what is troubling you?" Ye Xiao asked, even though he knew the answer.

...

Chapter 1134: Let Me Handle It

"A bloodshed in the martial world is unavoidable..." Zhan Yunfei looked pale on the face.

"Those to get hit first would be Saint Sunlight Sect, Saint Starlight Sect, and Cold Moon Palace..." Zhu Jiutian added, with his head low.

"Little brother disciple, I officially warn you. Once the chaos begins, you must hide!" Zhan Yunfei sounded solemn.

"That's right!" Zhu Jiutian looked at Ye Xiao with concerns, "You must forget all others when that day comes! Just run away! Hide! Use a fake name! Keep yourself alive! When the world is back to peace, you should come out again. The safety of our sect is not the issue that a young disciple like you should be worried about. We will take care of it."

Ye Xiao was touched, but then he intentionally asked, "If we are really going to be in such a great danger, why don't we consider making an attack in advance? Who attacks first controls the situation. Brothers, you should know it better than I do!"

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian made a long sigh.

"Absolutely no!" Zhan Yunfei stayed quiet for a while and then said with a bitter smile.

"Why not? We know our sect is going to fall into a deadly crisis, yet you are telling me we can't do what it takes to stop it in advance?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

"Brother, you don't know much about the past. We three factions killed Xiao Monarch. It is the reason why Jun Yinglian and the two ladies would want to fight against us. They just want to take revenge for Xiao Monarch."

"Even though they are terribly powerful, what they are going to do will be their personal matters. They are individuals. They will

never do damage to the strong foundation of any great sects. It is alright that we just let them keep seeking revenge till the end of the day."

"But if we do it first to sweep out the threats, it will be not simply a few women taking revenge."

"Sky Ice Palace would stand out for what we do to their former Prime Master. It will be a war between the two sects. Sky Ice Palace will have a moral reason to start the war."

"They never had a reason to declare war, but if we kill their people, they will get one."

"Qiong-Hua Palace is the same."

"If we lay our hands on them, in spite of whether we can successfully kill them or not, it will tell the world that our sect attack Qiong-Hua Palace's elders... In another word, it won't be a personal matter anymore. It will become a conflict between sects!"

"If that happens, I am afraid the three factions will collapse within a short time... Not even one person of our sect will survive the war. That is why we told you to run away and hide if anything goes wrong. Even though Ye Clan is fully supported by Qiong-Hua Palace and Misty Cloud Palace, you will be the first target of all the opponents, because you are the most important disciple of Cold Moon Palace!"

Zhu Jiutian sighed. He was trying to give Ye Xiao a lesson.

"So, the best option is... to wait for the ladies' next move... Once we start it, the three factions will fail to afford the loss."

"It is a dead not!"

"It is a deadly wound either by a blunt knife, or a hammer..."

"It is such a mess at the moment." Zhan Yunfei looked troubled, "We don't even know whether we should report to the sect about the fact that the two ladies are sisters to Xiao Monarch."

Ye Xiao was shocked. He thought for a while and then smiled. "Brothers, after your nice explanation, I finally understand how messy it is... Let me see if I can give you some practical advice."

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were glad to hear it. They looked at him with hope. Zhan Yunfei said, "That's right! We have heard the story about you stirring storms in the lower realm. What an intelligent monster! Even Master Bai of House of the Chaotic Storms, a figure who is like a god, actually submitted in your clever plan. Your opinion will definitely help us out of this messy situation!"

"What? Holy hell... Who is lying about me? Since when I become an intelligent monster? Wait, how did you know about it?" Ye Xiao was angry about it. [That is definitely a humiliation to me! When I fought Master Bai, I had to play some small tricks because I was weak!]

[Wait a minute! The thing between Master Bai and I is a secret to most of the people in the Land of Han-Yang! How do these two know so much about it? It seems they are well aware of it!]

Zhan Yunfei giggled and said, "When you accompanied the two ladies to their room, Zhu Jiutian and I told your father how and why we were worried about you. Your father was helpless at first, but then he remembered something. He clapped on the chest and promised that you would definitely survive the crisis. Then he told us how you played around Master Bai, Wan, and Xiu when you were weak like an ant. He thought that you might have a solution to the current problem..."

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes and said, "Holy hell! You two were fooling me! You planned to earn my sympathy... Wait, my father doesn't know much about that story either..."

Zhu Jiutian said, "Well, your father said that he had received a letter from one of his brother, whose name should be Song Jue. He said Song Jue was coming soon to support him. Song Jue told your

father that you successfully solve the problem of Master Bai... He said you could always get through different kinds of dangers safely..."

Ye Xiao nodded. "I see. It was Uncle Song. He does know many details of what I did... I thought he would never catch up with this show since it started and ended so fast. Well, I never thought that he would do it with a letter... What an old man..."

Zhan Yunfei noticed that Ye Xiao was talking chitchat, so he got anxious. He urged, "Come on, my dear brother, let's just put the old man away for a minute. Let's focus on the main business, shall we? Don't you see how miserable we are now?"

"That's right." Zhu Jiutian said, "We are waiting for your suggestion here... Please, what should we do now?"

Ye Xiao stopped the unrelated topic since the two brothers were genuinely anxious. He took a few steps around and then loosened the frowned eyebrows. He said, "I will start with the current situation first, before what I think should be done next."

"Go ahead. Speak." The two brothers spoke at the same time.

"As the current situation shows, the two ladies don't personally hate you much. I guess you two have the same judgment as mine, don't you?"

Ye Xiao said, "Think about how they talked about their brother and expressed their love to their brother at the table. If they truly hate you two or want to do anything against you, why would they sit together with you two at the same table?"

...

Chapter 1135: Here Comes Erhuo!

"Oh, that's right! We were blind. How could we neglect such an obvious detail..." Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were enlightened. However, they were also confused. "But... Xiao Monarch is dead, who will never return from death. It is, no matter what, such a deep hatred... You said it yourself. Considering the way they talked about their brother, they must love brother deeper than even their parents... How would they just spare us?"

"Ah... This is the key to the entire problem. However, I haven't figure out anything to solve it yet." Ye Xiao frowned and pretended to be troubled.

"Brother, you must think deeper. We two are dumb. We can't see behind the scenes. We are counting on you." Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian stared at Ye Xiao with expectation.

They both knew the current situation of the Cold Moon Palace.

Cold Moon Palace was unable to survive another wave of chaos.

They were a great sect with hundreds of thousand disciples indeed, a large group of people in Qing-Yun Realm. However, only a few hundred of them were able to really fight for the sect.

The disciples who were above level five of Dao Origin Stage built the foundation of a good environment for the hundreds of thousand others to live and develop.

If these disciples were gone, not all of them, even only half of them disappeared, Cold Moon Palace would be so severely weakened that only Jun Yinglian and the two ladies could go extinct the entire great sect!

If Ye Xiao didn't join Cold Moon Palace, become the grand elders' disciple, and gave the old men his supreme dan beads to extend their lives, Cold Moon Palace would be thirty percent weaker!

However, Ye Xiao was the savior, but also the offender!

Because of Ye Xiao, the talented young disciple, Cold Moon Palace had quit the three factions.

Cold Moon Palace, Saint Sunlight Sect, and Saint Starlight Sect used to face all negative situation together. That was why they were always confident and tough.

They used to fight Xiao Monarch and Fierce Blade together. They were solid!

However, as they had just left the three factions, they had to face the new enemies. They had to fight Jun Yinglian, and the two ladies as well. The three of them together... could have tear Cold Moon Palace apart in several months!

That was such a lethal crisis!

After all, Cold Moon Palace was the weakest of the three factions. It was definitely the weakest in strategy!

"I would love to say that... things may still change..." Ye Xiao said, "At least one thing is certain... The two ladies are quite nice to me... What do you think if I go and see what they will say about this?"

Zhan Yunfei rolled his eyes up and said, "No way. You are lucky to have this name. That's all. They have done too much to show their respect to your name. They may get pissed when you try to make them talk... They may vent their anger on you..."

He had expressed his thought clearly. 'If they rage up, with their incredible power, no matter how smart you are, you won't be able to handle it.'

"I think we should seize any possible opportunity. They are two dominant figures indeed, but no matter how powerful they are, are they truly more dominant than Master Bai of House of Chaotic Storms? Wan of Clouds? Xiu of Heavens? I once convinced Master Bai, Wan and Xiu. I think I may also convince Shuang and Han." Ye Xiao spoke righteously, "At the very least, I am a member of Cold

Moon Palace too. I have to do something when my sect is going to fall into a great crisis. No matter how it will end, at least I will have tried!"

"Brother!" Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian both looked touched and sentimental. "If everybody in Cold Moon Palace were just like you, our sect would definitely conquer the world!"

"Take it easy. There will always be a way out from the end of an alley. Heavens bless kindness." Ye Xiao was decisive. "I will go have a try!"

Then he left with vigorous strides.

He walked like stepping into the execution field.

What a movie king! How brilliant his acting skill was!

In fact, he didn't directly go to the two ladies. Instead, he went to Ye Nantian. "Father, I am going to see the two ladies."

"All right. Go ahead. Just be careful when you talk. They are nice to you, but they don't have to."

"Hmm. I will go try to make them talk about something... I am after all a disciple of Cold Moon Palace..."

"Oh... About that... Hmmm... Grudge and hatred in the martial world... Xiao Xiao... You..."

"A man should do what is right and stop what is wrong, without hesitation!"

"Good! My good son indeed! I will always support you!"

Ye Nantian looked happy.

Ye Xiao walked out the door in that manly way again.

[Enough for this now. I should go to my sisters...]

[Grudge and hatred...]

[Ahem!]

[That is all to be decided by me with one word!]

[Look how I earn the credit just easily. I genuinely feel like doing it a few more times every day! It won't be boring!]

[In the right time, at the right place, talk to the right person, about the right thing! Perfection!]

[Life is like a show. We must act well! Yet a show is always from the real life, then why should I act?]

Suddenly a white shadow flashed.

Erhuo, who had been working hard for a long time under Ye Xiao's instruction, finally showed up.

The arrogant cat squatted on Ye Xiao's shoulder, looking around with its small eyes. It looked good.

"Meow..."

Erhuo meowed, to express its grudge.

"How dare you feel grudge?" Ye Xiao was annoyed, "You tell me about it. How much medicinal energy? How many treasures? You absorbed at least half! Do you think you would work that hard if it didn't bring you such a great benefit? How could you show up and tell me your grudges?"

Erhuo waved its tail. Apparently, it knew that Ye Xiao was right, so it just stopped talking.

"Look at you..." Ye Xiao was speechless, "Such a huge amount of medicine efficacy... Even a god would explode after absorbing that much... You actually didn't even grow more hairs after absorbing all those enormous materials... Unbelievable..."

Erhuo just ignored him, squatted on his shoulder, and slowly rubbed its whisker as if nothing concerned it at all.

[I have had quite a good income anyway. I have been swallowed half of the materials in the Boundless Space. I have been making dan beads for a long time, and also been eating those valuable

medicinal plants... I have broken through three levels!]

[Well, I guess I should better keep it a secret from the pimping master.]

[If he knows, he is definitely going to rip me off!]

[Meow...]

[Always be quiet when you are getting the benefit!]

...

Chapter 1136: Women Are Horrible

Erhuo slowly cleaned its whiskers, gloating, complacent, and contented.

- Knock knock knock... -

"Coming..." Yue Shuang's voice sounded, and then the door was opened.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han showed up at the door, one on the left while the other on the right.

It could be seen that the two ladies' eyes were red. Apparently, they hadn't slept well either.

"It's me." Ye Xiao smiled. He was pretending.

[I should at least act like an elder brother!]

"Ya!"

The two ladies saw who was standing outside, then their eyes froze. They ran out in surprise, "Oh hahahaha..."

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[Holy hell. Is this a proper reaction? We just saw each other yesterday. Why would you have such a reaction? I know. I know... I am handsome, elegant, imposing, gentle... You two are both big girls now. You have to be modest and restrained...]

When he opened up his arms waiting for the two beautiful girls, he was stricken by the reality...

"Oh, it is so cute..."

"Isn't it pretty..."

"Oh, it melts my heart..."

They did rush out like whirlwind but to Ye Xiao. They just directly reached their hands on Erhuo, who was on Ye Xiao's shoulder.

Erhuo was still enjoying the moment after breaking through several levels. Suddenly, it was terrified by what happened. It exclaimed, and all its hairs stood up. - Shoot! - It dashed back dozens of meters in a panic!

[Holy hell! Where do these two crazy women come from...]

[It scared me to death!]

"Catch it!"

"Over there... quick!"

The ladies wouldn't let the adorable thing get away just like that. They rushed away by Ye Xiao's side to approach Erhuo.

Ye Xiao stood at the door, with a blank head, two arms rising up high, and a full face of an awkward smile.

Well, that was the nature of him. He didn't need to act anymore. A disappointed elder brother, what a perfect role for him!

[Holy hell! Did they just ignore me, their brother?]

[Did they just pass me to chase a little cat?]

[This is...]

He couldn't believe it. He had been imagining how the two ladies would warmly greet him at the door. However, the little adorable, clean, and warm kitty was a fatal attraction to ladies!

Ye Xiao showed up at the right time, in the right place, to the right girls, but with a wrong pet. It was a pet of incredible use but sometimes made him feel only worse. It was a predictable and reasonable result though!

Erhuo jumped up and down, trying to get away from the ladies. It was so fast that there barely was anyone else in Qing-Yun Realm who could catch up with him. However, Shuang and Han were two peak Dao Origin Stage cultivators. They had enormously strong cultivation and incredibly long breath. They moved extremely fast!

Most importantly, they were perfectly connected in minds. Together, they had been getting closer and closer to Erhuo. Erhuo still could get out of their reach, but this was quite a suffering moment for it.

For Erhuo, the worst thing about this was not being hunted by two ladies. The real problem was that the two ladies seemed to be important to its master. Therefore, Erhuo didn't dare to attack the ladies like it had done to Han Bingxue on the other day...

That would only make things worse.

It couldn't attack. It only dodged. Nothing could be rooted forever under a constant push. Erhuo had smaller and smaller space to move. The ladies were so close to catching it.

"Meow meow meowww meeeaa..." Erhuo was asking for help. It started to look at Ye Xiao with an earnest request for help.

Ye Xiao held the arms on the chest and said, "Why run? They just want to lay with you. It's not like they are going to rip you off and stew you. Can't you stop being so hokey?"

"Meeaaa..." Erhuo made a long shout. 'Oh, do I look hokey to you now? I don't want to be played! Do you want to be played...'

"Come on, just let them play. It won't hurt, will it?" Ye Xiao showed a dark face to it, "Stop running. You are struggling for nothing. It is done..."

Erhuo felt sad and angry at the same time. Then it slowed down the pace.

- Shoot! - Yue Shuang made a lightning dash to catch Erhuo and hold it in the arms. She gasped and said, "This cat can really run fast..."

Yue Han nodded to agree.

The ladies were too obsessed in the chasing game. They were lost in the determination of catching it. Now as they finally caught it,

they were not only happy but astonished about it. [This cat is incredible. How can it run that fast? If we are not chasing it inside the yard, we might not be able to narrow down the area step by step. We would pretty likely fail if we were chasing it in a broader space...]

They didn't know that Erhuo had slowed down a bit under Ye Xiao's instruction. Ye Xiao didn't allow Erhuo to leave the yard, and otherwise, Erhuo would have gone away for a long time...

The two ladies would never be fast to catch up with Erhuo, even if they were ten times faster than they were now!

Yue Shuang held Erhuo like it was some rare treasure. She just didn't want to put it down. "Yue Han, look! What a beautiful cat! How adorable! It is only the size of my hand... Oh! The furs... So soft and so thick... Look at its paws... So cute! The eyes... and..."

"Let me hold it for a second! Give it to me..." Yue Han wanted to snatch it.

Yue Shuang turned around and said, "Just wait! I haven't held it enough yet..."

Erhuo seemed to be pretty upset being held by the ladies. The ladies kept reaching their hands to it, and Erhuo was exclaiming and staring at Ye Xiao...

Ye Xiao completely ignored it. Instead, he approached and spoke to the ladies with a big smile, "What a damn good cat, right?"

"Not just a good cat! An excellent cat!" Yue Shuang didn't look up. She kept touching Erhuo's head softly and said, "How adorable!"

"Just hold it for a longer time if you like..." Ye Xiao totally ignored Erhuo's sad eyes. He generously said, "Just don't get it killed. That's all I ask."

"Shut up. We won't..." Yue Shang and Yue Han were overjoyed. They held Erhuo in the arms and didn't seem like putting it down.

Erhuo closed its eyes with desperation. The last words it said were, "I hate you, master..."

Ye Xiao just lied down. He looked quite satisfied, half closing his eyes, looking at the two ladies play.

Erhuo couldn't bear the torture anymore. It rushed out from between Yue Shuang's arms rapidly and got into Boundless Space... He didn't care anymore...

When it returned to Boundless Space, which meant it was safe, it was still trembling.

[Women are horrible...]

[They almost counted every single hair on my skin... What kind of creepy creatures are they... That was so sick...]

[I will keep myself far away from women... especially these around Master... Women around him literally have no limitation on being sick...]

...

Chapter 1137: Golden Hawk Arrived

As Erhuo suddenly disappeared, the two ladies were undoubtedly unreconciled. They searched around and couldn't find Erhuo, so they started to question Ye Xiao fiercely and overwhelmingly. It seemed they wouldn't just let it go unless they got a satisfactory explanation from Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao shrugged his shoulders. "How do I know where the cat goes... It must have fled away... You two can see how fast it is... It took you a long time to catch it. How am I able to catch up with it... It stays around me all the time. I don't get to approach it myself!"

The two ladies thought that what Ye Xiao said was reasonable, but they still stared at him with suspicion in the eyes. Their adorable eyes nearly made Ye Xiao surrender immediately. He hurriedly operated East-rising Purple Qi to suppress down the idea of selling Erhuo out...

When the two ladies were hounding Ye Xiao, asking for Erhuo...

His savior arrived!

"Chirp, chirp..." A strange and unique sound howled in the sky. A piece of golden light shined over them!

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[Golden Hawk?]

[It's it!]

[How come it came out so soon?]

The two ladies were shocked too when they saw the splendid golden light shining in the sky. [What is it that is making such a big sound?]

Ye Xiao quickly made a decision and walked out of the room without hesitation.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han followed him out. That noise was too

loud. They couldn't let Ye Xiao act alone, because they cared about Ye Xiao's safety. As they looked up at the sky, they saw a giant golden hawk hovering round and round in the air, with the splendid golden light. It seemed it was searching for something.

The hawk's feathers were all golden. Under the sunlight, it looked like a hawk that was made of gold. Thousands of beams of blinding golden lights shot away in all directions!

The hawk was literally huge!

The two wings became dozens of meters long when it spread them!

"What a giant hawk!"

"What a nice hawk!"

"What a marvelous hawk!"

"What a beautiful hawk!"

The ladies were praising.

"Why is it hovering in the sky? It doesn't seem to leave." Yue Shuang frowned and started to imagine, "What if it comes down to play with us... That would be great."

Yue Han looked yearning to it, "That's right... What if it does..."

Apparently, they didn't realize how dangerous the hawk was. Actually, maybe the two ladies could defeat all living beings when they fought side by side, but it was a maybe. The hawk was exactly something they couldn't defeat!

The hawk could survive the full power attacks of Wu Fa, the most dominant cultivator in the realm! It must be powerful too!

As Yue Han just talking, the beautiful hawk spread the wings and howled. Its voice shocked the world, but it was full of joy.

As it withdrew its wings, it started to shoot over to the three people like a golden arrow!

The golden light that had been splashing in the sky gathered into a narrow beam of golden light!

Yue Shuang and Yue Han nearly exclaimed aloud!

The golden hawk was exactly shooting toward the ladies.

[Is it going to attack us?]

They were looking forward to the hawk's arrival at the beginning. However, they were such powerful cultivators. They could see how mighty the hawk was just by watching it dive. They didn't dare to hesitate, so they gathered the energy in their bodies immediately. [It is indeed a lovely hawk, but... I can't let it hurt us for no reason...]

[Brother is beside us...]

[It is not much a problem if it hit us, but we can't let it hurt brother...]

However, at this moment, Ye Xiao stood beside the two ladies, actually showing a warm smile from the bottom of his heart. He suddenly stepped forward and reached out his right arm.

The next moment, the beautiful golden hawk, which seemed to carry all the thunderbolts of the heavens and glory of the almighty sun, suddenly slowed down!

It suddenly stopped after crossing the sky like a shooting star!

It exactly stopped on Ye Xiao's arm.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han watched it and couldn't believe what they had just seen. The golden hawk's huge body actually stopped on Ye Xiao's right arm. Its huge claws which were sharp enough to tear a tiger apart were gently holding Ye Xiao's arm.

It looked like the hawk was weightless.

Ye Xiao gave the hawk a warm smile, and the hawk, tilting its head, stared at Ye Xiao with softness and warmth in the eyes. It cooed and then touched Ye Xiao's cheek with its head...

That was intimate!

Ye Xiao laughed and wrapped the hawk's neck. He rejoicingly said, "Hawky! You are here!"

The golden hawk proudly cooed.

After a while, two strident voices exclaimed almost at the same time!

"Ahhhh..." The two ladies who watched the entire process felt like going mad.

[Such a beautiful, elegant, strong, potent, perfect, flawless... golden hawk actually... belongs to brother?]

[It is brother's pet?]

[Another pet?]

[This is... This is too much of a surprise!]

The ladies didn't even spend one second on thinking about it before they rushed over.

The golden hawk tilted its head, staring at the women with confusion. It waved its head and cooed.

"They are my younger sisters... Hawky. You are my brother, and they are my sisters. We are a family. Do you understand?" Ye Xiao explained.

Hawky rolled its eyes. It seemed it was thinking about it. After a while, it nodded slightly, lowered its wings to tap Yue Shuang and Yue Han gently.

The ladies were thrilled!

That cat was incredibly adorable, but they figured it was unable to understand human words. They thought it couldn't feel their love, and that was why it would flee away!

Erhuo might really be pissed about that though. [Pah! I do understand human language! Did you call that love? You were

torturing me! It's torture! Torture! Torture!]

The ladies were shocked. [The hawk understands human language?]

"Ah... My god..."

They rushed forward to hug the hawk. "Ahhhhh... I love it! What a surprise..."

Ye Xiao stepped backward, and the hawk stood on the floor. It seemed to be confused, not knowing what to do, staring at the women. It had no idea why they had to jump, run, and laugh like that. It shook its head slightly to show confusion.

"They can play with you in the coming days. They have a lot of tasty food, by the way." Ye Xiao explained.

He was trying to make things better and more convenient for him, and it would also be pleasant to the hawk.

"Coo?" The hawk was surprised. "Coo!"

...

Chapter 1138: Lian Lian Arrived!

What happened next was certain...

Two girls and a hawk enjoyed the pleasant moment. Hawky must have been through too long of loneliness. Suddenly, somebody would love to play with it. That made it feel delightful. The two ladies were definitely even more excited...

Especially...

"You can let Hawky take you to the sky... Have a flight tour or something..." Ye Xiao said it on purpose.

And then he fed the hawk a dan bead.

The excellent bird was obedient as it ate the dan bead. It got down on the floor and showed the two ladies, [Come on! Let me take you to fly!]

"Waaaahhooo..." Yue Shuang and Yue Han were so excited that they nearly choked.

It was never anything special for cultivators like them to fly in the sky. However, it was entirely a different experience to ride a golden hawk in the sky!

It was different! It was different! It was different!

Important words should be repeated three times!

The two ladies didn't hesitate to get on the hawk's back.

As the hawk howled, it swung the wings and slowly flew up. As it moved, the ladies screamed within excitement. The hawk eventually fully spread its wings, and the two ladies had gotten used to riding on it...

The hawk shot to the sky like a bolt of lightning...

In the rim of the sky, a golden hawk was fleeting with all the beautiful lights and disposition. It was elegant like a king

descending to the moral world!

On the back of the golden hawk, there were two beautiful ladies, wearing white clothes, with the sleeves flicking the air, like two fairies descending from heavens...

The incredible scene immediately preoccupied everybody who saw it!

Beautiful!

How beautiful!

Extremely beautiful!

It was the ladies' first time riding on a golden hawk to soar in the sky. All they felt was excitement. They were so excited that they nearly lost breath. The hawk flew incredibly fast.

It only took them one second to fly over a thousand miles!

The wind heavily blew their faces. The clouds seemed like just by their side. They felt refreshed, and their voices nearly turned gravelly because they kept shouting excitedly...

They were truly powerful cultivators so they could endure the pressure during the fleeting flight. The air stream had been causing significant pressure on them because they were moving forward too fast. If Ye Xiao were riding the hawk at the moment, even though he was already in Dao Origin Stage, he couldn't endure it without operating East-rising Purple Qi in full power!

On the floor, Ye Xiao was watching them fly in along the rim of the sky with a favorite smile. He suddenly felt his heart full of happiness and satisfaction.

The flight lasted for an hour.

When the two ladies got off the hawk's back, their cheeks were red. They felt like just awakening from a sweet dream. They kept staying around the hawk, showing concerns to it, and wiping the feathers of it.

How meticulous they were!

The hawk knew it should be grateful, so it touched the ladies hairs with its beak from time to time, and then stood straight up again, trying to show the most imposing side of it.

Ye Xiao grinned.

[The Golden Hawk is apparently different from Erhuo. Erhuo looked nice but turns out not. I am the only person it will get close to. In fact, maybe it just looks down upon everybody else, as if it is the only intelligent life form and all the others are fools.]

[The hawk is completely opposite to it. It doesn't look nice at first sight, but it is always easy to get along well with it...]

[Only one condition though... The hawk only listens to me. As long as I introduce somebody to it, it will be nice to the person...]

[For the hawk, it is always a pleasure to have somebody to play with him! It won't disagree!]

[Sometimes... when it got good food to eat...]

To play with the golden hawk, one should be strong enough. Ye Xiao was not quite qualified. People below the middle levels of Dao Origin Stage would not be able to fly in the sky and bear the pressure from the air stream with the hawk!

If somebody wasn't strong enough and forcibly joined the hawk in the flight, he or she might get killed...

However, those above the required levels would have a great time with the hawk, just like the two ladies.

The hawk had been painfully trained by Ye Xiao when it last met Ye Xiao. In the end, it had moved its own head toward Ye Xiao for a touch. Ye Xiao even pretended to be too distinguished to touch its head...

The hawk had done a difficult job to fawn on Ye Xiao, and eventually made Ye Xiao agree to touch it...

That was such a long-lasting unremovable effect deep in the hawk's heart.

It didn't want Ye Xiao to do that again because it did anything wrong...

That would kill it...

It was enough to be played like that once! Twice would break it down!

That was why the hawk was perfectly obedient to Ye Xiao and took good care of his two sisters too. It just wanted to eat something good...

While it was playing with the ladies, it was trying to serve them at the beginning. However, then it started to enjoy that flight itself... It suddenly realized that it was kind of fun.

All in all, Hawky was definitely much more obedient than Erhuo.

For the coming period of time, the Town of Ye was under a full sky of splendid twinkling lights.

The golden lights shined in the sky. Something howled fast over, here and there. A mass of golden light was moving fast like a bolt of lightning!

When everybody had gotten used to the bright lights moving in the sky, they finally realized it was a golden hawk, and noticed that there were two beautiful girls on its back.

They realized it and felt impressed by it.

[Dominant indeed, the two ladies of Qiong-Hua Palace. They have not only great power and strength but also an incredibly strong pet!]

[We never understand what the superior cultivators would do!]

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were anxious about it...

That pet seemed to be invincible in the world...

They believed that the two ladies were specially targeting Cold Moon Palace, which was specialized in spiritual beast training. In another word, Qiong-Hua Palace seemed to be more horrible for Cold Moon Palace!

The golden hawk would undoubtedly overwhelm the spiritual beasts in Cold Moon Palace. With the hawk, they could at least get away from the battle anytime they wanted, no matter how many people were surrounding them! Nobody could stop them from escaping from the sky. That hawk was unbelievably fast... Even top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators couldn't catch up with it!

It was incomparable!

Cold Moon Palace could do no more than only defending themselves. The ladies came and left as they wanted. It would be great luck if the Cold Moon Palace people could still defend themselves from it...

...

From a distance, a white shadow was moving over like a casual piece of cloud.

She saw the fleeting golden hawk in the sky from far away.

"Why would the golden hawk be around this place?" Jun Yinglian looked surprised, "There are people on the hawk's back... Oh? Shuang and Han of Qiong-Hua Palace!"

"The two ladies are here. Doesn't it mean..." Her face turned dark. She hurriedly accelerated!

She became a beam of white light from a piece of floating cloud!

She arrived at the Town of Ye within a few seconds!

Ye Xiao was looking at the hawk and the ladies in the rim of the sky. Suddenly, his heart beat fast. It felt like anything was going to happen... Something that would leave a significant effect on his life...

He frowned.

[What in this small town is going to happen that can literally leave an effect on my life?]

He soon got the answer when he heard a clear and soft voice speaking.

As the voice got into his ears, his face turned dark!

"Is it still the Ye Clan who rules this place? Jun Yinglian, of Sky Ice Palace, are here to visit the current Chief of Ye Clan. Please send him the message."

The voice was soft, gentle, and warm. However, behind it, it was a cold and indifferent personality. The appearance of a thin, warm, gorgeous beauty would show up in one's mind when her proud, frosty, and distant voice got into one's ears!

Ye Xiao was shocked.

He turned pale on the face abruptly.

[Jun Yinglian!]

[Lian Lian!]

[It is her!]

...

Chapter 1139: Nantian's Trouble

The two ladies were having fun in the sky, so they loosened their alert. They didn't notice a fierce mass of power was approaching.

Ye Xiao rushed to the door like a bolt of lightning.

He wasn't really a teenager anymore, but he still couldn't suppress the impulse in his heart at this moment!

Jun Yinglian quietly arrived and stood outside the door of Ye Clan's house.

She was like a lotus, clean and beautiful.

The Town of Ye fell into absolute silence again.

Lots of things had happened wave after wave, pushing people's nerves up high. First Ye Clan had a new chief, who was the old-time talented young heir, recently returned to seize power. Then his son, Ye Xiao swept all the youngsters from other sects in the competition for Regeneration Ink Lotus. At the end of the arena, Qiong-Hua Palace sent their current Saintess to denounce Ye Clan.

When Ye Clan was in danger, Misty Cloud Palace and Cold Moon Palace showed up to show full support to Ye Clan. Saintess of Qiong-Hua Palace left with disgrace. When the three parties established the alliance, Qiong-Hua Palace's most significant force, Shuang and Han, arrived, in order to make the denouncement.

When things seemed unchangeable, Ye Xiao, the young lord of Ye Clan made a miracle again. What saved Ye Clan was actually the young lord's name, which was the same with the two ladies' brother. All the messes were resolved. Ye Clan became much more dominant in the area after all kinds of dangers. That literally strengthened everybody's nerves!

However, when everything seemed to be back to normal, another world-shocking figure arrived! Jun Yinglian of Sky Ice Palace!

People were shocked again.

Although Jun Yinglian was stronger than either of the two ladies, she could never defeat the two of them together. However, Yue Shuang and Yue Han were more of the names in the legends that were told by some superior cultivators. For ordinary people, Jun Yinglian was more familiar!

Who was Jun Yinglian? She used to be the Prime Master of Sky Ice Palace. She was the fiancée of the departed legendary hero, Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch. She had been busy taking revenge for Xiao Monarch, by killing disciples of the three factions everywhere. People in the three factions were frightened by her name... They died when they met her!

She had become another Lady Devil because of her sanguinary slaughters, who was getting close to Xuan Bing, the recognized World's First Lady Devil!

Many people felt unable to breathe and had to hold their chest to calm down because they heard the new Lady Devil had arrived!

It was full of chaos and shocks living in Town of Ye. People couldn't handle the strikes to their weak hearts!

Such a well known top-class cultivator arrived at Ye Clan. Was she here as a friend or an enemy?

Nobody could have known what would happen to the weak and small Ye Clan.

People wondered if all the dominant powers would gather in this small town!

Were all the dominant figures going to gather in this place?

Misty Cloud Palace, Cold Moon Palace, Qiong-Hua Palace, and now Sky Ice Palace!

Jun Yinglian, the most powerful one among those who had shown up!

Ye Nantian and Zhan Yunfei were having chitchat when they heard the voice and got shocked.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were stunned.

Their faces turned pale all of a sudden.

They were just terrified. Not that they were tremulous, they just couldn't help it!

He shouldn't speak of the devil.

He was worried about what might be caused in his sect by the three women, and suddenly all the three ladies were in the same place!

Yue Huang, Yue Han, and Jun Yinglian...

Three deadly enemies of the three factions!

After what Ye Xiao said earlier, he felt less threatened by the two ladies indeed, but what about Jun Yinglian? She had apparently been killing people of the three factions. No matter who in the three factions she met, she killed them!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian heard that she had come to Ye Clan, and they felt like sitting on thorns. [Are the three women promissory to be here together?]

[It is obvious what they are here to talk about!]

What worried them most was that the two ladies knew they were here, although Jun Yinglian didn't. They were anxious about whether the three ladies would kill the two of them as a start!

If the two guys had to fight those three female cultivators, it would be no possible escape!

"Please relax. You are our honorable guests in Ye Clan. As long as there are still Ye Clan people alive, nobody is allowed to hurt you in our place. Let me go out and check the situation." Ye Nantian understood what Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian felt. He generously promised to protect them.

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian had a complicated expression on the face. They just nodded to show gratitude.

The two top-class figures, level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators, needed the protection from a small character who had just reached Dao Origin Stage. That was awkward!

Ye Nantian walked out of the room. He was having a knotty feeling in the heart. [Unnoticeably, Ye Clan has become the center of the biggest chaos in Qing-Yun Realm.]

[The reason for all that happened in the chaos is Xiao Monarch's death!]

[Cold Moon Palace is substantially related to us since my son is their important inheritor. Qiong-Hua Palace is undoubtedly associated with us because of me. Now, Jun Yinglian is here... I owe her a great debt...]

He walked out fast and felt muddled in the head.

If a fight was going to be started, he honestly didn't know which side to choose...

- Shoot! -

It seemed somebody flew out beside him.

He looked carefully and found that it was Ye Xiao fleeing out the door.

"That is fast..." Ye Nantian felt relaxed. If there was only person in Ye Clan that he would always feel trustful, it must be Ye Xiao.

After all, Ye Xiao had solved many problems recently!

Since he had run out in advance, Ye Nantian decided to slow down a bit.

He was lost in thought.

[What if... the three ladies started to fight against Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian in Ye Clan...]

[What should I do?]

[What should Ye Clan do?]

[Should we really risk our lives to protect Zhan and Zhu?]

Considering the moral responsibility of Ye Clan, they should protect Zhan and Zhu for sure. They should even put the future of the clan to protect them. However, it was Jun Yinglian on the opposite side. If Jun Yinglian hadn't helped Ye Nantian, he would have been dead with his wife for a long time. He didn't help her to take revenge for Xiao Monarch but instead thinking about helping her enemies. He started to wonder what to do to fulfill his moral responsibility!

However, if he didn't protect Zhan and Zhu, it would still make him a despicable person. The two guys had been supporting Ye Clan since they showed up. They cared for his son, their brother disciple, with sincerity. If he didn't return the favor but abandoned them instead, how was that moral?

...

Chapter 1140: Jun Yinglian Brought A Message

No matter which side Ye Nantian chose, he would betray the other...

He kept thinking about it, yet couldn't think of a proper way. The only thing he could do was to make a sigh.

To fulfill the responsibility for one side, yet violate the other... What a damn twister!

...

Ye Xiao rushed to the door like a whirlwind. He saw the woman that he hadn't seen for a long time.

She was wearing white clothes, just like she used to wear. She was tall, standing straight, frosty, and clean. There was a small white flower on her hairs.

She was vigorously standing right outside the door of Ye Clan, but it was more like she didn't belong to the moral world!

It seemed nothing in this stodgy world had anything to do with her.

Her eyes looked loosened and indifferent as if there was nothing in the world that could lit up her eyes again.

That white flower... was a sign of her in mourning!

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[Jun Yinglian!]

[Lian Lian!]

[You look well! You are right here!]

At this moment, he felt like all the oceans were waving in his heart. He looked at the lady and suddenly forgot what to say to

her.

Jun Yinglian blandly looked at Ye Xiao and frowned.

[What is wrong with this Ye Clan people?]

[I have told them who I am. Their chief doesn't come to greet, but at least they should send an elder! How could they just send a kid to me? That is arrogant!]

[You don't want to show me enough respect. Fine. I am here to deliver a message after all. I don't want to do anything related to Ye Clan people. But that kid... He stared at me just like that... It is rude. He needs some lessons of manner.]

[How can he stare at a lady like that?]

[That is...]

She frowned and blandly said, "Where is your chief?"

She wasn't swellheaded. She was the former Prime Master of Sky Ice Palace, also a peak level Dao Origin Stage cultivator. She was a person that Ye Clan people weren't even qualified to look at. The way she talked was showing enough respect to the clan already!

If Ye Shuxin were still the chief, he would definitely be shocked, flattered, scared, and blank!

However, Ye Xiao didn't seem to make any response, as if he didn't hear her.

Ye Xiao's mind was occupied with the words he said to Jun Yinglian.

[I regret that I let you be solitary. If there is a next life, I promise I will accompany you to travel the world.]

It was the first time they finally looked into each other's eyes.

[Lian Lian...]

[Do you know how regretful I am?]

[Do you know how much I think I was an idiot and a prick? Why

would I let go of your hand? I was such an animal!]

[Do you know... that my longing for you has soured my heart?]

He felt his throat was choked. He couldn't say a word.

Jun Yinglian's eyes were turning distant.

The Ye Clan Chief didn't show up for her, but allowed a young man to stare at her like that!

All women would be mad and felt humiliated when they were stared rudely by a man.

This woman here was Jun Yinglian, a dominant cultivator of the world!

At this moment, Ye Nantian finally walked out slowly, "Fairy Jun, I am Ye Nantian, Chief of Ye Clan. I am late. Please accept my apology. It has been a long time."

Jun Yinglian nodded and blandly said, "It is quite a long time. Things are quite different now. Who is this guy?"

She sounded indifferent, but apparently was denouncing Ye Xiao's impolite behavior!

Ye Nantian smiled and said, "This is my son, Ye Xiao. The last time we met, he wasn't born into the world yet. Speaking of my son, you have done us a great favor in keeping this son of ours. You gave him his name... He has always been admiring to you..."

What an experienced man!

He realized his son had done something wrong just by one sight, so he tried to start a different topic.

In fact, he was anxious. [Holy hell. Why is he staring at Fairy Jun in the same way as I stared at his mother back in the old days... Is he falling in love with her?]

[That would be totally f*cked up...]

[Jun Yinglian has a beautiful face... It is reasonable that he likes

her. But... their ages, backgrounds, cultivation... That is a huge gap!]

[He is never going to reach her!]

[Moreover, everybody in Qing-Yun Realm knew that Jun Yinglian only loves Xiao Monarch. Even though Xiao Monarch is dead, she still claimed to be a widow because of him. She is now going on an operation to take revenge for him!]

[My son is Ye Xiao, but not that Ye Xiao. If she knows his thought, she will definitely kill him without hesitation... That would be a tragedy...]

In fact, Ye Nantian didn't want Ye Xiao to go after Jun Yinglian. Jun Yinglian had saved Ye Nantian and his wife, so she also saved Ye Xiao too. She even told them to name the kid Ye Xiao, so that the name of Xiao Monarch might protect him in some way. Now that Xiao Monarch was dead, and if Ye Nantian's son lay his greedy hand on his savior, then his son must be a nasty monster!

Ye Nantian made up his mind that he would force his son to give up the idea. His son could never do such an inhuman thing!

Well, he had no idea that his son had done that 'inhuman thing' a long time before. However, it wasn't quite as filthy as it looked like when he did it!

Jun Yinglian heard that the young man was Ye Nantian's son, so she frowned and suppressed the anger in her heart. She blandly said, "I went to Qiong-Hua Palace, and saw Yue Gongxue."

Ye Nantian was thrilled. Hurriedly he asked, "How is she?"

Jun Yinglian took a deep breath and said, "She... She is not so good... She asked me to deliver a message to her son."

Then she stopped.

She turned to Ye Xiao and looked at him with complex thoughts in her mind.

Ye Xiao murmured, "What is it?"

Jun Yinglian stayed quiet for a while and then said, "Your mother says... that she only wants you to live well... She misses you. She doesn't have anything valuable, so there is nothing she can give you... The world is dangerous, and you must take good care of yourself. Be good. She is fine in the palace. She gets everything she needs. She doesn't want you to worry about her..."

Jun Yinglian was retelling it, so she sounded bland and cold.

However, Ye Nantian and Ye Xiao had heard lots of emotions from those words!

It was the sincere hope of a mother!

And the struggle of her!

...

Chapter 1141: Chase!

Of course, Yue Gongxue wanted to see her son as soon as possible, wanted to be reunited with her family, but she didn't want her son to be in danger or to do anything stupid...

Instead of putting her son to danger, she would rather lie to him by saying she was fine.

That was so sad...

What a great mother!

Ye Nantian made a long sigh. He looked painful.

Ye Xiao was sullen too.

"This is why I came. Since the message is delivered, I guess I should leave now." Jun Yinglian blandly said, and she turned around and walked away.

"Why not come in and have some hot tea, since you are already at the door of Ye Clan?" Ye Nantian was surprised, "I am grateful that you have traveled such a long way to bring the message. Please, come in. Take a good rest. Give me a chance to express my gratitude!"

"No need." Jun Yinglian felt strange about something in this place. She just felt annoyed and anxious. She blandly said, "This is going to be the last time we meet. No need to bother."

- Shoot! - Then the slim lady had already dashed out over a hundred meters.

After another dash, she was gone.

She came fast but left even faster.

For Jun Yinglian, neither Ye Nantian nor Ye Xiao was a person she would make friends with. Ye Nantian was late in coming out to greet her when she had been waiting for a long time. Ye Xiao actually kept staring at her with greediness in his eyes. He

appeared as just a stupid young lord who was poorly educated. How would she accept such two people as her friends? She felt disgraced even to stay there for a few seconds longer!

Actually, she started to think that she should not have come to this place in the first place!

Things happened in coincidences. Coincidences made the world!

Ye Nantian sighed. "Master Jun is an accommodating person. She had come a long way here, yet..."

When he turned around to look at Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao was gone.

Ye Xiao was in the yard.

As he shouted, the golden hawk got down fast. Yue Shuang and Yue Han were surprised. They looked at Ye Xiao and asked, "What's wrong?"

"I need Hawky. It's urgent!"

"You two stay in the room. Don't go anywhere. Stay out of troubles."

He didn't have time to explain everything and just jumped up on Hawky's back. The hawk flew up like a bolt of lightning.

- Shoot! -

It left a line of phantoms in the air and disappeared with Ye Xiao right away!

The hawk was way faster now!

Yue Shuang and Yue Han looked at each other, twisted their mouths, made a sigh, stamped, and said, "Annoying! What is that urgent! He didn't even tell us about it..."

"No, he didn't..." Yue Han rolled her eyes up.

"He is not going to steal again, is he? To celebrate our return?" Yue Shuang started to imagine.

"Well... I don't think so." Yue Han bit her fingernail and said, "We

are living well now... We don't need to steal anything. He stole things because there were no other options. It won't be a good way to celebrate the reunion by stealing something, will it..."

Yue Shuang thought for a while and nodded, "You are right."

"Then what is he going to do?" The two ladies squatted at the doorstep held their chins and started to imagine.

...

Ye Xiao was anxious. He kept urging the hawk to accelerate.

He knew how fast and powerful Jun Yinglian was. If he didn't speed up, he might lose her trace, no matter how fast Hawky was.

Jun Yinglian was annoyed. She kept moving at full speed, in a beam of white light shooting as fast as she came.

While she was flying, she started to calm down and throw what happened in Y Clan behind her mind. She had let it go. Afterward, she was going to do the last thing in her life!

She looked indifferent, blank, and emotionless.

[Ahead of me, it is the gate to death!]

[I am going to take revenge for you!]

[No matter I will succeed or not, I am going to be with you!]

[This time, you are not leaving me again!]

She was flying like a bolt of lightning. After such a short time, she already could see the mist on the peak of the Mountain of All Medicines!

Jun Yinglian made a shout and became even faster.

At this moment, a sound of a hawk abruptly howled behind her! It was shaking the sky!

It seemed all the clouds were fading away in the shock of the howl.

Jun Yinglian looked back and saw a shining golden hawk shooting after her from the rim of the sky!

The hawk was so fast that she couldn't think of a word to describe it. It was far behind her when she heard its sound, but as she slowed down a bit, it had already flown over her head!

"How fast!" Jun Yinglian blandly praised and then continued her own journey.

No matter how impressive it was, she wouldn't bother to care about it anymore. Nothing could genuinely move her heart at the moment!

She was still moving fast in the air, but the hawk actually stopped right beyond her.

The next moment, it was rushing down!

It was rushing down toward her!

Before she had time to feel surprised, she had seen... there was a man riding on the back of the beautiful golden hawk!

The airstreams blew up the clothes of the man. His hair and sleeves flicked the air. His eyes kept staring at her as if they were unable to move away.

[It's Ye Nantian's son!] Jun Yinglian recognized him. She was confused but then felt annoyed again. [Why would he chase after me? He just wants to come close to me! He kept shamelessly staring at me back there, but his father saved his ass. Now, he is doing something too much, chasing after me! Who does he think he is?]

As she had the thought, she disdained this young lord of Ye Clan even more. [I have saved the lives of the three of you. If Xiao and I didn't go talk to Qiong-Hua Palace, your family would never have a chance to reunite. Look at you now, showing your unacceptable ambition on your savior! Bastard! You disgraced the name Ye Xiao!]

The hawk kept rushing down fast and fiercely. However, Ye Xiao's eyes didn't move away from Jun Yinglian for even one second.

Jun Yinglian could clearly feel that there was a complicated emotion in his eyes.

Suddenly, her heart shook because of it!

...

Chapter 1142: Ruthless Heaven's Will; Hopeful Mundane World!

Jun Yinglian was getting angrier and angrier as she thought deeply about it, but then the anger vanished all of a sudden... However, she was yet to calm down!

In the young man's eyes, she saw tenderness, love, guilt, affection, pain, sorrow, happiness...

Almost all emotions could be found in those deep eyes.

They were a pair of determined eyes!

She was shocked, then she abruptly stopped rushing forward.

- Hooo! -

Meanwhile, the hawk landed about ten meters ahead of her like an arrow. It cooed and swung its wings. It seemed it was gloating that it could catch up with Jun Yinglian, a dominant cultivator in the world.

Ye Xiao slowly got off the hawk.

He gently tapped Hawky's head.

The hawk nodded and flew up to the sky again after making a few sounds...

[You don't need me to stay. Okay. There is a vast mountain over there. I should go and check if there is anything valuable...]

...

Ye Xiao stood in front of Jun Yinglian. Suddenly, he was filled with all kinds of emotions. He felt like it had been forever since they last met each other. His lips started to quiver.

Jun Yinglian frowned and asked him, "Are you Young Lord Ye? What do you want? Is anything wrong that you have to chase after me in a hurry? Didn't I make everything clear back there?"

Although she was not angry with him now, she didn't want to mention the name Ye Xiao, which was exactly the same name as Xiao Monarch. She only called him Young Lord Ye or referred to him as Ye Nantian's son.

For Jun Yinglian, the name Ye Xiao only belonged to one person!

Since Xiao Monarch was no longer alive, the name should disappear too!

No one deserved the same name as him!

...

"There is indeed something that I need to talk to you, Fairy." Ye Xiao took a deep breath to calm himself down.

"Go ahead then," Jun Yinglian spoke indifferently. As she spoke coldly, it sounded like she was driving everybody away.

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and said, "Lian... Fairy Jun, I wonder if you have ever heard of a poem before."

Jun Yinglian didn't respond. She just waited for Ye Xiao to go on talking. She looked blank and indifferent. It seemed she was not interested in this conversation at all.

Ye Xiao continued, "It is a poem..."

"Ruthless heaven's will promises no flat and smooth life path; In this hopeful mundane world, I would like to be lost in my own madness. I regret that I let you be solitary; If there is a next life, I promise I will accompany you to travel the world."

Ye Xiao raised his head and stared at Jun Yinglian. His voice was shaking. "Fairy Jun, have you heard of this poem?"

Heard of it? She actually knew it with all her heart!

When Ye Xiao started to say the first line, Jun Yinglian began to shake. She raised up her head and stared at Ye Xiao's face. When he finished, her eyes were already red and full of tears.

She was shaking like a delicate flower, but that was going to wither in the rainstorm at any second. Her lips became pale as tears shined in her eyes. "Who are you?"

"Who am I?" Ye Xiao bitterly smiled and said, "Fairy Jun, how many people do you think know the poem?"

Jun Yinglian was shaking while biting her lips—she didn't utter a single word.

Many people knew about the latter part of the poem. She had hung a picture with the two lines on it on the wall of her room. She used to read it every day.

A lot of people in Sky Ice Palace had seen it, including her sister disciples, maids, friends like Bing Xinyue...

They all knew the latter two lines.

However, there were only two people who knew the first part!

One was Jun Yinglian herself, while the other was Xiao Monarch!

Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao!

Jun Yinglian had never forgotten the first part of the poem. She wouldn't. The first part of the poem was much more important to her than the latter.

Because it was stated the reason why Ye Xiao rejected her!

'Ruthless heaven's will promises no flat and smooth life path.'

That was true. The heavens never showed mercy. Although everybody had the chance to get on the flat and smooth road, only one of a billion people could stay on the path for a lifetime. Those who had already entered a path should keep working in full effort to keep staying on it forever. That was a clear explanation.

'In this hopeful mundane world, I would like to be lost in my own madness.'

It meant Xiao Monarch had the lady in his heart because, after

all, they were all mortals in the mundane world. However, he chose to be a loner because that was the only way he could keep himself moving forward on the path to heaven's nature...

'I regret that I let you be solitary.'

He made such a decision, which broke her heart...

'If there is a next life, I promise I will accompany you to travel the world.'

That was his sincere apology.

It should be something that would never happen.

Ye Xiao stared at Jun Yinglian sentimentally.

Jun Yinglian took a deep breath and, suddenly, sharp killing intent filled her eyes. "Who are you?"

"Who am I?" Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. "I am Ye Xiao."

"I know your name... I am asking who you are!" Jun Yinglian was suddenly covered in an aura of murderous cold qi. Her beautiful hand was already placed on the handle of her sword. Her eyes were shining with cold lights.

In fact, to kill a young man who had just reached Dao Origin Stage, she didn't need to use a sword. However, she still put her hand on the sword because she was utterly furious at the moment!

In her heart, this Ye Xiao was not the Ye Xiao in her heart. There was something this new Ye Xiao should never know!

[Even though you have his name, you are not him!]

"Don't you know who I am even after hearing what I said? I am Ye Xiao!" Ye Xiao stared at Jun Yinglian in the eyes. "Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao!"

"Heh, heh..." Jun Yinglian laughed horribly and indifferently.

Two months earlier, she might choose to trust him. The poem was a secret between only Xiao Monarch and her. It was an

absolute proof indeed!

However, she didn't believe it now!

After that fake Xiao Monarch's sneaky shows in the earlier days, she realized those guys were able to simulate Xiao Monarch in the voice, face, emotions, facial expression, behavior, even martial art... She nearly believed it even though she was the person who knew Xiao Monarch the best. She now thought somehow somebody knew everything about Xiao Monarch!

Now there was another!

She didn't know why, but this young man knew the poem... Maybe somebody in Sky Ice Palace heard the poem when she was talking in a dream when she missed Ye Xiao.

That was possible!

She looked confused in the eyes, but from deep inside her eyes, a strong killing intent was rising up.

It was unstoppable!

...

Chapter 1143: Proof

Jun Yinglian was trapped in the first idea. She started to fill a story with her imagination, believing that all of these was a fraud, a plot to take her life!

If it weren't a plot of the young man, even though he was the son of Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue, she would still kill him because he attempted to fool her by simulating Xiao Monarch!

She would never tolerate such a humiliation, no matter what the young man intended to do. She never showed mercy to such things! She would never endure it!

Ye Xiao made a long sigh. He knew she didn't believe him., so he said, "That year... The Heaven's Terrace of Qing-Yun Realm appeared... Everybody went there to take a chance. That was Xiao Monarch and Jun Yinglian's first meeting place."

Jun Yinglian blandly said, "Many people know about this. Do you think you can convince me by this?"

"They had a fight." Ye Xiao said, "It lasted six hours."

Jun Yinglian stared at Ye Xiao with a pair of frosty eyes while her hand kept holding the sword.

"In the end, Xiao Monarch operated his Laughing Eight Blast... and his Pace Beyond Clouds... He attacked with his sword... Prime Master Jun was defeated."

Ye Xiao blandly said.

"The last sword attack went past Prime Master Jun's face, and cut off a strand of her hair..." Ye Xiao said, "That was why they met each other. Prime Master Jun knew that Xiao Monarch could easily cut her face, but he only cut a strand of her hair because he was nice to her."

"Even though they only met for the first time, Prime Master Jun

always thought that she owed Xiao Monarch one favor." Ye Xiao slowly said, "Oh, right. She wasn't the Prime Master yet. She was only level five of Dao Origin Stage."

Jun Yinglian blandly looked at him and quietly listened to him.

"Then they split up..." Ye Xiao didn't hurry. He just kept speaking slowly, "Neither of them got lucky to have anything from the Heaven's Terrace that day. What they had was only a big fight... but they both had no idea how the fight would change both of their lives.

"Three years after that, Ye Xiao went to the Ghost Area alone. He happened to see Prime Master Jun fighting against the two superior cultivators of the West Hall... The two cultivators both liked Prime Master Jun. One of them was the son of the West Hall leader. He had been trying to earn her favor many times, but always failed, so he decided to force her.

"The two West Hall people were quite capable. Even though Prime Master Jun could defeat either of them, but she couldn't win a fight against them both. Ye Xiao stepped out in time and fought with Prime Master Jun, eventually killing the two guys with their swords. They ripped off every valuable object from the dead bodies and shared in a fifty-fifty cut.... Well, not really. After that, they burned the bodies. I guess it is still an unsettled case even now, isn't it?"

Jun Yinglian finally felt moved.

That was an absolute secret!

It was something only Jun Yinglian and Ye Xiao knew!

Back then, the son of the West Hall leader took a fancy to Jun Yinglian. He and his brother disciple ambushed her on the way. If Ye Xiao didn't show up and help her, she would have probably fallen into the men's hands.

However, when Ye Xiao joined her and killed the two guys, they

both knew they had made a huge mistake. West Hall would never let go of them.

The best solution to the problem was to keep it a secret. That was why they burned the bodies and told nobody about it afterward!

All proof was buried with the dead!

They didn't dare to take away some precious objects of the dead men, just buried them, because those things might leak the secret.

They had done it so carefully that the West Hall had never found any trace after searching for over ten years. They kept searching like crazy, but they couldn't get anything. In the end, they had to give up on it.

Somebody else might know that poem of them, but this case was definitely something that only she and Xiao Monarch knew!

If anybody else knew it, she and Ye Xiao would have died in the West Hall's attack for a long time!

[Who is he then?]

[How does he know about this?]

[No matter what, it can be assured that this man will do no harm to me. He could have let the West Hall kill me easily since he knows that I have killed the West Hall leader's son.]

[Just like he said, it is the biggest unsettled case in Qing-Yun Realm. West Hall leader used to announce a warrant for all information about the murderer. He would kill the wrong ones instead of letting the right one go.]

"I know. Maybe it is still not convincing enough for you to put your trust on me. However... I also know that you were injured during that fight..." Ye Xiao slowly said.

Jun Yinglian's pale and indifferent face suddenly turned red.

Because she was injured, Ye Xiao had been taking care of her until she was recovered. He healed her.

Because of that, Jun Yinglian became more into Ye Xiao!

In fact, the story between them was exactly started at that moment!

"That's right. I was injured." Jun Yinglian took a deep breath and said, "My left leg was badly injured. I couldn't walk. If he didn't help me, I would never be able to survive that!"

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I remember you were hit on the left shoulder, the right side of the waist, right hand, and some inner parts. However, your legs were unharmed."

Jun Yinglian didn't say a word. Her heart was beating faster.

[That was a trap, and he knew it. If this young man isn't him, how could he be so sure about the wounds on me... He is right about every injury he said...]

[Is he... Is he truly Ye Xiao?]

"After we took care of the two dead bodies, we found a covert cave where I started to cure you. Oh right, I operated some special technique. The interior of the cave was extended. I set up a misleading array outside the cave. I am not so powerful yet, so I am not able to do a good job in the space extension, but I am good at the array now..."

Ye Xiao looked at Jun Yinglian and softly said, "You still remember it, don't you?"

Jun Yinglian didn't answer directly. She said blandly, "These are far from enough if you want to prove you are Xiao Monarch! If you can show me how you do a space extension, maybe I will try to believe you at some point. That array means nothing! Everybody beyond Dao Origin Stage and had a master can do it easily!"

...

Chapter 1144: A Difficult Choice

Ye Xiao smiled. He didn't feel pissed at all. He said, "That space extension was a unique skill that my master taught me. One should be at least level five of Dao Origin Stage to operate it. I think I have told you this before. Never mind. It's your decision to make after all. Do you want me to continue?"

Jun Yinglian humphed and said, "Go on then! I would love to hear what you know!"

"After I did the two things in the cave, deep inside the cave, I started to operate my energy to cure your wounds. Those were not severe wounds though. We were so powerful back then, and those little wounds were like nothing for us. If I didn't help you, it might take a long time, but you would still recover eventually.

"The wound on the right side of your waist was the most difficult one to deal with though. It was a needle wound. That needle attack should have caused the least effective wound on you. What we needed to do was to pull out the needle and force your blood to run over it. However, that needle hit a tricky position on you, and it was stricken out by the unique method of West Hall. Half your body was numb, and you couldn't turn yourself. Your hands couldn't reach the wound..." Ye Xiao said, "Because of the moral parclose between a man and a woman, you wouldn't let me touch you."

Jun Yinglian blushed, and then she humphed.

"A few days later, you didn't get well. Instead, your spiritual qi ran slower. That was when we found the chronic poison on that needle. It had been hurting your Jing and Mai after a few days inside your body. You wanted to return to your sect for treatment, but that was not possible.

"You and me, we both knew that the needle was a unique weapon of West Hall. If somebody saw the needle, what we did would be

revealed!

"In the end, you decided to let me pull the needle for you."

Ye Xiao said, "A man and a lady... Of course, you were anxious. After all, the needle was in an embarrassing position on you..."

Jun Yinglian blushed and gritted with her teeth.

"When I was pulling the needle for you, I accidentally found... that below the wound, there were three red moles on your waist, like three stars in a row. That was interesting..." Ye Xiao looked at Jun Yinglian.

Jun Yinglian's face was completely red. She scolded, "You lecher! You shameless prick! What nonsense are you saying!"

Ye Xiao was surprised. He said, "I am just trying to prove myself. What I said is merely a part of the sweet memory we privately share. How was that shameless? Besides, you decided to let me pull the needle. Well, I was thinking of forcing you if you insisted not to let me... It was urgent, and I couldn't let you die..."

"Stop that! Go on with what happened next!" Jun Yinglian stamped. Her eyes were already red.

"It took a long time to heal. Because the poison was vile, and we didn't find it in the first few days, it took eleven days for you and me to suppress the poison in your body with our spiritual qi together! It wasn't thoroughly cured, but you could at least move freely."

Jun Yinglian humphed.

Ye Xiao said, "On the thirteenth day, you abruptly asked me something. Do you still remember what you asked?"

Jun Yinglian coldly stared at him with her angry eyes.

"You asked... After all the years you spent in the realm, have you ever loved any women?"

"I answered... I am always traveling. A loner never has such

dreams."

"Then you said... If a woman loves you, will you possibly love her back?"

Ye Xiao looked sullen when he said this.

Jun Yinglian coldly said, "Did I say it? Are you sure?"

Ye Xiao said, "Yes. You said it. I will never forget the conversation! After you said that, I idiotically answered... One man, one sword, travels the world. I don't dare to think of a family. If a lady takes a fancy to me, I will escape."

Jun Yinglian gritted her teeth and sneered.

"The next day, I didn't even say goodbye... After that, we hadn't seen each other for three years."

Ye Xiao sighed sorrowfully.

"Three years after, I went to Soul Broken Town to search for the Marvelous Blood Jade. I was in a fight with someone. I couldn't win the battle because the enemies had too many people. You showed up and fought on my side. We won a great victory." Ye Xiao said, "After that, you asked me... I have been thinking about you for a thousand days now. If your heart is warm, you should accept me."

Jun Yinglian humphed. It seemed her eyes were blurred, but then she looked cold in the eyes again.

"I said... There is a long journey ahead of me. I can't think of anything else other than cultivation.

"Then I left you again... without even saying goodbye..."

"We met and split up a few times. We were always in different places. Sky Ice Palace announced that their new Prime Master was Jun Yinglian. People in Qing-Yun Realm didn't know your name yet. A small figure suddenly became the Prime Master of a powerful sect in the world. It did arouse quite an uproar in the

world." Ye Xiao sighed. "I went to see you secretly. I knew it was you. And it was."

"You changed your name to Jun Yinglian."

"Years after that, we occasionally met each other but were always in different places. Most of the time we couldn't be with each other. We never dared to define our relationship... It was such a pity. However, I didn't regret it, even when I was dying."

Ye Xiao made a long sigh, "I just felt sorry."

Jun Yinglian coldly stared at Ye Xiao and gently said, "You said you were Xiao Monarch. Fine. Let me ask you one thing. Since you didn't want to accept me when you were Xiao Monarch, why are you here? Why did you chase me? What do you want?"

Ye Xiao solemnly said, "I never said I don't want to accept you. I wanted to. I dreamed for it! But I couldn't... Because... It really was a difficult decision!"

When Jun Yinglian heard 'I wanted to. I dreamed for it!', it seemed her frosty face didn't look cold anymore. However, she kept seriously asking, "Of course you had a difficult decision to make! What about now? You don't need to make the difficult decision now, do you? Maybe Xiao Monarch had a difficult decision to make, but you don't! Am I correct?"

Ye Xiao nodded. "Indeed. I don't have that difficulty now."

Jun Yinglian angrily said, "What? Just like a game? You said Xiao Monarch had a difficult decision to make, yet you don't have one! How is that possible? How dare you claim to be Xiao Monarch! You are talking against your own theory! Nonsense!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. Then he smiled and said, "Oh, right. You don't know why it was a difficult decision for me yet!"

Jun Yinglian's eyes turned cold. She said, "Fine. Then tell me, what is it? Why do you say you don't have that difficulty anymore?"

Ye Xiao was surprised. He grumbled for a while and then made up his mind before saying, "Fine. I will tell you. I... It was the main martial art I cultivated... It was... Pure-Yang Martial Art. If I lost my virginity, I would be wasted. My Jing and Mai would be wrecked. I would become a piece of trash! You are an expert cultivator! Think about the details when we were staying together. You will realize the truth. You will know I am telling the truth here!

"Because of this, if I accepted you, I will ruin you!"

"What?"

...

Chapter 1145: Don't You Agree?

Jun Yinglian exclaimed because she was shocked about the unbelievable reason why they couldn't be together.

She used to think that Ye Xiao might already have lots of concubines in his home because he always behaved decently. She thought that was a possible reason.

Because she thought so, she even decided to lower herself. She had even told Ye Xiao that she would only stay by his side, claiming no title from him.

She would have never guessed the real reason.

Pure-Yang Martial Art...

When she heard these words, she felt dizzy.

[Why?]

When she thought more in-depth about the details of the time when they were staying together, she found something that she had never really paid attention to, but proved Ye Xiao was a Pure-Yang Martial Art cultivator... The most powerful Pure-Yang Martial Art required the cultivator to remain virgin. Once he broke his virginity, he would lose everything.

[No wonder he didn't accept me! He couldn't accept me!]

"Humph! Let's assume what you said were true. What now? Don't you cultivate Pure-Yang Martial Art anymore? Ye Xiao told me that he only had one master. He didn't have other masters. If you are not cultivating that martial art, how could you possibly become a Dao Origin Stage cultivator?" When Jun Yinglian asked the question, her face was burning.

Even she didn't realize that she had already approved of the fact that this young man was Xiao Monarch, the man she had been longing for!

"I have failed you in the last life. How can I continue that stupid martial art." Ye Xiao nodded. "The day when I was slaughtered, I put a self-explosion. My physical body died along with my soul. However, my soul power gathered up after that, and my soul went to the Land of Han-Yang. It entered the body of Ye Nantian's son, who had just died. That was when I got the second chance. I wouldn't go on with that lonely bachelor's martial art, would I? I changed to another one..."

Jun Yinglian stared at him and half closed her eyes.

Ye Xiao hurriedly tried to earn the credit. "Lian Lian, look, you have to understand that I quit my original martial art for you. You are an expert. You know how the Pure-Yang Martial Art suits me perfectly..."

Jun Yinglian was flushed!

Suddenly, she felt like kicking him to death.

[For me? You quit the Pure-Yang Martial Art for me? What is that supposed to mean...]

In fact, when she heard what Ye Xiao said when he was describing the detail in that cave, she confirmed that he was Ye Xiao!

Xiao Monarch!

He had said so many things that only she and Xiao Monarch knew about.

Nobody else knew so many details of the things they had experienced together.

However, even though she already confirmed it, she still felt angry and ashamed.

If Ye Xiao were dead, it would be okay that she claimed to be a widow of him and took revenge for him...

Well, he was alive...

More importantly, Ye Xiao had never accepted her...

She was doing it on her own all the time!

That was embarrassing.

She was overjoyed at the moment, but also upset...

She had been devoting herself, in the name of a dead man, to the business of revenging. It was full of love and passion, but she didn't honestly have the right to do it. Now, things had become worse. The man who died was alive! That was awkward. She was embarrassed!

Suddenly, she didn't know what to say or to do. She felt like pouting... She was muddleheaded all of a sudden.

"I need to know why you are still alive! I don't believe in any magical words. I want all the details!" Her voice was more and more indifferent because she was trying so hard to speak like that.

If she didn't try hard, she might cry out in tears.

"Oh... I... I don't know how it happened..." Ye Xiao murmured, "You know... I was surrounded. I didn't want to be captured or tortured, so I decided to explode myself along with my soul. It should bring more of their men to die with me... I thought I was dead, but unexpectedly... I woke up in a young man's body..."

"I was in a lower world below Qing-Yun Realm, the Land of Han-Yang... I don't have an explanation for that even now. I assume my broken soul gathered up again from pieces. But that is only a conjecture. My soul should be worse than broken into pieces. It should be totally eradicated. You know how crazy it is to explode one's own soul... I never believed it was possible for a soul to be recovered. Not that I don't want to explain it to you, it's just..."

Jun Yinglian nodded and thought, [That's reasonable though. I wouldn't have a good explanation for that if I were him.]

Yet Ye Xiao giggled and continued, "I guess I had saved many

worlds in the previous life, and I should have been blessed with great fortunes. However, I was doomed a bachelor, and I failed you because of it. I guess the god doesn't feel right about it. That is why I am given a second chance... to meet you again, be with you again, and spend the rest of my life with you..."

Jun Yinglian blushed, not knowing what to do. Before she said anything in retort, Ye Xiao gloatingly continued, "I must have done so many good things in the life before my previous life... and also suffered a great deal in my previous life, hurting you, getting killed, so the god made compensation for me. That is why I have this new body... I don't want more; I just want to marry you, and a couple of concubines... That would be enough... Life of a god..."

Jun Yinglian frowned immediately!

[What? Concubines?]

[What are you talking about you bastard!]

[Do you even know what you are talking about?]

[You haven't even married me! How dare you thinking about having any concubines...]

She bit her lips, speaking as if she was indifferent about it, "I wonder how many concubines do you want."

That sounded truly indifferent, casual, and even cold.

Ye Xiao was quite glad at the moment. He realized Jun Yinglian was quite acceptant, so he figured she agreed that he should have some concubines. He was so happy that he decided to be totally honest with the lady.

There might be something that he didn't think of, but he would hide nothing in his mind.

Jun Yinglian had always been close to him. He surely should be honest to her. He laughed loudly and said, "Well, actually... Look, this is just a blueprint for the future... It is so good to meet you

again, Lian Lian. I shall share every thought in my mind with you. I will tell you everything I feel... I am going to make it up to you... Don't you agree? I should do so, as a man... Don't you agree?"

...

Chapter 1146: Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang...

Jun Yinglian wanted to kick this shameless man to death immediately!

She gritted her teeth and said, "Naturally! It is reasonable for a man to have lots of wives and concubines... How many do you have now?"

Ye Xiao laughed so wildly as he thought he had passed the biggest difficulty. He thought for a while and said, "You are the first... Of course, you are..."

While speaking, he realized something seemed to be wrong. When he decided to think about it for a while, Jun Yinglian interestedly said, "Oh, I am the first. Who is the second? What about the third? There must be quite a few! You have been cultivating that stupid martial art for a whole life. You just have to make it up for yourself, don't you?"

Ye Xiao nodded. "Absolutely."

He admitted it!

Jun Yinglian nearly spat a mouthful of blood, and she said, "Who are they?"

Ye Xiao was pushed to answer the question. He said, "Ye Xiao's fiancé is the second. I mean the young man, the former owner of this body, Ye Xiao. He was engaged with a girl by the two families. She was deeply in love with me. She even risked her life for me. However, she has been taken away by her master to learn some enigmatic martial art, so I don't know when I get to see her again, but she must be the second. As for the third..."

Suddenly, he felt like he was in a perilous position as if a murderous beast was staring at him, which creeped him out!

He was confused. [What is wrong?] He stopped, trying to think deeper.

[There is no danger... Why would I feel so?]

...

[What? There indeed are a second and a third... Without the restraint of the Pure-Yang Martial Art, he actually becomes a playboy!]

Jun Yinglian gritted her teeth. [You have a fiancé because of the former owner of your body... that I can forgive you for. Why do you have to make a high comment on her? Is my love not enough for you? Wouldn't I sacrifice my life for you? You don't know when you get to see her again, huh? I guess you really miss her... Fine. The engagement happened before you took the man's body. I won't blame you. However, who is the third?]

She still pretended to be indifferent, not angry or upset, as if she was pretty interested in the topic. She said, "Why don't you keep talking? I think you still have a few more, don't you? You said you were going to be honest with me. Why do you stop after telling me half of it? That is not as righteous and broad-hearted as Xiao Monarch!"

She was smiling as if she didn't care at all.

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "I don't know why. I felt, somehow, scared... Where was I? Oh, right. I had a maid, Bing'er. She is a nice girl. She has been staying with me all the time. Uncle Song said that I should take her as my concubine. I do like her a lot... What else..."

"What else? Are there more?" Jun Yinglian felt pain in her lungs. She gritted her teeth and pretended to be cool. "There must be a few more, right? The fourth? The fifth? ... Is there a sixth?"

Ye Xiao rubbed his head and shrugged his shoulders. "No luck for a fourth, fifth, or sixth... It's done. I have two at the moment... Not many. I don't think I have many. What do you think?"

"Hmm. Not at all. Not many." Jun Yinglian nodded heavily,

gritting her teeth.

The flame of anger was burning up in her heart, and her eyes were filled with killing intent!

[You bastard! After all that you have done to me in your pathetic previous life, now you finally have a chance to make it up to me... yet... you actually hooked up with other women? What do you mean you have two at the moment? Are you going to hook up with more at the next moment?]

[What did you just say? Make up for me? Spend the rest of your life with me?]

[Is this how you f*cking make up for me?]

[Are you sure you are f*cking making up for me?]

[I understand that in this world, man means privilege. I know it is reasonable for a man to have concubines, but... you should at least come to me and tell me about it first!]

[You actually...]

[We just met each other. I just get to know your true identity. I am just happy about your survival. I don't even have time to finally get back to you! And you... You actually have made a plan on having more concubines...]

[Do you think I am not able to survive without you?]

[I did tell you that I wouldn't mind if I need to share with others if you had concubines. But this is not the time when I said those stupid words to you! Do you understand?]

"I see. I see..." Jun Yinglian nodded while her face looked colder and colder.

Ye Xiao instantly felt something wrong in the atmosphere. He giggled, "Lian Lian..."

"Shut the f*ck up!" Jun Yinglian raged up and stared at him. "Who do you think you are to call me Lian Lian?"

Ye Xiao was shocked. He said, "Lian Lian, come on. I am Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao! I am telling the truth! Do you still refuse to admit..."

Ye Xiao heard the f-word and felt terrified immediately. Jun Yinglian was always cautious about her manner. She barely said dirty words. However, when she started to use one, that meant she was going to explode in anger! Things were going to end up really nasty!

"Pah! There is only one way to convince me..." Jun Yinglian was emitting cold qi. "You have one way to make me believe you are Xiao Monarch!"

Ye Xiao was spirited up and said, "What way?"

"Fight me!" Jun Yinglian stared at him with eyes full of killing intent. She gritted her teeth and spoke fiercely, "Words are only words. The martial arts of Xiao Monarch, the experience of him, the way he thought... those things were unchangeable!"

"Come on!" Jun Yinglian suddenly stood in preparation. "Show me if you know Xiao Monarch's unique moves!"

As she spoke, she had made a palm hit with air streams blowing over.

Ye Xiao was terrified. He stepped backward and said, "Lian Lian, I am merely level one of Dao Origin Stage... I can never rival you."

"Just do whatever you can. I will show you mercy. You won't be killed!" Jun Yinglian spoke through her teeth.

"Fine! Try my Laughing Upon Mountains..." Ye Xiao was spirited up. He turned aside and made a fist strike.

That looked exactly the same as how Xiao Monarch would do it!

However...

- Puff! -

He got kicked on the belly and flew out backward fast. He only

had time to exclaim when he was kicked far away! "Ahhh!"

Apparently, even though it looked good when he made that strike, it was weak in the power and speed. He deserved the kick!

"One strike is not enough! Come on!" Jun Yinglian stepped forward.

"Fine! Try my Lau..."

- Puff! -

"Ahhhhhh!"

He was flying out again. This time, he got punched in the face.

Ye Xiao got hit on his pretty face. He was frightened. He didn't dare to make any attacks anymore and just operated Laughter in Skyline to keep moving around. He made a small move when he got a chance. The moves he used were all Xiao Monarch's techniques. He just quickly finished the moves and dodged away hurriedly!

Xiao Monarch could surely sweep some areas with these skills because he was a peak level Dao Origin Stage cultivator back then. However, he was now only level one of Dao Origin Stage, and he was facing Jun Yinglian, who was at the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage. Besides, Jun Yinglian knew every move of Xiao Monarch! It was quite a challenge for him even to move around a little longer!

As expected, after moving for just a short while...

- Bang, bang, bang... -

-Bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang, bang... -

...

Chapter 1147: I Was Wrong...

Ye Xiao got hit several times. His pretty little face became little pig face. No, it was a big head.

"Lian Lian, don't you just want to see my moves..." Ye Xiao hurriedly asked with a swollen mouth, "Why do you punch me so hard..."

"I decide how to verify your identity, and you just keep making your moves!" Jun Yinglian looked cold and kept attacking.

- Bang, bang, bang, bang, puff, puff, puff... - The next period of time, Ye Xiao suffered continuous attacks. Other than his head, which had already become a pig head, every other part of his body got crazily beaten as well...

After the time of a pot of tea, his butt already got kicked nearly a thousand times. He was having a really swollen butt at the moment...

Jun Yinglian cursed in her mind while she was making the attacks.

[Pure-Yang Martial Art, huh?]

[You should come to me first!]

[You disgraced me!]

[You actually have concubines...]

[First! Second!]

[Concubines!]

[Concubine, concubine, concubine...]

As she repeated the words in her mind, she kept attacking Ye Xiao with continuous storm-like kicks and punches to vent the grudge...

Ye Xiao's body was swelling at a visible speed.

As he was getting hit, he shouted with pain, "Lian Lian, have you recognized me yet... This should be enough... Puff! Ah!"

Maybe he was having a knotty head at the moment, or he was punched too hard in the head.

He actually still asked such a stupid question.

She wouldn't attack him only with kicks and punches if she didn't recognize him, would she? She would directly use her sword to cut him apart!

One sword, cut off his head... and make it fly... - Shoot! -

That must be a pleasant scene to her!

Wasn't it much easier than what she was doing at the moment?

She wouldn't need to waste time on this if she used a sword! And it would be much easier to vent her hate!

The torturous fight had lasted for fifteen minutes.

Ye Xiao did the counting and realized he had at least been hit ten thousand times by Jun Yinglian...

Luckily, Jun Yinglian didn't hit him with her actual power. She just made physical injuries. Otherwise, he would have become a pile of meat and flesh...

Jun Yinglian was indeed at the peak of level nine of Dao Origin Stage. She had perfect control over every hit she made. It wouldn't hurt his Jing and Mai, or his bones, or his inner organs...

Every inch of his skin and muscle was beaten up to the utmost limit. That was exactly pain in the skin and muscles.

After that fifteen minutes...

- Bang! -

Jun Yinglian kicked on his belly, and he flew out like he was riding cloud and mist... He flew out hundreds of meters away but still didn't touch the floor... He was really suffering a muddle in

the head...

He just kept flying out with his butt in the front... Such an elegant posture...

Suddenly, he was enlightened!

The lady said she wanted to prove his identity, but in fact, she just wanted to torture him!

Xiao Monarch got pissed!

[Holy hell! She actually did this to me?]

[She has recognized me already!]

[She just takes excuses to beat me up hard... That's all!]

[Otherwise, I should have been punched to death!]

"Wait!" Ye Xiao angrily shouted.

Jun Yinglian had moved to his sight. She blandly said, "Wait for what? Are you giving up?"

Ye Xiao sadly said, "You... You are not testing me! You know who I really am already! You know I am Xiao Monarch... Yet you still beat me... You just want to beat me up! Don't you?"

Jun Yinglian humphed. "Yes, I do. So what?"

So what?

That was frank and aggressive! Ye Xiao was stunned!

[Holy hell! The woman's reaction... is utterly opposed to my expectation!]

[This is entirely a different story...]

[Shouldn't she burst into tears at the moment when I show her my true identity? And then she started to quiver because of happiness... and she grumbled because she was too excited... Then she rushed into my arms... Warmth and softness... after such a long time... finally...]

[It should be like this...]

[This should be the right version, isn't it?]

[But now...]

[Why is everything happening the opposite way?]

Ye Xiao looked at himself. He had a 'big' body at the moment. Every part of it was swollen twice bigger than usual. He was like a fat bear... He wanted to cry but had no tears. [What the hell is happening to me?]

"You recognized me! Why do you still beat me?" Ye Xiao was so sad. He just couldn't understand.

"I recognized you. Why can't I still beat you?" Jun Yinglian's eyes turned red due to grievances in her heart. She was trying so hard to control her emotions. "You failed me... Why can't I beat you?"

"I regret that I let you be solitary; If there is a next life, I promise I will accompany you to travel the world... Didn't you write this to me?"

"Then what?"

"You are still alive! Even though you can't fulfill your promise right away, couldn't you just come to talk to me? What did you do instead? You kept finding concubines for yourself... Why can't I beat you? I would love to beat you more!"

"You only came to me when you are already in Dao Origin Stage. No. You didn't. I coincidentally came to you! I wonder how much longer would it take for you to remember that you should come to find me by yourself! Fine. Forget about this. But what did you do just now?"

"We just finally met each other again after all the sufferings, yet you actually talked about getting yourself some concubines... Several concubines!"

"Concubine!" Jun Yinglian felt even angrier. Suddenly, she

rushed forward again and started to attack. "Concubines, huh?"

Ye Xiao was holding his head, squatting down, not knowing what to do. Yet he didn't get hit. He slowly removed his hand and glanced at Jun Yinglian with his swollen eyes...

She was standing right beside him. Her clothes were shaking. It seemed she was shaking...

Ye Xiao felt his heart being ripped apart

After a while, she finally burst into sobbing. She finally couldn't hold it. Her tears kept dropping down on Ye Xiao's head.

"Ye Xiao..." Her voice was shaking, "Are... Are you truly... still alive?"

Ye Xiao was touched. He said, "I am! I made a promise... that I would accompany you to travel the world!"

"Travel the world..." Jun Yinglian was shaking badly. She bit her lips, trying to stop sobbing, and stop all the grievances and excitement... but she couldn't.

Her dominant power and strong mindset of a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator were completely useless at the moment!

...

Chapter 1148: Long-lost Warmth

Jun Yinglian's eyes were tearing up. After a while, she finally shouted, "Ye Xiao, I hate you... I hate you..."

Then she shook, and then fell to the floor softly.

"Lian Lian!" Ye Xiao was anxious! He thrust up and held her waist. Her eyes were closed, with tears flowing on her cheeks. She was unconscious.

She was just lying quietly inside Ye Xiao's arms. Her pale face still had tear stains. Even though she was in a coma, there were still tears running out from the corner of her eyes.

She was like a fragile flower bud, favorable but piteous.

Ye Xiao looked at the beauty in his arms. He was suddenly obsessed.

He sat still, holding Jun Yinglian in his arms quietly. He was lost in thoughts.

[Why would she suddenly pass out?]

He felt his heart broken.

[Lian Lian... must be too tired!]

[Before I died, she kept following me with all her heart, but she always got disappointed. She was always sad because of me.]

She had been making attempts as time kept passing mercilessly. She had spent every second of her youth on him. She had waited until her face no longer looked young...

'Where you are is my home. Even though we are in different places, at least I know you are in the same mundane world!'

Jun Yinglian used to say these words.

That was such a humble self-comfort.

She didn't have to be in the mundane world, yet she descended to

it because of him!

'It will be all that I need, to just stay with you under the same starry sky in this mundane world.'

When she said so, her eyes were filled with sad tears.

However, she couldn't get what she wanted even though it was such a simple wish.

Nobody knew how much in despair she was when the news of Ye Xiao's death went to her ears.

She stayed around his cenotaph for three years afterward.

All her love for him had become void during the three years. It didn't even become the propulsion to take revenge.

He was dead. Would he come back to life if she took revenge for him?

Three years later, she showed up again with her sword.

People misjudged her this time. She didn't really want to take revenge.

What she wanted the most was... to die!

She had nothing to live for anymore.

A life without him was meaningless to her! She had no reason to live anymore!

It was still a big world, and lives could still be colorful. However, in her eyes, nothing mattered anymore.

She just wanted to die in the same people's hands as Xiao Monarch. She thought maybe that would lead her to him after death.

She didn't care where they were; she just wanted to be with him!

Maybe there was another mundane world after death. Perhaps he would still refuse her in the other world. However, she got to be with him in the same world again.

Maybe he could accompany her to travel the world then!

Jun Yinglian was a dominant Dao Origin Stage cultivator, but she was still exhausted after the three years. She was still alive, but deep inside her, she was just a walking corpse.

All that supported her to stay alive was the plan she had made for her self, the plan to die. If not, she might have been dead for a long time!

It was the last thing she had to do to deliver the message to Yue Gongxue.

After that, she only wanted to go straight to death as she planned! She took it as a start to meet Xiao Monarch again in the world of death!

However, when she was desperately heading to the end of her life, she was told that Ye Xiao was alive...

Xiao Monarch showed up in her sight again!

The news was too much a surprise for her. It was quite a pleasure to her, but she was unable to bear the shock! One might be lucky to be hit by a pie that suddenly fell from the sky, but a starving man might have been knocked down to death by the huge pie.

Her mind had been tensed up for three years. Every second in the three years, her heart became tenser. However, when it was at the most intense point, it was abruptly loosened.

It was like a spring which was extremely tight suddenly got loosened, having no space to buffer. That was such a huge blast at that moment.

The spring itself got blasted, but Jun Yinglian was blasted on her heart!

The pressure she had been suffering for the three years, the grudge that accumulated in the three years... they were all suddenly loosened!

She was knocked down by the pressure... Instead, she couldn't bear the 'emptiness' all of a sudden!

Ye Xiao felt how she felt in the heart. He couldn't help sighing with sorrow.

Jun Yinglian had been hanging on it till the present, with a woman's unique toughness.

[If I needed to do this...]

Ye Xiao didn't force himself to think about it. He obviously knew the answer. He might also give his life up to draw out the sword and start the last fight in his life. However, to put all the emotions and pressure in his heart for three years was totally impossible. He couldn't even endure it for three months, not to mention three years!

He just held Jun Yinglian's soft body. His eyes were blank. He looked confused, but pieces of memories showed up in his sight from time to time.

He was recollecting the days with Jun Yinglian. Everything, every word, every detail between them...

He had been such a prick to her. He felt that he was unforgivable.

He was lost in the recollection of the memory. At the moment, he was unknowingly making a bitter smile.

He couldn't remember how long he had held Jun Yinglian in his arms... Jun Yinglian had no idea either. Time was forgotten. The two of them were what left in the world, with softness, warmth, and peace!

Jun Yinglian couldn't handle the shock, so she passed out. However, she was still a dominant cultivator. What happened was a good thing after all. While Ye Xiao was still lost in the memories, Jun Yinglian woke up. She immediately became sober. The first thing she felt was a warm hug.

It was so comfortable.

Such a feeling was intoxicating her, obsessing her... It was the sweetness that she had been yearning for!

She slowly opened her eyes, and a handsome face appeared in her sight. He didn't notice that she was awake. He was lost in thoughts, quiet, with shifting emotions in his eyes.

He sometimes looked sad, angry, guilty, self-condemning, regretful...

Jun Yinglian looked at him quietly. She clearly understood why the man would have those different emotions. She knew exactly why he felt what he was feeling...

Whenever his expression changed, she knew what he was thinking about. She knew exactly why he would have a look like that in the eyes.

Only Jun Yinglian knew him that well. Only Jun Yinglian understood every changing expression in his face.

...

Chapter 1149: Accident?

As Jun Yinglian looked at him, her eyes became softer.

[He must be recollecting the memory of ours.]

[Only the memory of ours can make him lost. Only by being lost in those memories can he show the expression.]

As she thought about it, her lips curled up.

[Is it too late?]

She asked herself.

[No, not at all!]

In fact, she was grateful to the heavens for what was happening!

If Ye Xiao didn't get through the renascence from that death, even after ten thousand years, he still wouldn't accept her.

Before death, Xiao Monarch was never able to marry her!

The death of Xiao Monarch, which had broken her heart, actually brought an opportunity for her!

Wasn't it a good fortune... that Ye Xiao was reborn from death?

At least it was a good fortune for her and her love for Ye Xiao!

She half closed her eyes, trying to pretend her eyes were closed. She didn't want Ye Xiao to find out she was awake. She just looked below her eyelids to see Ye Xiao's face.

She had a strange feeling about it.

She felt strange, but not because Ye Xiao had a different face. When she looked at him in the eyes and found the real emotions, the guilt, the coldness... she was sure this man was Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch!

No matter how his face changed, his eyes never lied. At least it couldn't lie to her.

Nobody else had such a pair of eyes.

It contained everything in the world and showed a king descending the world.

It cared for people's suffering, but it disdained the entire universe!

It had fear, but it was afraid of nothing at the same time!

It showed mercy, but it killed decisively!

[It is a much more handsome face though.] Jun Yinglian giggled in her mind.

That was true and even conservative. Ye Nantian and Yue Gongxue were two beautiful people. Their genes must be excellent. Ye Xiao, as their son, must be outstanding in appearance. Even though one looked notably better in their lover's eyes, and even though Xiao Monarch was also a handsome man, Jun Yinglian still couldn't deny the fact that the new Ye Xiao was much more handsome than Xiao Monarch!

There was a reason why Jun Yinglian could accept Ye Xiao's new look so readily!

Back in the old days, Jun Yinglian and Ye Xiao seldom had time to stay together. Most of the time when they were together, they were in disguise. These two people together made a team of ultimate troublemakers! As long as the two of them stayed together, there would be a big trouble. They always pissed off some influential people, who then started to hunt them on a massive scale.

Disguise was always the best solution to survive the hunt.

For Jun Yinglian, who barely had much time to stay with him, it didn't matter what Xiao Monarch looked like.

The only thing she cared about was that Xiao Monarch stayed by her side.

As long as he was Ye Xiao, even if he was uglier, disfigured, disabled, crippled... she would always love him!

She would never dislike him because of the change of his appearance!

For Dao Origin Stage cultivators, to change appearance was the easiest trick.

Feng Zhiling was an example.

Ye Xiao was good at playing a role to disguise himself. Nobody caught his flaws. He was apparently an expert disguiser!

It was never a problem for Jun Yinglian what Ye Xiao looked like!

For her, the most important thing was to be hugged in his arms.

Now, he had finally accepted her!

[He said it clearly! He accepts me! Nothing is standing between us anymore!]

After thinking for a while, Jun Yinglian rolled her eyes and pretended to cough in pain. Blood immediately came out from the corner of her mouth. She slowly opened her eyes and looked at Ye Xiao powerlessly.

Ye Xiao was terrified. He hurriedly asked, "Lian Lian... What... What happened to you?"

[It doesn't make sense! I have checked her with my spiritual power. She did pass out, and her physical condition isn't so well, but there should be no severe problem. She was such a dominant cultivator after all. She wouldn't even feel weak. She passed out only because she was too excited. As long as she calms down and takes a good rest, she will be totally fine... But... What is this? How is she so weak? The blood... She even spat blood... A superior cultivator like her should never have such a problem! Did I miss something? Was I careless when checking on her?]

Jun Yinglian made a weak smile and said, "I... I am... fine."

She coughed again and spoke in an even weaker voice, "Ye Xiao, is this really you?"

"Of course! I am here!" Ye Xiao nodded, "I am here for real!"

Jun Yinglian gasped as her eyes lit up. "It is... It is you... Cough, cough..."

"What is happening to you..."

Ye Xiao had no idea what was going on. He was anxious and worried. He didn't understand why the lady, who was so vigorous and had beaten him up into a pig head earlier, had suddenly become so weak! She was barely breathing!

He hurriedly held her wrist to check her pulse. As he checked on her again, he was so scared that he nearly lost his soul.

What he sensed was that the spiritual qi in Jun Yinglian's body was in a chaotic status. The spiritual qi couldn't gather or run. It seemed the qi was disappearing...

It seemed there was nothing that could be done to save her.

[What is going on?]

[Did what happen suddenly break Lian Lian's heart of cultivation because it all happened too fast and abruptly? She also kept attacking me in full power just now. That consumed lots of her energy. She was so well before the fight. Because of what happened, did her spiritual qi go into disorder? So it was broken?]

Ye Xiao was also an expert in cultivation. He quickly came up with a conclusion. It was the only explanation that was reasonable!

[Holy hell! Heavens and hell... Isn't this too cruel to me?]

...

Chapter 1150: Jun Yinglian's Scheme

Ye Xiao was terrified. He hurriedly took out some supreme dan beads and put two into Jun Yinglian's mouth.

He was too weak in cultivation. Even though he knew what the problem was, he couldn't do anything to help. The only hope was his dan beads. At least it might buy him some time to think of a better solution!

However, Jun Yinglian was at a dominant level. When her spiritual qi was disappearing, even Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian, who just reached level nine of Dao Origin Stage, even Shuang and Han, who were in the same level with Jun Yinglian, couldn't help her... Only Xuan Bing or the three grand lders of Cold Moon Palace could help her!

Even though he knew she was in a dangerous situation, he tried not to look too sad. He comforted her while pouring energy into her by running East-rising Purple Qi. He hoped that the ancient marvelous martial art could change her fate and save her life!

Jun Yinglian made a desolate but beautiful smile and said, "I am fine... Really... I know well about my own body... It just went wrong when I knew we finally met each other again. I don't know why... Maybe it will be well later... Cough, cough... I was going to give up my life, no matter if I eventually win the fight or not... However... Cough, cough..."

She was completely honest about it. Every word was true. However, when it went to somebody's ears, what she said became worse than what the words actually meant.

[You are in such a fatal situation, yet you still think of comforting me? You still don't want me to worry?]

Ye Xiao was nervous. He found that the dan beads didn't help her at all. East-rising Purple Qi didn't work well in gathering the

spiritual qi inside Jun Yinglian. It was not much better than nothing.

[F*ck you East-rising Purple Qi! Aren't you the No. 1 martial art in the universe or something? So you claimed! Why are you useless when you are particularly needed?]

East-rising Purple Qi might respond with 'F*ck you, idiot! You are a weak piece of sh*t! Don't you know that? You actually want to save that powerful figure with your mini pathetic capability? If you are not so weak, I may help you expose the little trick that your woman is playing on you! You better know!'

Nothing worked. Ye Xiao was totally helpless at the moment.

"Lian Lian, listen. Your qi flow went wrong. That is all. Not a big deal. Just try to gather your spiritual qi by yourself. Make it run! It will be okay!" Ye Xiao was sweating because of anxiety. He kept pouring energy into her and tried to cheer her up at the same time. He didn't want her to give up.

Jun Yinglian was so good at acting! Even Ye Xiao, an expert disguiser, got fooled! He was totally stricken by the terrible idea... [I am not... going to lose her... right after I met her, am I?]

[Is this going to be a farewell? ...]

"It's okay. Nothing goes wrong. I am feeling great..." Jun Yinglian gently smiled and said, "Ye Xiao... you said... that you will... accompany me to travel the world... I think... maybe I will go to a place... where you will come to join me in the end..."

"No, no, no, no, no..." Ye Xiao totally freaked out. He incoherently said, "I said I will do it when I have a second life, right? This is my second life, isn't it? I am right here beside you... Come on... Please... We are going to spend a long time together... The world is small. Listen to me! You will be fine... You will get better... We will stay together until the lands are all wasted, the sky is collapsed, the oceans are dry, and the rocks are melted..."

"Cough, cough..." She coughed badly. Her face turned red out of no reason, just like a momentary recovery of her wellness before death.

"But... I don't know... Are you serious about it? Is it for real..." She sounded weak and powerless.

"Absolutely! I swear! I am serious!" Ye Xiao was anxious. "Stop talking now, ssh... Calm yourself first... Adjust your breath... We have plenty of time now..."

"I am scared... I don't want to hear another next life promise again..." Jun Yinglian looked so soft in the eyes. She obsessively looked at Ye Xiao and said, "I have some questions..."

"Sure! Ask me!" Ye Xiao worked harder on pouring the energy as he thought Jun Yinglian was becoming worse. He just kept pouring his spiritual qi into her body.

"Did you... really... cultivate Pure-Yang Martial Art?" Jun Yinglian asked.

"Yes! I did! I swear! If I lied about it, I am a filthy animal..." Ye Xiao swore. He was so anxious that his words were becoming more and more incoherent.

"Did you... Did you like me?" Jun Yinglian's eyes lit up.

"I did!" Ye Xiao nodded, "I liked you... I liked you!"

"Really?"

"Yes!"

"You are not lying?"

"I am not!"

"Then... Cough..." Jun Yinglian coughed for a while and then quivered. "Did you ever... think about... marrying me?"

Her eyes were twinkling... She stared at Ye Xiao in the eyes.

She had kept this question in her heart for half of her life. She

never had the courage to ask him!

She was afraid of being disappointed!

She didn't want desperation!

She was afraid that if she asked, she might lose the chance to at least stay with him as a friend!

"I did!" Ye Xiao gritted his teeth and said, "I thought of more than just marrying you... I thought... Maybe I could quit cultivation... and marry you! But... But I gave up that idea..."

"Why?" Jun Yinglian frowned.

"I can't let myself become a piece of useless trash... You always like powerful people! If I lost all my cultivation... how can I accompany you for the rest of my life..." Ye Xiao sullenly said.

"Even if you lost your cultivation, I wouldn't mind! I like you, not your cultivation! It is always just you!" Jun Yinglian was angry. "How could you misunderstand me like that?"

She was so angry that she became careless when she scolded him. That was so loud when she said those words. She realized her mistake, so she kept coughing badly until her lungs were almost shaking... Then she said in a lifeless voice, "Cough, cough, cough... You... Cough... You are so annoying..."

"I was wrong. I was wrong... Okay?" Ye Xiao sincerely apologized.

"Cough... Now that you are... back to life... How would you... treat me?" Jun Yinglian asked.

"I will marry you! This is the first thought I have after I was reborn! It was the only thought in my head at the beginning!" Ye Xiao decisively said.

Jun Yinglian blushed. "Cough... Cough... I doubt it... You must be lying again... You just want me to feel happy..."

"I am not lying! I am not! I won't lie about that!" Ye Xiao explained with anxiety.

"You must be lying... I am dying... so you pity me... comfort me... You don't want me to die in regret..." Jun Yinglian looked disappointed, sad, and grieved, and she said, "You have so many beautiful women around you... They are young, beautiful... They are soft, gentle, and obedient..."

...

Chapter 1151: A Careless Mistake

"In my heart, you are the most beautiful woman!" Ye Xiao panicked. "Stop talking. Just take some rest. Spirit up. We have plenty of time to stay together..."

"No..." Jun Yinglian weakly said, "I have so many words. I have to ask you... If I don't... I... Cough... Cough... I don't want to die with all the questions in my heart..."

"Fine... Fine..." Ye Xiao was sweating. "Go ahead. Just cut the unimportant ones. Let me lead your energy flow first... Your situation..."

"Am I... really... beautiful?" Jun Yinglian looked worse and worse.

"Yes!"

"Why... Why do you like me?"

"I... You... It's..." Ye Xiao stammered, "Do... Do I need a reason to like you?"

"Do you love me?" Jun Yinglian looked pushing in the eyes.

"Well..." Ye Xiao felt it difficult to say the word. It was difficult to f a man to say love.

"Don't push yourself. You don't love me..." Jun Yinglian sadly spoke, "You just pity me... Cough cough cough... Cough cough..."

That was another series of a powerless cough.

"I love you! I love you so much!" Ye Xiao hurriedly fixed it up, "I love you so so so so so much..."

"Then you..."

...

Jun Yinglian had been so weak as if she would pass away at any second. However, she just kept hanging on the edge between life

and death, weakly asking questions for three hours.

In the three hours, Ye Xiao had spoken all the sweet words in the world!

More than once!

He had made lots of promises, whether he could fulfill them or not. He decided to make her feel satisfied first.

He was like cutting out his heart to her... Under such circumstance, he had entirely given up the male privilege, the dignity of a man along the powerless coughs... He totally forgot about it in the end...

That was how a lot of unfair deals were made between them.

"In fact, I have been waiting for you to find me... I have been waiting for so long... too long..." Tears flowed down from Jun Yinglian's eyes, "I have been waiting for you... to say you like me, you love me, that you will marry me..."

"I keep waiting until just now..." Jun Yinglian looked at the sky, "How many years? Ye Xiao?"

"Well..." Ye Xiao was wordless.

Three hours endearment marathon was breaking him down.

He was a rookie in the game of love after all.

'Do you love me?' 'How much do you love me?' 'How much do you like me?' 'Do you...'

Questions that were similar to these had been asked and answered again and again... for countless times...

In the end...

Jun Yinglian seemed to pass out again, and it was finally ended.

Ye Xiao had just taken a breath of relief. When he was going to check on Jun Yinglian again and see if it was possible to cure her, he suddenly lost sight and passed out...

Ye Xiao was merely a cultivator who had just reached level one of Dao Origin Stage. He had been pouring out the energy of East-rising Purple Qi. The long-lasting output of his energy had consumed too much of himself. He had been forcing himself to do it because he was afraid Jun Yinglian would die if he didn't. During the process, he had to answer all those stupid love questions. It indeed had consumed his heart, body, cultivation, patience, endurance... Anyway, it used him all up. When he tried to relieve, he naturally passed out. It was lucky he was still alive!

Jun Yinglian was terrified. She hurriedly held Ye Xiao's body and tapped on his wrist to check his impulse. She kept condemning herself in her mind. [He is no longer Xiao Monarch after all. He is merely in level one of Dao Origin Stage. After pouring out his own energy to support me for such a long time, he might die if he didn't hold a breath of power to maintain his breath. He must be exhausted at the moment. That's why he passed out. Luckily, it is not severe damage. He will be fine after resting for some time.]

Jun Yinglian made sure everything was fine with Ye Xiao, and then she was suddenly lost. She didn't know what to do next...

She had played such a fictitious scene just to hear the true words of Ye Xiao's heart but turned out to exhaust him so bad. Luckily he was fine. If he died because of this, her heart would be torn into pieces. As she thought of such a possibility, she was utterly anxious and embarrassed.

Hurriedly, she continued the treatment on Ye Xiao...

...

After a long time, Ye Xiao slowly woke up from unconsciousness.

When he was sober, he found that he was holding nothing.

That was such a fright! He thrust up immediately!

"Lian Lian!"

Ye Xiao shouted.

There was no response. It was silent. Jun Yinglian had long gone, leaving no trace behind.

[Where is Lian Lian?]

Thinking about how weak and powerless Jun Yinglian was, he felt heartbroken. [Why couldn't I hang on for a longer time? How could I pass out? How could I not set her well first? What happened after that? She is not in danger, is she?]

He jumped up to a tree and shouted, "Lian Lian... Lian Lian..."

No response. Only the sound of the wind blowing the trees howled. There was no sign of the lady.

He was anxious.

He felt something wrong about it, but he couldn't tell what it was. He jumped off the tree sullenly.

He had never lost the heart of a peak level Dao Origin Stage cultivator. He understood anxiety wouldn't help, so he tried to concentrate.

He was merely level one of Dao Origin Stage, but deep in his heart, he was still Xiao Monarch. He calmed down and started to think of all the details. After a while, he figured out what was wrong.

If Jun Yinglian truly had her energy flows spread in chaos, she should have been gone after no longer than one or two hours. However, she had stayed in the dying status for over four hours. During the several hours of the love quiz, she seemed weak and powerless when breathing, but it was quite a long breath of hers. Usually, a person with disordered energy flows could never do that.

Moreover, he had used some supreme dan beads and East-rising Purple Qi on her at the same time. Even though it wouldn't completely cure her, it should at least make her feel better. How come she didn't feel anything?

The only explanation was that Jun Yinglian had been fooling him around by faking a dying status. As he thought about it now, he realized only as powerful as Jun Yinglian, one could make every act look so real. Even Ye Xiao, an expert disguiser was tricked. Although Ye Xiao was panicking at that moment, Jun Yinglian had done a great job in the play after all!

Ye Xiao had figured out the truth, so he stopped worrying that Jun Yinglian might die. The only thing he cared about now was where she went. He looked around and found that there were writings on the floor... in the position where he held Jun Yinglian.

Ye Xiao was moved. He hurriedly went over and read it. As he was reading it, he started to smile bitterly. He made a big sigh and said, "Oh woman... Typical woman!"

He shook the head, couldn't stop sighing. He almost died because of regret and remorse.

[That was such a careless mistake.]

This was the only thought in his head.

...

Chapter 1152: Don't Mess With Women!

Apparently, it was Jun Yinglian's writing.

'Is this a coincidence or have you finally understood? Humph! You keep me crying for all these years. You didn't even tell me when you are reborn. You kept the truth from me for so many years... Take this as a little punishment. It is not enough to vent my anger though.'

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly when he read this.

'Don't think that after a few sweet words from your mouth I will just forgive you. Think about what you will get in the future. Humph!'

'You have made lots of promises today. Remember them. If you dare to break any one of them... Humph!'

The next part seemed to be modified. Jun Yinglian must have finished it, but rewrote it because she wasn't satisfied.

What came next was more formally written.

'I am incredibly pleased to know that you are back to life. I feel grateful for your return. I appreciate your caring. I am overjoyed. It is a great pleasure to marry you and spend the rest of my life with you. Finally, after all the years I have been waiting, here you are. However, my heart is filled with complicated thoughts. I think I should stay away for some days to adjust myself to face the truth. Please, don't worry.'

'You are now a member of Ye Clan. I don't think it is appropriate for me to get involved in your clan affairs. After all, we have plenty of time from now on.'

This was why she had to leave for now.

'Many chaoses in the martial world happened because of your death. I will go home and wait for the day when you point at the

three factions with your sword. I will always stay by your side, life or death.'

'Xiao Monarch of the chaotic world; Jun Yinglian of the broad realm. A deal is made under this tree; The mundane world is full of warmth from now on.'

Then it was the ending words.

'I will wait till you conquer the world.'

He finally finished.

He had a complicated emotion deep in his heart.

[I honestly didn't expect this...]

He felt relieved, but then made a sigh.

Jun Yinglian did care about her position beside Ye Xiao. It didn't make a significant impact on her true heart, but it at least had small effects.

It was normal that she felt annoyed about the current situation...

Before Ye Nantian's son was born, Jun Yinglian had helped their entire family. If she didn't help them, Ye Xiao might not have the fortune to be born... Now she was going to marry the boy...

That was... no matter what... a ridiculous thing. It was improper.

Jun Yinglian couldn't do it. In fact, even Ye Xiao couldn't accept it, after thinking deeply about it.

That was... shameless and disgraced!

That meant the two of them were still unable to be together, no matter how they loved each other.

At least it was impossible that they could get married in Qing-Yun Realm.

They would have to make it a clandestine love affair...

That would be a big scandal if somebody saw them together!

Ye Xiao was freaking out when he thought of the possibility.

[I was unable to be with her even if I wanted to. Now I am free. I can do what needed to be done with her, yet I still can't! Damn it! Heavens! Stop fxcking playing me around!]

What made him feel helpless was.. the nature of women!
[Women, oh women!]

He kept sighing and repeating the three words in his mind for countless times on his way back home.

He finally admitted that he had never truly understood Jun Yinglian.

He had never truly understood any woman...

He could never know that what nearly broke his heart was faked!

It was a play by Jun Yinglian.

He was an expert on putting on a show to fool others, but this time, the old smart hawk got played by a dull little chicken!

Jun Yinglian just walked away after all the unfair deals he made to her... waved her hand, not taking away even a piece of cloud...

That totally changed the image of Jun Yinglian in his heart... He was lucky not to go crazy...

In his memory, Jun Yinglian was always... delicate and touching... weak... powerless... sentimental... soft...

He couldn't believe that she would put on such a big show to play him around!

He couldn't forget how she pretended not to recognize him and beat him up really hard...

He trembled...

[She is... showing no mercy to me.]

[That was so violent...]

He always remembered her as a wonderful, gorgeous, beautiful, elegant, and soft woman!

Now, as he thought of her... he couldn't help imagining... when they were sleeping together in the future someday... while he was just about to sleep well... he got beaten up hard!

[Oh... Heavens...] He exclaimed. [That is very possible to happen... No... Not just possible... That is definitely going to happen...]

He kept imagining all kinds of twisted scenes, showing a pale face... In the end, he even thought about something genuinely unacceptable... which was Jun Yinglian grabbing his penis... and swinging him round and round...

"Horrible!" Ye Xiao kept shaking his head, shedding cold sweat... [Holy hell... That creeps me out... Too much...]

If Jun Yinglian knew what he was thinking right now, she would definitely turn furious. Even though she would feel bashful, but she might make his stupid imagination come true...

[Much great imagination of yours huh?]

[How about I make it truly happen?]

Jun Yinglian didn't mention anything about concubines in the words she left for him. That made him feel anxious and confused.

[Women, oh women...] Ye Xiao shook his head, looked upset. He said, "Hawky, do you know what the most horrible and dangerous animal is in the world?"

The hawk who was flying in the sky cooed.

"Women!" Ye Xiao seriously said, "Remember, it will be fine no matter what sinful and unforgivable thing you do, but never... ever... ever... piss off a woman! Do not even touch them! That is an extremely horrible animal! Horrible!"

"Coo Coo..." The hawk raised up its head. It looked spirited.

[You fear for women. I don't... What I am afraid of... is having no female hawk as a company to me...]

[Wait, did you say it will be fine no matter what I do?]

[That sounds wonderful! I will keep that in mind!]

The hawk kept thinking about it in its head. It decided not to forget this useful lesson for the rest of its life!

With the shiny golden lights, they were fleeing back.

Ye Xiao could never imagine what he had accidentally planted in the Golden Hawk's heart. It seeded out and grew up high when it was in Human Realm Upon Heavens...

Ye Xiao would have to pay a big price for what he said just now... by cleaning up the mess after what the hawk did every time...

If Ye Xiao and Jun Yinglian was a team of troublemakers, this golden bird just be a great troublemaker!

Whatever trouble it made... it was tremendous...

It was not just exaggerated! It was true!

Besides... there was the cat... who was another expert troublemaker!

Well... anyway, he was going to pay the price for what he said!

[Lian Lian is waiting for me... Li Wuliang, Han Bingxue are both waiting for me...] Ye Xiao thought, [What can I do to boost my cultivation level?]

[It can't wait anymore...]

He kept thinking hard but figured out nothing helpful.

...

Chapter 1153: A Problem About His Cultivation Level

Ye Xiao knew that he had been improving unbelievably fast already. Maybe he was not the best in improvement in the history of Qing-Yun Realm, but he was definitely the best in the current era. In the latest hundred thousand years, nobody improved faster than him in cultivation. He had been cultivating for less than three years, and he was already in Dao Origin Stage. That was sick!

However, he wasn't satisfied with it. He wanted to be faster!

That was why he was being such a prick! He really should feel contented!

The hawk was flying fast. They were back to the Town of Ye in a short time.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han had been waiting for him for such a long time. They took the hawk as an excuse to take Ye Xiao away from Ye Nantian before Ye Nantian had time to ask Ye Xiao about what happened.

When they were back to the room, the two ladies looked quite excited.

"Was it Jun Yinglian?"

"Is she our sister-in-law?"

"Where is she?"

"She must be beautiful, isn't she?"

"She must be! Otherwise, she won't be a match for our brother!"

"Did you see her?"

"What on earth is going on with you two?"

"What did you say after such a long time?"

"Did you hold each other and shed tears? Did you tell each other how much you missed each other?"

"Come on! Come on, say it..."

Ye Xiao was embarrassed. He wanted to say something but he couldn't.

Suddenly, the two ladies found something wrong.

"Wait! Brother, what happened to you? Why do you look like a pighead? Who beat you?"

"Oh no! Isn't it vicious... Your entire face is swollen... So are your eyes... your nose... your ears..."

"Your mouth and your hands too... Oh my heavens... Your butt is unbelievably swollen..."

"Who was it?"

"We will catch him!"

Then the two ladies stopped at the same time.

They looked at Ye Xiao and started to murmur.

"It couldn't be... Jun Yinglian... could it?" Yue Shuang said.

"Brother, did you... do anything indecent to her..." Yue Han said.

"No way. How would brother do anything indecent to his wife? Besides, even if he did, it shouldn't be indecent!" Yue Shuang twisted her mouth.

"It sure could be indecent too! Look at him! If he did that thing to her, it was indecent!" Yue Han said, but she was not so sure.

"I told you that whatever our brother do to his wife, it is not indecent!" Yue Shuang stared at her.

"What is it then?" Yue Han said.

"Well... It is... Do not lay your hands on adults' business, you little girl!" Yue Shuang said.

"I just want to know what indecent thing brother has done to her..." Yue Han looked upset. "Nobody knows who is the elder one. You can't call me little girl!"

"I can! I just did! You are the younger one!" Yue Shuang humphed and then fell into thoughts. "Actually, I also want to know what brother did to make himself beaten up like this..."

"That's strange..."

"Let's both think about it carefully..."

"Hmm... That's right. This is... Hahahahaha..."

Then the two ladies put their hands under their jaws while rolling their eyes and thinking about it. However, what they were trying to figure out at the moment was entirely a different matter with what they were asking about in the first place.

That was entirely a different matter now...

Ye Xiao stood on a side, with his mouth twisted and eyes rolled aside...

[What is more horrible than a woman...] Ye Xiao thought, [Three women...]

He literally couldn't stand it anymore. [I can't take it... Jun Yinglian, who has always been a lovely little girl, suddenly changed... I... I...]

He must be sobbing in his heart. He felt that his future was dim.

When a man had an aggressive woman in his family, he was usually exhausted. However... Ye Xiao had at least three...

[Oh my god!]

[Is this still life?]

After a long time.

They started to discuss the question Ye Xiao asked.

"How to improve my cultivation fast?" When Ye Xiao put forward

the question, it all turned to silence.

The three of them were all dominant figures in Qing-Yun Realm.

When they thought about this question, they all thought of one place.

They thought of the same place at the same time!

However, none of them wanted to say it!

Heaven's Terrace!

An opportunity was always accompanied by danger! This place was a perfect example!

Ye Xiao was doing incredibly good in cultivation already, but he needed to get to the peak of cultivation in this realm soon. As more and more people showed up around him, he had to make some big adjustments to the plan of revenge. When he was in the Land of Han-Yang, he had made a huge plan against the three factions to take revenge! It was a vast and thorough plan!

He didn't care if he was too weak himself. He didn't have to use his own power to defeat his enemy. All he needed was a right scheme at the right time, such as using a third power to destroy the enemy for him... He could just stir up the wave and push it. When he was in Cold Moon Palace, he had a perfect opportunity to make the three factions fight against each other. At least one of the three factions would be wiped out when the battle was brought up to the table!

However, no matter how thorough the plan was, things always changed too fast!

How did Cold Moon Palace treat Ye Xiao?

Ye Xiao could never say they were bad. He couldn't let Cold Moon Palace fight against the other two sects because Cold Moon Palace would collapse. That was also an unacceptable result for Ye Xiao!

Cold Moon Palace was just like Ye Clan. It was an essential part of

his new life. It was where his masters served!

He could never put his masters in danger just to hurt his enemies!

However, things were entirely different on his side now. Even though he was still too weak to fight against the three factions, the people who would stay with him made a dominant team together. If these people were all in different places, he could ask them to attack the three factions from time to time when there was an opportunity. However, most of them were with him at the moment. With these people's capabilities, he could even go start a war against the three factions and maybe he could even win it! What these people wanted now was just one thing.

When they realized Xiao Monarch was still alive, they only hoped for one thing.

The return of the Xiao Monarch! They were waiting for Xiao Monarch to stand up high and start the fight against the three factions!

People would follow him to the center of the chaos!

...

Chapter 1154: How Much Do You Know About Heaven's Terrace?

The current problem was that Ye Xiao was too weak. He could only hinder the others in the fight. He totally couldn't make any positive contribution. What was most likely to happen was that somebody would have to stay around and protect him because he was too weak. That would not be a good thing for the future.

One more thing, with or without Shuang and Han, Ye Xiao's people were still not strong enough to destroy the three factions.

The three factions had dozens of thousand years of history. There were countless superior cultivators in the three sects. Every one of the three factions had tens of cultivators at the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage.

That was after the war against Xiao Monarch and Fierce Blade. There would be much more if they didn't lose a lot of men in the fights.

Each of the three factions had thousands of Dao Origin Stage cultivators. After all, they were thousands of years old sects. Ye Xiao and Li Wuliang were just two unaided individuals!

The three factions could at least exhaust them to death by sending out their top-class cultivators one by one.

It was undoubtedly a practical battle scheme. People who fought Xiao Monarch and Fierce Blade in the wars were mostly level five or level six of Dao Origin Stage. They didn't send lots of dominant figures to the battle.

However, they could surely defeat the dominant figures like Xiao Monarch and Fierce Blade as long as they send a group of top-class cultivators to lead a massive amount of ordinary disciples to fight.

After all, they had a long history to learn from!

One or two talented men's gifted power was never enough to catch up with it!

Now that Ye Xiao had Shuang and Han, the two dominant figures, if he could make Cold Moon Palace his ally, which was very possible, it would be more promising. However, before everything began, the first thing he needed to do was to improve himself soon. That would bring a much bigger chance to win the war.

At least he couldn't be the weakest part of the team!

The only way to improve himself fast was to go to that place!

Nothing except that place could help him. Not even his supreme dan beads.

It was too slow to raise his cultivation level by taking supreme dan beads!

It had to be that place, Heaven's Terrace!

The three of them looked at each other. They all thought of it, but none of them wanted to say it.

"I guess you two are also thinking about the same idea as me. Heaven's Terrace!" Ye Xiao blandly said.

"No! You can't go there!" The two ladies strongly opposed to it. They kept shaking their heads and said, "It is too dangerous!"

"What else do you have, except going to Heaven's Terrace, to boost my cultivation?" Ye Xiao calmly said, "Things will definitely go wrong if I keep wasting time. I guess it won't be too long before my true identity gets exposed."

The two ladies frowned and shook their heads. "No way! Even if you are going to be exposed, you can't go to that place knowing how dangerous it will be. You have the two of us here protecting you. You get exposed, so what?"

"It may be difficult to defeat you both at the same time. However,

it won't be too difficult to defeat you one after the other," Ye Xiao spoke in a deep voice.

"No! It is not a positive situation. I get it. But we still have a chance to win. Do you understand what it means to go to Heaven's Terrace? It is a place where most of the cultivators died when they were seeking for enhancement!" Yue Shuang kept shaking her head, with her hair waving like water. "There are too few people who have succeeded in that place!"

"But... there is no other place in Qing-Yun Realm that can bring me up to my prime in a short time!"

Ye Xiao blandly said, "Do you... Do you want me to take revenge after I spend hundreds of years to restore my power?"

Hundreds of years?

Yue Shuang and Yue Han lowered their heads, twisted their mouth, and grumbled.

He had reach level one of Dao Origin Stage after only a few years. That was incredibly fast. However, if he wanted to reach the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage, it would take him several hundred more years!

That seemed to be unacceptably long.

It was long enough for a man to forget many things.

It was a struggle for the two ladies.

Heaven's Terrace was too dangerous after all.

"I insist on going to Heaven's Terrace because I have two powerful aids. With the two supports, I am sure I can reach Heaven's Terrace and come back safely, whether I can succeed or not," Ye Xiao slowly said.

"What are the two aids?" Yue Shuang and Yue Han were surprised.

"A hawk and a cat," Ye Xiao calmly said.

The two ladies were awkwardly speechless instead of surprised.

They had seen the golden hawk.

[That hawk is definitely the best ride to get away from a battle. That cat is fast too, but we don't know what else it is capable of. Since brother spoke of the two animals at the same time, the cat must be equally capable. It does give him a bigger chance to return to safety!]

[Well... it should be...]

[But it is still dangerous!]

[Every one of the countless cultivators who got themselves killed in Heaven's Terrace in the history was fully prepared. They were all so confident before they went there, weren't they?]

[People only understand the horror after they are going to go through it! There is no perfect preparation!]

[One mistake, and there comes the death!]

The ladies sighed.

They both regret that they didn't raise themselves to the same height as Wu Fa and Xuan Bing in cultivation. If each of them could be powerful enough to dominate the world, their brother might not have to go to Heaven's Terrace and take that risk!

Yue Shuang thought for a while and said, "Brother, you know how dangerous it is in that place, but you insist on going. I can't stop you. I just want to ask, how much do you really know about Heaven's Terrace?"

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and touched his jaw. "Well, you got me. What I know is that there is a unique fruit, Yin Yang Fruit. Whoever in Dao Origin Stage could be boosted to the peak of level nine instantly when he or she eats the fruit. It is a purely positive effect. There will be no side effects. It won't leave any hidden threat inside one's body. Aside from this, I know as much as

everybody does about that place."

The two ladies held their foreheads... They were awkwardly speechless indeed.

"According to the record of our sect, Heaven's Terrace first appeared over ten thousand years ago. When it first appeared, countless people died because of it... Countless..."

...

Chapter 1155: Divine Yin Yang Fruits!

Yue Shuang thoughtfully said, "The highest moment in Qing-Yun Realm in the old days, Severing Sky Peak, suddenly broke in the middle. It shook the world. The whole Qing-Yun Realm felt the shake. However, the real astonishment came after that. Countless streams of lights shot out from the peak and lit up the entire world."

"Such a miracle, such a beautiful scene, made all cultivators in the realm turn crazy. People who thought that there must be countless treasures in that place. News spread fast. People kept going to the mountain."

"Many of them started to kill each other on the way to the mountain because they wanted fewer people to go get the treasures. So many superior cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm died, for something uncertain, a conjecture."

"One month after that, it was returning to peace, because somebody sent back messages from the collapsed mountain. There was one treasure there, Divine Yin Yang Fruits."

"Divine Yin Yang Fruits was named with Yin and Yang for a reason. There are always two fruits together growing in the same strain. One is black while the other is red. Yin and Yang, live together, opposing each other. Divine, means whoever eats the fruits will become invincible!"

"Immediately!" Yue Shuang emphasized it.

"However, there was no such thing as free lunch. The fruits showed up from the void, suspending by a string of dark light. The dark string tied up the two fruits together. When people began to reach the fruits, they realized that the fruits were two baits. The dark light was the fishing line with the fishhook."

"It was not difficult to see through it. There must be somebody in

the upper realm or some other more intelligent level, who have created such a game to have fun. People like us are merely toys to those people. We are like fish for them to enjoy the fun!"

"When one was hooked, his or her physical body will become a pile of flesh and blood. The bones will break into pieces when they fell from the sky. The person's soul and spiritual qi will become a black ball. It would just disappear. Nobody knows where the soul goes. Anyway, that person is never going to be given a second chance!"

"How horribly dangerous!"

"After many people died on the hooks, almost all the people started to give up on it. Nobody knew what the fruits could do by then so nobody would like to put their lives in danger for the two fruits that they didn't know what they were. At that time, people call Divine Yin Yang Fruits, the Nether Fruits, because it pulls people to death!"

"However, decades after that, something happened, and the fruits were back to the public's sight!"

"In those years, the West Hall of the two great halls was merely an average-size sect. The best cultivator in their sect was only in level two of Dao Origin Stage, who was named Zong Yuankai!"

"Zong Yuankai was chased by his enemies. He was lost while he was anxious, and it turned out he went to where Heaven's Terrace was located. His enemies were still chasing him. He was going to get killed."

"That day, when lots of people were surrounding him, he held his breath and dashed to the Nether Fruits around him. Maybe he wanted to end his life, or maybe he was hoping the fruits could save his life. In the end, he got the fruits in his hand."

"In fact, when he got the fruit, he had already been stabbed several times. One of his legs had been chopped off. He was

bleeding really hard. When he grabbed the fruits, before he touched the floor, he swallowed the fruits immediately. That was when the miracle happened!"

"When the enemies, countless of superior cultivators were watching, Zong Yuenkai was instantly refreshed. Even a new leg grew out from where they cut him. The old leg was still bleeding on the floor."

"The next moment, the clouds started to roll drastically in the sky. The spiritual qi in the air around that place all started to rush to Zong Yuankai's body. Within one second, the amount of spiritual qi was so huge that it should be able to explode any cultivator in the world. However, Zong Yuankai was totally fine. He just took it all!"

"When he got down to the floor, a strange light shined upon his head and then became nine flowers. There is a saying; One who has nine cloudy flowers blossom on the head will be invincible in Qing-Yun Realm! Zong Yuankai actually reached the peak of level nine of Dao Origin Stage!"

"He has the power of a dominant cultivator, but his mindset was weaker than it. However, that was still some true power he had. He killed the enemies easily and then keeled and kowtowed to that hook before he left."

"He just went straight back and slaughtered along the road. He wiped out all the sects that were against him. After that, he named the sect of his, One Step West. What a fortune! The sect of his became a super force in Qing-Yun Realm after a thousand years. He had never stopped fighting against strong opponents. In the end, he fought against the East Hall and killed their Prime Master!"

"After that, he changed the sect's name to... West Hall of Qing-Yun Realm!"

"And it was in a higher position than East Hall!"

"It straightly became the No.1 sect in Qing-Yun Realm!"

"All cultivators bowed to West Hall! He was invincible!"

"The Nether Fruits naturally became the precious Divine Yin Yang Fruits!"

"That is the miracle of Divine Yin Yang Fruits!"

Yue Shuang felt thirsty after giving such a long speech. She grabbed the teacup and started to drink. When she drank up the tea, she raised up a hand to wipe the mouth with her sleeve. That didn't look like a lady. In the end, she took a long breath.

The two girls used to drink like this in front of their brother. They did everything that made them comfortable when they were with their brother. They would even burp.

That was good. That was life!

Ye Xiao looked at her and said, "What you said is mostly a story from the old days. I have heard pieces of it, just not as detailed as yours."

Yue Shuang said, "History is always written by the winner. However, people who participated in it have the right to tell the truth. Qiong-Hua Palace did. West Hall climbed up to the peak on Qiong-Hua Palace's shoulder. We have a detailed record of what happened."

Ye Xiao nodded. "I see."

...

Chapter 1156: It Gives Invincibility

"When Zong Yuankai got the fruits and became an invincible cultivator in the world, he was in the top of the highest level of Dao Origin Stage. Thousands of people saw it."

"The thousands of high-level cultivators of the realm witnessed it... It means the entire Qing-Yun Realm knew it!"

"The world was stirred up in an uproar all of a sudden."

"Everybody was talking about two things. First, the fruits made a person invincible! Second, Zong Yuankai had been slaughtering his way to the last of his enemies! He was invincible!"

"As he rose up step by step, Divine Ying Yang Fruits became something everybody would dream for!"

"Brother, think about it. Two small fruits literally built the most powerful sect in those years! How attractive! Who on earth could refuse such marvelous power?" Yue Shuang took a breath with a sigh.

Ye Xiao nodded slowly. He looked solemn.

"The entire Qing-Yun Realm was boiling. Cultivators were all crazy."

Yue Shuang took a deep breath and licked her lips, looking at Yue Han.

It was obvious. [It's your turn to talk.]

Yue Han took a heavy breath and started to talk slowly, "Since then, the fruit became the most popular topic in the entire realm! Only topic!"

"Too many cultivators went to get the fruits, but one by one, they got hooked. Their soul became something unknown and pulled up to whoever was pulling the strings."

"Each day, there were hundreds of cultivators got killed!"

"However, people just kept going to it. They just couldn't be stopped."

"Their eyes were red. Even though they knew it would kill them, they still kept rushing to the fruits. Tens of thousand Dao Origin Stage cultivators died in Heaven's Terrace in that year!"

"Even though so many people had died, Qing-Yun Realm was still boiling!"

"There were barely people who could turn away from the opportunity to become invincible in the realm!"

Yue Han paused and made a sigh.

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. It had been ten thousand years, but when he heard the story, he was boiling excited. That explained why those cultivators would be so crazy about it.

Who could truly stay calm when talking about something that could make anybody invincible?

Even though it was a big risk to take, people still wanted to try their lucks. Everybody wanted to be the lucky man. Everybody wanted to be the second Zong Yuankai, wanted to be invincible in the world!

"After that, one sect rose up. It was one of the eight great sects, Ling Xiao Sect. It was even more powerful than West Hall, which was under Zong Yuankai's control. Li Xiao Sect became the most powerful sect in the world, so it occupied the Heaven's Terrace. Nobody else was allowed to get near the place. Ling Xiao Sect was so dominant that the other seven sects didn't dare to offend, let alone those individual cultivators. However, it only lasted for one month. Lin Xiao Sect had tried lots of methods, sacrificed lots of good men, but failed to get even one fruit."

"At that moment, the people who put the baits must have noticed something... The fruits that appeared after that was strongly poisonous. It was emitting poison gas. Ling Xiao Sect's people all

died in the valley. Even their level nine Dao Origin Stage disciples couldn't survive the poison!"

"Whoever smelled that fruit were all dead!"

"A few of them were lucky. They started to run away when they just noticed there was poison in the air. When they returned to their sect, they were dying. All they could do was to tell others about what happened. Ling Xiao Sect didn't even have time to do anything before the dead bodies of the several men who came back from the valley started to emit poison gas too. The poison spread in their sect. Within one night, within three thousand miles, every living thing was dead! Over two hundred thousand people of Ling Xiao Sect died out! Not even a mouse could survive that tragedy!"

Yue Han looked at Ye Xiao and spoke word by word, "I guess you have heard of the place, Toxic Area, haven't you? The entire Qing-Yun Realm trembled for it. Brother, you know what, that used to be where Ling Xiao Sect based on. The eight great sects became seven after that!"

"That is how the Toxic Area was made! For thousands of years, nobody dares to step into that area!" Ye Xiao took a cold breath.

[What was that poison? How overwhelming! It was not only overwhelming but also infectious! It just never ended! It was such an incredible, unbelievable, and unimaginable poison.]

[The poison I used in Land of Han-Yang is entirely nothing comparing to this incredible poison!]

"The poison in the Toxic Area was not the strongest. The source of the poison in Heaven's Terrace must be even more frightening. People in Qing-Yun Realm had given up on chasing after the fruits because of the poison. However, a few days later, it returned to usual. There was no poison in the air at all. Some cultivators were overjoyed when they knew it. They hurriedly entered the place and confirmed it was clean!"

"After that, people all understood there was something not allowed in Heaven's Terrace. Maybe it is the rule that is made by the fishers upon us. Nobody dared to forcibly occupy the entire Heaven's Terrace ever since! It became the most peaceful place in Qing-Yun Realm, but also the most deadly one."

Yue Han looked at Ye Xiao and slowly said.

Ye Xiao made a sigh.

"It had been a thousand years, and nobody had been lucky enough to get the fruits when people started to give up on it. They started to believe Zong Yuankai was just a lucky man and such luck wouldn't get on a second man. Less and fewer people went to Heaven's Terrace year after year. One day, somebody was lucky enough to get the fruits again!"

"What? Who was it?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

...

Chapter 1157: I Have Been There Before!

"The man didn't leave his name to us. All we know is that he once did it. Maybe he used up his good luck right after he grabbed the fruits. Maybe he was too excited, or maybe he couldn't believe what happened to him. He was stunned for a moment. He was only able to put one of the fruits, Yang Fruit into his mouth."

"The other fruit, the Yin Fruit was hit away by somebody else. After some tough fights, another person ate the Yin Fruit. However, neither of the fruits changed the two men in any way. Soon, the two of them got beaten to death."

"After that, people finally understood the fruits should be eaten together."

"Only after eating both of the two fruits should a person become invincible!"

"The miracle didn't bring the man to invincibility, but it was a great inspiration that somebody successfully took the fruits again. People's greediness was aroused again."

"After that, Heaven's Terrace became popular for other hundreds of years. Many cultivators went there for invincibility, but ended up dead!"

"Thousands year later, it was cooling down again. Suddenly, one man took the fruits again. However, it was a man in a mask on his face. Nobody knew who he was... After he took the fruits, he left. It would be quite ordinary if he just masked his face. Lots of people would do that. Nobody wanted to be noticed when getting approach to the fruits. However, what was astonishing was that nobody was able to catch up with that man, even though there were so many powerful cultivators chasing after him! Besides, that man didn't eat the fruits when he got them!"

"That was another stimulation. The entire realm fell into

madness again. People kept going to risk their lives for it again. Opportunity only favors the few. Nobody ever succeeded after that. Countless Dao Origin Stage cultivators died in that place. Unexpectedly, another lucky man showed up not long after that... One mother later, another man in mask got the fruits!"

"The second masked guy made his attempt just like the others did. He jumped up and reached his hand to the fruits, risking his life. However, unlike the others, he easily grabbed the two fruits and swallowed it fast. That wonderful scene happened in Qing-Yun Realm again. That man became another invincible figure in Qing-Yun Realm, just as the story told!"

"When everything was done, and the marvelous scene was gone, that man laughed loudly, ignored the others, and left."

"Brother, you know who he is, don't you?" Yue Han looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was lost in the story, so he automatically answered, "Who?"

He wanted to slap himself because of being stupid.

He knew who he was.

"Wu Fa!" Yue Han smiled, "The man who has been enjoying the fame as the No.1 cultivator in the realm, Wu Fa!"

The three of them stayed silent all of a sudden.

"Wu Fa is indeed powerful, but he is, after all, a normal cultivator, unlike the man who took the fruits before him. Nobody knew anything about that man. Nobody knew whether he had eaten the fruits. It seems he has never shown up in Qing-Yun Realm ever after... He has been traceless and silent."

"The first and the last, two invincible cultivators were created by the fruits! Qing-Yun Realm was in ultimate chaos because of it!"

"After Wu Fa, people kept going to Heaven's Terrace for the

fruits. Even though nobody has ever gotten it in the thousands of years."

"Heaven's terrace..." Ye Xiao made a long sigh, "It takes only one second for a man to become a legend... Who could turn away from such attraction?"

"That's true. Cultivators are all crazy for it. If there is no restriction of cultivation levels, it will be crowded every minute by cultivators below Dao Origin Stage!"

Yue Shuang sighed.

"It has been thousands of years since Wu Fa got the fruits. All sects forbid their disciples to go to Heaven's Terrace! It is a daydream to reach the heaven by one step! Only to spend time and sweats step by step is the best way toward invincibility!"

"What a shame... Such warnings don't work. Every day, cultivators, many of who were raised by the sects with great efforts, will go to Heaven's Terrace when they reached Dao Origin Stage. Many people just cultivate around Heaven's Terrace! Somebody lived there for decades, even hundreds of years!"

"Heaven's Terrace! Heaven's Terrace! What price invincibility takes? Mountains of bones below the terrace; blood flew into rivers! Rotten bones fly up in the wind, which belong to all those geniuses!"

Yue Han put an end to the narrative with doggerel.

Ye Xiao made a sigh and said, "Rotten bones fly up in the wind, which belong to all those geniuses!"

Yue Shuang stroke when the iron was hot. "Brother, you know the horror in it. Otherwise, you would have gone to Heaven's Terrace in the previous life! Don't tell me you never think about taking the fruits. I know you are cautious, but I don't think you haven't even thought about it!"

"What we are talking here may be old sayings, but... we truly

don't want you to go there!" Yue Han said. He looked at Ye Xiao in the eyes. She uncommonly looked solemn in front of her elder brother.

"Heaven's Terrace... I did more than just thinking about it... In fact, I have been there before!" Ye Xiao took a long breath and said, "However, I... I saw seven people, who were all stronger than me, get killed by that string... losing their souls... I was frightened. It enlightened me that I should give up on it. So I quit. After that, I kept working hard in cultivation, and decided to forget about everything about Heaven's Terrace!"

The two ladies looked at him at the same time with softness and surprise.

[Brother has been there? And you successfully resisted the temptation?]

...

Chapter 1158: Evil!

"It's a shame. Since then, I always feel there is something wrong in my true heart." Ye Xiao smiled bitterly, "I did improve fast, but every time when I broke through to a new level, I felt choked. The feeling comes from deep inside my true heart."

"Every time when I felt it, understood that when I quit attempting the fruits, I didn't feel enlightened..."

"I felt fear."

"I just felt the pure horror in Heaven's Terrace that day!"

"That is the reason why I stopped at the top of level nine. I couldn't get any progress after that. I never had the chance to enter the Tittle Phase!"

Ye Xiao took a long breath and said, "For so many years, that fear has always been hiding inside my heart!"

"Even though I have experienced death, even though I have gained greater opportunity in this life, even though I may go further and higher than what I achieved in the previous life, the fear... will always be a flaw of me!"

Ye Xiao looked casual, spoke peacefully, but showed a little bitterness in his eyes.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han looked at each other. They were both wordless.

They were all experts in cultivation. They all had reached the same level. The feeling that Ye Xiao was telling them wasn't strange to them!

That fear... The stagnation of cultivation... It was evil in the heart!

Once the evil appeared, it would always stay!

If they couldn't defeat the evil, they would stop progressing, just

as Ye Xiao said. If things went worse, they might get reverse impact by the evilness and degenerate... It could even put their lives at risk!

The only way to keep away from the impact was to defeat the evil!

Ye Xiao's evil was from Heaven's Terrace, the dangerous area, the restricted place in Qing-Yun Realm!

Could he be that lucky?

"I am not a sole case after all. Heaven's Terrace has given almost everyone a dream, but one thing was undeniable." Ye Xiao sullenly said, "Whoever have been to Heaven's Terrace, whether dead or alive, have eternally lost their chance to reach the peak of cultivation once they failed to get the fruits!"

"We all have the same evil in the heart!"

"Not just me. Li Wuliang is the same. Wuliang and I both had reached the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage, yet we were still unable to rival Xuan Bing or Wu Fa. Why?"

"I am an individual cultivator. I don't have the support of a great sect. I barely know anything about the phases beyond level nine! But this is not the main reason!" Ye Xiao said, "The main reason is that... I have been to Heaven's Terrace!"

"Wu Fa went to Heaven's Terrace too, but he got the fruits! Xuan Bing has never been to that place. She has been concentrated in Ling Xiao Ice Art of Misty Cloud Place! She believes she can make it to the peak of Dao Origin Stage by herself, without the power from Heaven's Terrace!"

"For me, Xuan Bing will sooner or later become the most powerful cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm!"

"Wu Fa became the best with the help of the fruits. That was luck after all! That luck from Heaven's Terrace will always be his evil in the heart!"

Ye Xiao spoke word by word, "Li Wuliang, Han Bingxue, Jun Yinglian, and I... We all have been to Heaven's Terrace!"

"If I can't defeat the evil, then even if we finally took revenge and killed the three factions, we will be still under the suppression of Xuan Bing, Wu Fa and others!"

"We will never have our opportunity to rise up to the top!"

"Not only me, but all you two, Lian Lian, Li Wuliang, Han Bingxue... We all will be suppressed and restrained."

"We may be some legendary figures in ordinary cultivators' eyes in Qing-Yun Realm, but we know it ourselves, that we are far lower than Wu Fa and Xuan Bing, even though people keep saying we are in the same league. It is like a difference between sky and earth!"

"In fact, even if we fight together against Xuan Bing or Wu Fa, we may still lose!"

Ye Xiao wasn't peaceful and calm anymore. He looked fierce. He gritted his teeth and said, "I don't want to live like that anymore!"

"I, Ye Xiao, have to laugh out loud upon all other heroes in this world! I must see the worlds casually! If I can't..." Ye Xiao sullenly said, "What is the point even if I am fully recovered?"

"As long as there are people suppressing you, staying upon you, you will never truly be free to travel the martial world!"

His eyes were in heat. At this moment, there seemed to be a flame burning inside his eyes.

He suddenly recollected those scenes.

The sword was tearing apart the firmament! The saber was overwhelming the world!

The flowers were covering the entire universe!

[That is the height I want to reach!] Ye Xiao talked to himself.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han both stayed quiet. They were both true

superior cultivators. How could they not understand how Ye Xiao felt?

They knew that Ye Xiao was being honest with them.

He meant every word he said.

Yue Han clicked her tongue and weakly said, "But... For me... As long as we stay together... safe and happy... I will be satisfied without being invincible in the world..."

Yue Shuang quickly nodded, "That's right! Brother, what do you say? It could also be a great achievement that we stay together forever!"

Ye Xiao looked at the two girls with his sentimental and soft eyes. He made a sigh slowly and said, "That's different, silly girl."

The two ladies lowered their heads sorrowfully but pouted.

"It's decided." Ye Xiao indisputably made an end to the conversation. "Tomorrow morning, you two take my father to Qiong-Hua Palace and take my mother home."

He looked at the two ladies and said, "I believe you can do it for me, can't you?"

The two girls didn't answer, just biting their lips.

"If you can't, or you don't want to, I won't bother you, elders of Qiong-Hua Palace. I will go by myself." Ye Xiao humphed and for the first time, he talked to them coldly.

The two girls were frightened. "Brother, please... Don't do this. We can do it! We definitely can!"

Their eyes were filled with tears. They said, "But we want to go to Heaven's Terrace with you... It is too dangerous..."

Ye Xiao glared at them and said, "Don't you dare! You have never been to that place. You haven't even thought of going, have you? You have your own paths to go into the world of cultivation, sisters. You will be some dominant figures that are powerful

enough to rival Xuan Bing and Wu Fa! You don't need the fruits. No matter what reason you think you have, don't go... Don't be pessimistic about it. I am living my second life. I have experienced the wonderfulness of living. I won't just give up on my life."

He looked into the distance and spoke gently, "Don't worry. If I am not certain, I will rather let the evil stay in my heart... I promise I will come back to you."

"Is it real?" The two ladies lip up their eyes.

"Absolutely!" Ye Xiao casually smiled, looking at the two ladies, who were still two silly little girls for him.

...

Chapter 1159: Set Out

Maybe the two ladies still remembered that their brother always went against his promises in the old days. The two of them immediately did one thing at the same time—ask for a pinky promise! The two ladies reached out their little fingers.

Two little fingers were pointing at Ye Xiao's nose at the same time.

"Hmm. Alright. Pinky swear." Ye Xiao reached out his two little fingers too.

Four little figures entwined each other.

After a while, Yue Shuang turned her back to Ye Xiao and sobbed, "Brother... If you die again... We will kill our way to the three factions and die fighting against them. We are not fortunate enough to be reborn on the same date, but we can die on the same date. If there is a god, it apparently doesn't want us to miss the chance, so it gave you a second life. We are not going to miss it again, are we?"

Ye Xiao was touched.

He realized the two girls didn't actually believe the promise he made. They just wanted to set his mind at rest. However, they made a promise that they would die along with him, that death could never split them apart!

Yue Shuang turned around to him and pretended to smile casually. "Relax, brother. We will accompany Uncle Ye to Qiong-Hua Palace and take your mom back home. It will be such a great disgrace if we fail to do such a small thing after staying in Qiong-Hua Palace for so many years."

Yue Han wiped her eyes and made a casual smile too. "It truly is just a piece of cake for the two of us. Don't worry, brother. When you come home, you will have a complete family!"

Ye Xiao warmly smiled and said, "Certainly! I never doubt it. I trust my sisters with all my heart."

The two ladies' eyes turned red. They softly got into his arms and held him. Yue Shuang murmured, "Brother... We have been expecting an opportunity to do something for you... This will be the first thing we do for you..."

Ye Xiao was touched and wordless.

Yue Han smiled with tears. "After all these years... We finally get to do something for you... I don't want this to be the last thing we do for you at the same time... We want to do more... a thousand, ten thousand..."

Then she started to sob and couldn't go on talking.

Ye Xiao tapped the two girls' backs and sighed. "Silly girls, don't worry..."

Don't worry?

The two ladies or Ye Xiao, none of them could truly stop worrying!

At the moment, they felt like they were back to the days when they were in that broken cottage when it was a snowy night with howling wind, and all they had was each other... It seemed like yesterday to them but also like centuries earlier.

Warmth rose up in their hearts.

They just kept holding each other quietly.

Time passed silently.

In the midnight, it suddenly snowed.

After a while, the world was covered by the silver snow.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han sensed the snow hitting the floor, so they left Ye Xiao's arms, walked to the window and slowly opened it.

As expected, the snowflakes were flying in the air. The howling wind blew some snowflakes into the room through the window.

It hit the two ladies' faces.

They were two powerful cultivators. Their automatic energy shield should block the snowflakes. However, they just quietly stood there and let the snowflakes hit themselves. The tears came out of the eyes and flew down the cheeks, clearing away the snow on their faces and leaving two lines of water stains.

The howling wind and the heavy snow were from their deeply buried memory, where they felt joy and happiness.

Ye Xiao slowly walked over to them, reached out his arms and held the two slim girls into his arms in the snow.

The heavy snow continued in the howling wind, blowing into the room just like the old days when the little beggar held his two sisters tight in his arms to keep them warm from the snow.

It was a night of silence!

...

The next morning.

Yue Shuang and Yue Han had gone to get Ye Nantian.

"We should go. We will keep our promise, take you to Qiong-Hua Palace and make your family reunite."

For Ye Nantian, that was the most beautiful thing somebody ever said to him. He was thrilled.

He was excited not only because he was about to see his beloved wife, but also the two ladies were finally going to leave Ye Clan. Unlike Ye Xiao, he didn't know that the two ladies were friendly. After all, there were too many influential figures already. Ye Nantian had never stopped worrying that the two ladies would start a fight to kill Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian for their dead brother!

Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian were such honorable cultivators. They would never escape...

That was not the point though. What bothered him most was that he couldn't choose a side. Zhan and Zhu were his son's brother disciples, and they had been fully supporting Ye Clan against Qiong-Hua Palace. They were both Ye Clan's true friends!

The two ladies were, however, the elders of Qiong-Hua Palace. Basically, Ye Clan should stay against them!

However, the two ladies were Xiao Monarch's sworn sisters at the same time. The reason the two ladies would start a fight against Zhan and Zhu, even Cold Moon Palace, was that they wanted to take revenge for their brother, Xiao Monarch. Xiao Monarch was a savior to Ye Nantian's entire family! Xiao Monarch's name even kept the two ladies from attacking Ye Clan! If Ye Nantian stood on Cold Moon Palace's side to fight against the two ladies, he would be as despicable as animals!

Ye Nantian could never do that!

Therefore, he honestly didn't know which side to choose if the two ladies started the battle!

That was why when he heard that the two ladies were leaving, he was so glad. After optionally packing up some stuff, he gave a few words to the elders in the clan and set out with the two ladies.

The only thing that upset him was that his son, Ye Xiao, made a big mistake at the critical moment. He seemed to be breaking through in cultivation. Ye Nantian took a look at him in his room and found that there was smoke rising up behind his head. Apparently, he was in the middle of something vital. It was going to take a long time for him to finish.

Besides, after he successfully broke it, he still needed time to strengthen it, which meant he couldn't go to Qiong-Hua Palace with them.

Ye Xiao couldn't go, yet Yue Shuang and Yue Han wouldn't wait. Ye Nantian had to go with them alone.

The golden hawk flew up and left in advance.

After Ye Nantian and the two ladies were gone, Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian couldn't endure staying for any longer. They told Ye Clan's people and then took a leave in a hurry.

However, one day after they all left, Ye Xiao set up a spiritual power array in his room and then left secretly. He went along the wind quietly out of Ye Clan's house and reached a place fifty miles away.

He made a shout and then a white shadow started to approach from a distance.

...

Chapter 1160: Golden Hawk's Nerves

Han Bingxue showed up, wearing his white clothes which were as white as snow. He looked casual and confident, but his face didn't look the same. He seemed to be upset about something.

He said with a bitter face, "It was killing me these days..."

Ye Xiao frowned and responded, "Cut the bullsh*t! Come on! Let's get on the serious matter!"

Then he turned over and left.

Han Bingxue was stunned by Ye Xiao's reaction. After a while, he started to feel angry. "Holy hell! You put me in the corner of nothing for all these days, yet you didn't even say a word to comfort me? Aren't you going too far? I know you are on some serious matters, but I am a serious matter too!"

Ye Xiao's voice sounded in the darkness of the night, "How the hell am I going too far? Listen to you! Stop talking like you are a little concubine to me! We are brothers. Restrain yourself. I am not interested in guys. And I am impossible to get bent. So just give up. How can you call yourself a serious matter when you are having such an idea to me?"

He kept talking and talking, giving no time for Han Bingxue to respond. Han Bingxue was numb. When he realized what Ye Xiao was exactly talking about, he felt so gross that he nearly puked out. - Pah! - He spat and cursed, and then ran ahead to catch up with Ye Xiao, who had been gone far.

After moving for a hundred miles, Ye Xiao made a shout to the sky again.

A small dot of golden light was fleeting in the night sky. After a while, a huge beast was descending from the sky. It was exactly the golden hawk.

When Shuang and Han left the other day, it flew away to cover

its identity. It had been hiding somewhere. After all, in ordinary people's recognition, a marvelous beast like it could only belong to some influential figures like the two ladies! It shouldn't belong to somebody like Ye Xiao after all!

That was why it didn't show up until Ye Xiao told it to.

Ye Xiao smiled and casually climbed up on the hawk's back.

"Holy heavens! Do you own this good golden hawk, boss? I thought it belonged to Shuang and Huang the two ladies... Hahaha..." Han Bingxue laughed excitedly, "This is going to be great. I haven't ridden a bird before in my entire life. Look at this. I am going to do it now..."

Then he quickly rode on the hawk.

"Ouch! Holy hell!" then he exclaimed and fell off the back of the golden hawk, holding his butt with his hands.

It turned out the hawk was pissed off by what he said. It didn't want him to ride on its back. - Puff! - It even stabbed Han Bingxue's butt with its beak and made a bloody hole in it.

Han Bingxue would never expect the hawk would attack him! After all, it looked so nice and gentle when Ye Xiao rode on it. The hawk was really fast. He didn't realize he got stabbed on the butt. When he felt sore and touched the blood, he finally realized it.

Han Bingxue's butt was bleeding, and that made him both angry and bashful. He started to swear, and his face was entirely red like a big piece of red paper!

Ye Xiao was delighted. He said, "Oh, Little Han, is it hemorrhoid in your ass torturing you?"

Han Bingxue was furious, "What a filthy feather animal... How dare you mess with me! That was a sneak attack... I have to punish you for that..."

Before he finished, a beam of golden light shined in his sight. It

was the hawk overwhelmingly fleeting over to him in the air.

Han Bingxue didn't step back a bit. He drew out the long sword and fiercely cut the hawk's wing! He wouldn't do it in full power because of Ye Xiao. He just wanted to give the bird a lesson, so he swung the sword in thirty percent power.

- Puff! -

The hawk looked disdainful. It cooed and then crashed on the sword directly like a huge mountain.

When two things crashed, the stronger one won. Han Bingxue was restraining himself while the hawk was doing it in full power. That decided the result. Han Bingxue's long sword didn't hurt the hawk a bit. Instead, the sword was hit back. The hawk didn't slow down when it hit the sword but continued to crash on Han Bingxue.

Even though he was a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator, he still got hit away when the hawk crashed on him. At this moment, he finally made an exclaim with surprise.

The hawk didn't stop after making a good strike. It actually started to move in its utmost speed and cracked a dark hole in the air. The next moment, it disappeared in that hole and appeared over Han Bingxue's head! Its beak accurately held Han Bingxue's hair up. It made a jolly hawk shout, rapidly swung its wings, and suddenly the golden light flashed.

It shot up to the sky like a shooting arrow with Han Bingxue in its mouth.

It carried Han Bingxue up to the sky and reached beyond the clouds, yet it didn't stop. It just kept going higher and faster!

Han Bingxue was terrified like his soul was going to leave his body!

He couldn't even dream of being into such a dangerous situation just because of something he boldly said.

They were tens of thousand meters away from the floor at the moment. When he looked down, all he could see were clouds and mist, nothing else!

It was fine if that was all he was experiencing. He was a top-class cultivator in the world after all. He was powerful enough to stay high in the sky. However, the problem was that he was in a weird position, being held by the hawk on his hair as if he was a kite flying in the sky...

The wind flows were so strong that he couldn't keep his eyes open. He was almost like a frozen ice stick.

He didn't dare to do anything reckless at the moment.

Maybe the hawk would just throw him off if he did anything that could surprise the hawk!

They were moving so fast and so high. If the hawk loosened its beak, he would fall out like an arrow leaving the bow!

He couldn't hold anything or do anything else to control his body while falling in the air. If there were a mountain in front of him, he would probably hit on it...

He felt extremely upset about what was happening to him, but there was nothing he could do.

"Boss..."

He forcibly opened his mouth trying to say something to Ye Xiao but was only able to say one word before his mouth was filled by the wind. All that came out from his mouth was babble.

Ye Xiao, who was sitting on the back of the hawk, didn't gloat or did anything mean. He certainly understood there was no time for playing. He had talked to the hawk through mind connection and said nice words about Han Bingxue.

However, the golden hawk just wouldn't listen...

Ye Xiao was helpless about it.

Han Bingxue had gotten on its nerves at the beginning.

'I haven't ridden a bird...'

That was such a humiliation to the hawk.

[Have you ever seen a bird that could possibly be as handsome, strong, beautiful, and imposing as I?]

[What the hell do you mean riding me? I am such a majestic and powerful golden hawk! Do you think you can ride me like I am a horse or something?]

The hawk had a lot of anger burning in its chest. It couldn't kill Han Bingxue since he was apparently a friend of Ye Xiao, so it decided to let him experience something different in the sky!

...

Chapter 1161: Arrival

The hawk kept holding Han Bingxue's hair in its beak, flying in its fastest speed, as it flew out seven thousand miles!

After Ye Xiao patiently convinced it, it finally landed on top of a mountain and dropped Han Bingxue.

However, the unique swordsman of the world, Frost Sword was in such a miserable situation that even Ye Xiao didn't like to see him being made fun of.

As they got back down to the floor, Han Bingxue's legs were frozen. He just fell down to the floor, and his hair was sticking backward pointing up at the sky... His hair was actually covered by frost.

His handsome face had turned iron-green. Even his lips were green. He started to talk while his lips and his arms were shaking, "B... Bo... Boss... I... I..."

Ye Xiao hurriedly fed him a supreme dan bead to recover his spiritual qi. After a while, he finally made it through. Then he started to shout loudly, "You asshole..."

"Coo, coo..." The hawk turned over and stared at him provokingly. [What did you say? Are you sure you want another round?]

Han Bingxue was stunned.

"I... I must..." He submitted and talked with a grievance, "I must be having awful luck... I got played by a human, a cat, a bird... I didn't do anything or hurt anybody, did I? ..."

He felt utterly grieved.

Ye Xiao made a long sigh and didn't tell him the reason.

[If he knows what the golden hawk doesn't like the most now...]

[That will lead to lots of big damn shows for sure!]

[It is not easy to see Han Bingxue like this...]

Ye Xiao didn't honestly want to help Han Bingxue, but he still pretended to be angry. He said to the hawk, "Look at what you have done. You scared the sh*t out of my brother!"

The hawk cooed. It was apparently saying, 'I didn't mean to... I didn't know he was such a coward... He is a powerful cultivator after all. How can he be so cowardly? It truly is hard to see a man from his face!'

"No! You can't do that!" Ye Xiao angrily said, "Try to be careful next time. Okay?"

Han Bingxue glared at Ye Xiao. [What the hell are you talking about? What do you mean next time? Are you going just to let it go just like this? That can't be more protective to your little hawk, can it? ...]

He pointed at Ye Xiao with a shaking finger, quivering, but then lowered his head with anger in the end.

[Forget it. I can't afford to mess up with either of them... I guess I can at least stay away from getting messed?]

Then he heard Ye Xiao talking to him through the mind connection. "The golden hawk... is too powerful. I don't dare to challenge it... It is not my pet or anything. We are just associates. That's all..."

Han Bingxue still couldn't entirely believe it.

After Ye Xiao talked to the hawk for a long time and promised to give it some dan beads, the hawk finally agreed to let Han Bingxue fly with them. However, it didn't allow him to sit on its back. He could only sit on its tail...

Therefore...

Han Bingxue kept holding the hawk's tail cautiously in an incredibly awkward posture for all the way along...

It was quite a long time after when Han Bingxue finally knew what he said provoked the golden hawk...

He even started a fight against Ye Xiao because of it...

Indeed, he got punched really hard by Ye Xiao in that fight...

Anyway, it was a very long time afterward.

Clouds were fleeting backward fast below them. Ye Xiao, Han Bingxue, the hawk, and the cat were over the peak of a mountain after moving fast for several days.

Ye Xiao looked down through the clouds.

What he saw was a huge mountain which appeared to be cut in the middle. The top of the mountain was flat and broad. On the other side of the top, there was a huge fissure.

That fissure was a strange valley.

The valley was about a hundred meters wide, with the straight cliff walls on both sides.

There were a lot of people crowding on the mountain. They were like countless ants crowding on the top of the mountain.

"Let's get down."

Ye Xiao made a decision. He casually took out a mask and put it on his face.

"Go around there and stay on the back. I will go straight from the front. Hawky, stay hidden somewhere nearby and wait. Erhuo, follow me." He didn't hesitate and just gave orders to everybody. After that, the hawk found a covert valley nearby after hovering for a while. Then it flew down to it.

Han Bingxue got the order. The order was like the most beautiful music for him. When they were about one thousand meters high from the floor, he jumped off in advance with his white clothes flicking the air. He rushed into a piece of forest on the top of the mountain as if he was a fugitive.

Soon he disappeared.

Ye Xiao jumped off the hawk after him, with the little cat on his shoulder. He just went straight to the crowded area. That was exactly where everybody loved and hated at the same time.

It was where people could reach the top immediately, but also a place they could die instantly!

Heaven's Terrace!

How many roads were there that led to Heaven's Terrace? Nobody knew the answer. Nobody, no matter how long had they stayed around this place for, knew the answer. Countless must be the best answer they could think of.

Hundreds of roads around this place all could lead to Heaven's Terrace.

Ye Xiao descended from the sky, clearly looking at the people who were moving fast to the top of the mountain. Everybody seemed anxious but hopeful at the same time. It felt a bit sad, but also a bit exciting.

That was not rare. People who came to this place, no matter what he was after, would end up either of the two possible ways. One was to be invincible in the world, while the second was to die!

Opportunity and danger both awaited!

Success and failure took the same price!

It was fair!

Whoever got it would get all; whoever didn't would lose all!

As simple as that. That was the fact.

The only thing Ye Xiao could do was to be brave and march ahead. There was no need for hesitation. He knew it. He didn't hesitate and just chose a way to go up.

On the way to the top of the mountain, he kept hearing people

talking with excitement and fear at the same time.

"Have you heard? Cang Lan Sect, Li Yundi, got hooked."

"Li Yundi? What... The genius of Cang Lan Sect who reached level two of Dao Origin Stage when he was younger than thirty?"

"That's right. That's him. He was so confident, arrogant as if the fruits belonged to him. That's what I heard. Well, we know what truly belonged to him... Ha..."

"Gosh... Confidence doesn't get you the fruits. If confidence does help, there will be countless invincible figures in Qing-Yun Realm..."

"Let's not talk about others. Now, after we get up there, let's just observe for a while. Do not take any reckless moves before everything is assured. Life is important. You only talk about the future when you are alive."

"Absolutely."

...

Chapter 1162: A Pitfall of Divine Fruits

Ye Xiao kept walking upward silently, listening to people talking. He suddenly felt that everything was so close but so far away but at the same time, as if things had happened in the last day but also felt like centuries earlier.

Every year, every day, people talked the same, and thought the same when they were heading to Heaven's Terrace.

Everybody was smart, intelligent, cautious, and thoughtful!

However, when they got to the top, their eyes would turn red.

Nobody cared about a damn thing about the future, life, or others. What mattered to them was the moment! Only the present!

When the shadowless string showed up with two fruits hanging on it, everybody's eyes turned red...

People had thought about cutting the string. In fact, people had tried countless weird ways to get the fruits. However, even a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator waving a sharp divine sword to cut it, the sword would bound away when it touched the string. It was just like an ant hitting a big tree.

When the sword bounded away, a bolt of lightning would appear.

When the lightning appeared, people could see the shadowless string was colorful.

The lightning would strike on the person who tried to cut the string. No matter who that person was, how powerful he or she was, he or she would become a pile of ashes.

Both the soul and the body were destroyed!

Forever gone in the world!

As time went by, nobody dared to touch that string ever again. It was taboo in the world.

Ye Xiao finally stepped on the destination, Heaven's Terrace. His mind was full of different weird stories about this place.

Heaven's Terrace was a broad platform, which was a million meters wide. It was like a huge mirror. There was not even a tiny piece of rock on the floor.

It was a huge mountain that had been cut off the upper half over ten thousand years earlier. However, nothing grew on the cut section!

However, in the middle of the platform, there was a small lake. That might be something strange. Even though it was a small lake, it was actually about a thousand meters wide. People crowded around the lake as if they were watching something...

The platform was crowded with people who were all looking at the same place.

On the right of Heaven's Terrace, there was a range of mountains which covered the sunlight that should have shined upon the platform.

Between those mountains and Heaven's Terrace, there was a cliff. The cliff wasn't deep, but it was filled with undying fog.

Two fruits were hanging in the air like magic about seventy meters high from the platform, one of which was black, while the other was red!

Frost kept appearing on the surface of the black one. It kept emitting cold qi. The red one was shining with a red glow, slowly melting the frost on the black fruit.

The frost couldn't cover the black fruit wholly. However, the red fruit's glow couldn't melt all the frost on the black fruit.

People kept staring at the two fruits with greediness in their eyes. They kept swallowing.

Those were Divine Yin Yang Fruits. They just appeared like that,

in the air, attracting everybody's attention!

Ye Xiao stepped on the platform and started to look at the two fruits too.

His pupils shrunk.

When he looked at the fruits, many people noticed him.

Many people didn't realize there was a new man since they were too concentrated on the fruits. Those who noticed him just turned their head away after a glance to continue looking at the fruits.

[Another man... so what?]

[It is probably another man who will die soon...]

Strangers were the last thing this place lacked!

For people in this place, everybody was a stranger except themselves!

Suddenly, the crowd turned silent. Everybody was holding their breath.

A shadow dashed over to the sky.

He was aiming at the fruits!

Ye Xiao's pupils shrunk again! He kept staring at the shadow.

It was moving so fast that there were clapping sound around on its way to the fruits. That man was apparently much faster than Ye Xiao at the moment.

In other words, that man was at least better than him in moving skill!

Divine Yin Yang Fruits were right there. No matter what people did, they were hanging there!

The shadow fleeted over and grabbed the two fruits with one hand...

The hand was so close to grabbing the fruits!

It touched the fruits!

At this moment, the fruits abruptly shot up!

Maybe it was more appropriate to say it was abruptly pulled up! There seemed to be a mighty hand pulling the string!

There sounded a deplorable exclamation!

That man's body stopped in the air. Suddenly, bursting sounds came from everywhere of his body. He was painfully struggling and convulsing, but neither helped.

Suddenly, it was becoming smaller and smaller. In the end, it became a dark object in the same size as a human fist...

The two fruits were gone.

There was only that dark object in the sky that suddenly rushed up to the sky. It suddenly disappeared after that, as if it had gotten into the void.

People kept staring at what had happened. They even forgot to breathe.

Nobody among the tens of thousands of people ever breathed while it was happening.

After a long time...

Something shined with a glaring light in the sky.

Another two fruits showed up.

One red, the other black; one ice, the other fire. Two fruits!

Divine Yin Yang Fruits.

The two fruits were quietly hanging there again.

The sun shined upon the Yang Fruit, and people could see the shadow of an almost-transparent hook inside the fruit.

That Dao Origin Stage cultivator who had rushed over to the fruits had eternally gone.

The crowd remained silent.

Everybody felt like they got punched really hard on the chest!

A Dao Origin Stage cultivator was gone within the time of a snap!

It was not the first time for many of these men to see the same scene, but when they saw it again, they still got shocked. They just had a feeling as if they were the one who got hooked. No matter how many times they watched others die in the same way, they never got numbed!

...

Chapter 1163: Fishing?

Ye Xiao lightly sighed, turned around, and walked to the small lake in the center of this place.

The lake was the only unusual place on the colossal Heaven's Terrace apart from where the fruits were located!

Maybe there was another man who died trying to get the fruits. Many people moved to the cliff from around the lake. The lakefront was crowded but then became empty.

Ye Xiao casually walked to the lakefront, looked at the water in the lake, and was lost in thoughts for a while. He then took out a fishing rod, tied the string, put on the bait, and swung it to the lake.

He just sat there quietly waiting.

There were hundreds of people who were just like Ye Xiao, quietly fishing.

Countless others just stood around to watch them fish.

Some of them didn't have the courage or didn't make up their minds yet to get the fruits, while the others just didn't want to leave with nothing. They didn't have anything else to do, so they just crowded over to watch people fish, even though they wouldn't do it themselves. It was at least not wasting time in doing nothing!

The men who were fishing kept making sighs.

The water was waving. From time to time, people raised their hands to drag a fish out of the water. The fish would struggle in the air.

People who got the fish didn't seem to be happy. They would sigh, then take the fish off the hook, and throw it back to the lake.

People who were watching would make a sigh after that.

"It's the same thing... Fishing..." Somebody murmured, "These

fish are lucky. Even if they got hooked, they would be set free immediately... However, the one who was holding the fishing pole upon us... never shows such kindness to us. No one was spared..." It was a white-bearded old man who was talking. His face was full of wrinkles. He looked suffering.

People heard him and nodded. However, all they could do was to make a sentimental sigh.

Ye Xiao held the fishing pole and didn't move a bit. He was just like a statue.

In fact, it was turbulent inside his heart.

Fishing!

That was right, he was fishing.

Not long after Heaven's Terrace appeared, a few level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators together made this lake on the platform and brought lots of fish from thousands of miles away.

They put lots of fishing poles on the lakefront.

What they did was try to warn people that this opportunity of being invincible was simply a trap!

What was happening was a superior cultivator in a stronger realm fishing!

Divine Yin Yang Fruits were the bait!

Whoever made an attempt to get the fruits would most likely die!

These level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators had officially warned the public, that Zong Yuankai was an unduplicated miracle, and what happened to him might be designed to attract more people to go and get the fruits! It was a lure!

However, people barely believed these cultivators. Instead, they suspected that these cultivators were trying to scare others away because they didn't want anybody to be stronger than them!

In the end, this lake became a place where people killed their time on the platform!

Ye Xiao's eyes looked profound. He looked calm as if he was looking in the distance of the void, not the lake.

Every one of the people on the platform was a high-level cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm. Even though not the top-class ones, they were at least powerful enough to dominate a particular area!

In the Land of Han-Yang, these people would be worshipped as gods.

However, in this place, they were merely a bunch of fish.

They were just a group of fish who were crowding to get hooked!

They were a bunch of stupid fish who knew it was nearly impossible to get invincibility, yet they still kept approaching the baits!

Stupid fools!

No matter how kindly people kept warning them, they could only see the fruits right there hanging upon their heads.

As long as there was hope, there were people that kept going to get themselves killed!

It was not a conspiracy. It was an open trap!

Whoever was fishing, he didn't mind if the fish knew he was fishing!

They were confident... Even though people knew it was a sugar-coated poison bead, they still wanted to eat it!

Even though they all knew they were most likely going to die if they took the bait, yet they still fought for it! They just had to try!

They were eager to know whether they were the one lucky man out of billions!

Ye Xiao held the fishing pole and felt that a fish was taking the

bait. The buoy had been dragged down the water. He raised his hand, and a big fish bounded out the water.

Ye Xiao was enlightened.

They were trying to catch the fish in the lake, but whoever sat beyond this world fishing was trying to catch them...

What would the fish think?

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He suddenly threw the fishing pole away and jumped into the lake.

He was like a big fish that rushed into the water.

He abruptly jumped into the water, which made big waves on the lake. However, people just glanced over and blandly continued fishing. They were indifferent about such things.

Ye Xiao dived deep to the bottom of the lake.

When he saw what was happening in the water, he realized he was not the only one who came up with an idea to observe the fish.

There were many people staying under the water, staring at the fish, waiting in the dark.

They were like a part of the water. None of them alerted the fish in any way.

Ye Xiao slowly moved to a bait that came from upon the water. He hid in a regiment of aquatic plants, waiting for what happened next.

After a while, he saw a group of fish swim over to the bait.

When the fish saw the bait, they burst into an uproar. They stopped around the bait.

Ye Xiao could see that in these fish's eyes, there were greediness, longing, fear, and alarm!

However, they just didn't leave.

They just kept looking at the bait.

The fish had been living in this place for a long time. People kept catching the fish in the lake again and again. They always set them back in the water after they caught the fish. Therefore, many of the fish had been hooked for more than one time...

That was why the fish were all so clever because they had been caught.

However, no matter how clever they were, they just couldn't resist the bait. They would still swim over to it when they saw it...

A fish swam over and touched the bait with its tail. The bait was shaken so that the buoy must be flicking the water at the same time. As expected, that bait was pulled out of the water fast. - Shoot! -

The fish immediately spread out like a bunch of terrified birds.

...

Chapter 1164: Fish? Men? Ants!

The fish didn't swim away far. Among the dozens of fish, only a few truly swam away and left the group.

Most of the fish stayed after being alerted. They just kept swimming around, as if they were waiting for something. After a while, they all looked at the spot where the bait had been hanging. They just didn't want to leave.

Apparently, they knew how dangerous it was, but they still wanted to eat the bait. They couldn't even leave.

Ye Xiao sighed when he saw it.

The greedy fish were exactly like the people who were crowding in Heaven's Terrace, having the same look in the eyes!

They knew what it might cost to take the bait, they knew they might die for it, yet they still kept scrambling for it!

After a while, with a sound of something dropping into water, another bait came down again. It wasn't at the exact spot this time, but quite close.

The fish was swimming over the bait and hesitating for a while, and then swam slowly to the bait in the end...

Some just kept moving around the bait; some used their tails to touch it... some even hit the bait with their heads...

However, no matter what they did, they did it gently. Apparently, they had the lesson of some fish being caught...

The man who was holding the bait was calm and steady. No matter how the fish kept touching the bait in different ways, he just stayed still. No matter what, he just wouldn't pull the string.

After a while, a big fish seemed to be sure that there was no danger anymore, so it rushed over and bit the bait with its big mouth...

However, when it took the bait, the string was tensed. The hook tightly held its mouth. The big fish painfully twisted itself, trying to get away, but it only got itself pulled up by the string soon...

It was impossible for the fish to fight the power of the fisherman!

The group of fish started to spread out in panic again. This time, they all went far away. They even stirred up the dust on the bottom of the lake. The water became blurred...

When the water became clear again, another bait was hanging right there, waiting for the next fish to fail in resisting the lure...

The fish gathered together again, moving around the bait... They were more cautious now, but still couldn't truly leave this spot...

It seemed there were more fish in this group now...

Apparently, some new fish joined them...

Ye Xiao quietly observed everything, watching the fish go away and gather up again. He watched them blur the water, touch the bait, bite the bait, get hooked, spread out again, and gather up again... Another fish got caught...

Again and again, it was a loop. Everything repeated...

Ye Xiao showed a bitter smile.

[Fish?]

[Men?]

[What is the difference?]

[What is to be hooked? And who is fishing?]

[Maybe... in the eyes of the man who put down the fruits... we are just like these fish... Aren't we?]

[Are we just a dish?]

[That's all!]

[Before coming to Heaven's Terrace, one will never realize how

insignificant we are; nor will one know what we are in the real powerful people's eyes.] Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts while staying under the water.

He felt... furious.

[What does he want? Nobody knows how far he is from us.]

[What does he treat us as?]

[Does he see us as a bunch of stupid fish with only greediness?]

He was touched. Suddenly, he was like a fallen leaf, flowing up in the water.

He did it out of his instinct. Even the small fish around him didn't notice there was something not belonging to this environment. After a while, he had risen up to the surface of the water. - Puff! - He left the water and stood back on the lakefront.

He looked down to watch the clear water again, while his mind was deep in thoughts.

[Who knows how many fish are there in the water?]

[Who knows how many cultivators are there in Qing-Yun Realm?]

[There is the Land of Han-Yang below Qing-Yun Realm. People in Qing-Yun Realm see those in the Land of Han-Yang as ants.]

[That's right. Ants.]

[They look down arrogantly from a much higher position to the lower depths.]

[The wars between kingdoms, between different forces... are merely jokes in Qing-Yun Realm people's eyes. One after another. It is a loop. Everything is the same!]

[However, there was Human Realm Upon Heavens beyond Qing-Yun Realm.]

[Those who live in Human Realm Upon Heavens, how do they see

us as?]

[What does it mean?]

[Do they look down upon us arrogantly in just the same way?]

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes. Suddenly, he raised his head up, looking into the void with a pair of cold eyes.

[Is there a stronger world beyond Human Realm Upon Heavens?]

[When you treat people like fish, are there anybody treating you as another fish? Or an ant?]

...

A white shadow with white clothes flicking the air showed up.

A mass of cold qi showed up in Heaven's Terrace!

Frost Sword Han Bingxue!

The Unique of the World!

He naturally showed up with his real face.

The unique flow of the Frost Sword.

However, no matter how famous he was, those men in this place just took a look at him. That was all.

He was Han Bingxue. So what?

Nobody among these men could defeat him. However, no matter how dominant he was, he might not be able to get the fruits!

He would probably die, just like the others, if he dared to grab the fruits!

Countless level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators died in this place!

Han Bingxue showed and pretended that he knew nobody in this place. He walked straight ahead arrogantly just like usual. Wherever he walked to, people stepped aside to make way to him.

Even though everybody knew that most people would die

attempting to get the fruits, they still didn't dare to mess with people like Han Bingxue.

After all, he might not be able to get the fruits, but he could quickly kill them all before he tried.

Even though they knew he was just like a dead man, they wouldn't take the risk to get themselves killed, also to get beaten before touching the fruits!

[We... We shall not fight a man who is going to die!]

...

Chapter 1165: Erhuo Moved!

People around Han Bingxue all had the same thought about him!

Han Bingxue walked ahead like he was made from ice and snow with an emotionless face. When he saw Ye Xiao, he was like looking at a rock or a tree. He was indifferent.

Ye Xiao knew how Han Bingxue would show up pretentiously, so he wasn't surprised. He secretly twisted his mouth and then followed Han Bingxue.

Since his brother had stepped on the road to danger, how could he not follow up?

However, he felt something wrong when he started to walk. It seemed something was missing.

He looked around and checked the Boundless Space, then he finally realized it.

[Where is Erhuo?]

Erhuo, who had been staying on his shoulder, was now missing!

[Holy hell! Where is it?]

The lake was full of fish. It might be a lure to Erhuo. However, the fish in that lake were all ordinary. Erhuo had a strict taste of food now, so it wouldn't be interested in those cheap fish!

However, where did it go then?

Did it want to try something raw after eating too many good stuff?

...

At the moment, in front of the crowd, people were watching at the fruits in the air. Nobody noticed that there was a white furry little thing on the floor.

Erhuo!

It stood before the cliff, staring at the fruits in the sky with its big cute eyes. It looked particularly greedy in the eyes.

It kept moving its two little paws, half-closed its eyes, and curled up its back slowly...

Apparently, the cat didn't want anything raw. Instead, it wanted something even more exclusive!

Nobody knew how the Divine Yin Yang Fruits tasted, but it must be excellent. Erhuo wouldn't doubt it!

It might not be the best taste, but absolutely the best quality!

Before everybody noticed, a white shadow, like a white horse in the air, rushed out to the sky! - Shoot! -

Then it just disappeared before anybody could see it clearly!

The fruits were gone! The Divine Yin Yang Fruits were strangely gone! There were only a pair of fishhooks in the air, which were black but also transparent at the same time... That was weird and creepy...

The hooks were just hanging in the air weirdly.

This must be the first time people saw the horrible hooks inside the fruits!

However, nobody was paying attention to the hooks!

"Hmm... Well... Guys... Something is wrong...."

"Oh, my heavens... Where are the fruits?"

"Who was it?"

"Who could be so fast? How was it possible?"

"I didn't see it!"

"I thought I had a vision or something... The fruits are just gone..."

"There is going to be another invincible figure in the martial

world..."

"Who on earth is it?"

"Was Wu Fa here? Did he do it?"

"Fast! That was too fast!"

Everybody was exclaiming, suspecting, looking around, trying to find that white shadow. However, nobody did. Erhuo was faster than any cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm. It could literally look down upon all superior cultivators. It was at the fastest speed when it went out for the fruits. How could these people possibly see it?

However, the uproar was getting big.

No matter who took the fruits, how powerful the person was, somebody got the fruits again after all!

That made the eyes of lots of people turn red!

[Somebody did it again! Why couldn't I be the lucky one?]

[I should be the main character!]

...

On the other side.

Ye Xiao suddenly noticed two Divine Yin Yang Fruits in the Boundless Space, which showed up just like magic. He immediately widely opened his eyes!

[Holy sh*t!]

He nearly said it out!

[Where the hell did they come from?]

[It is a less than one of a billion chance for anybody to get the fruits. How on earth... did they just show up in my space from nothing?]

Erhuo was combing its furs casually and slowly. It looked

gloating and jaunty.

"Erhuo, did you get these? It is..." Ye Xiao was shocked and delighted. He couldn't believe it!

Erhuo looked up and meowed arrogantly. It looked domineering like it was the king of success or something.

"Wait... It doesn't make sense!" Ye Xiao was shocked and wanted to praise Erhuo, but he realized something wrong again. Not that he was sensitive, but what happened did look unreasonable to him. Erhuo had always liked treasures. It always ate anything valuable and eatable when it got something. It would mostly leave a little bit for making dan beads.

[Why is it so honest this time?]

[It didn't even bite the fruits!]

[Is it going to please me?]

[That would be too flattering!]

[It doesn't make sense!]

"Why didn't you eat them? They are something the entire Qing-Yun Realm was dreaming for! Two precious treasures!" Ye Xiao frowned as he stared at Erhuo..

Erhuo waved its tail, trying to look elegant and imposing. It wanted to pretend like it was disdainful to eat the fruits because it was too powerful for that. However, it failed. It just meowed, which meant...

'Of course I want to eat them. But... I can't enjoy them until they are converted... They are designed particularly for human bodies. I am not a human. If I forcibly eat them, I will die poisoned... Anyway, they are useless to me at the moment.'

Ye Xiao was shocked by Erhuo's explanation.

"They are designed for human bodies?"

"Does it mean... the fruits only work for the human, not other living forms such as birds or horses?"

'Exactly!' Erhuo annoyedly meowed.

[I, the peerless first spiritual creature of the universe, actually have to eat the fruits after you, even though I took them back! This is annoying.]

[However, I will get nothing if I refuse to follow the stupid rule. I am a generous cat. I have a great mind. I will take the disgrace for the greater good...]

"How do I eat them then?" Ye Xiao still kept his eyes widely opened.

"Meow, meow!" Erhuo quickly made a few gestures, which meant, 'Are you stupid? Just use your mouth! When you swallow the fruits, their enormous energy will instantly be stored in Boundless Space. After that, I can eat it...'

'They are pretty useful after all.'

Erhuo particularly added.

...

Chapter 1166: Strive to be First

"Useful? I surely know they are useful..." Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and said, "But... two fruits are far from enough. We have many people..."

Erhuo automatically rolled up its eyes. It knew this greedy man would say so, so it meowed, which meant, 'They only work for the first time. It will give you nothing when you eat them twice.'

"I know. I won't eat them all by myself. There are people I need to care about. Lian Lian, Yeyue, Bing'er, and others..." Ye Xiao humphed and grabbed Erhuo out of the Boundless Space without hesitation. "Go get more! Quick!"

Erhuo annoyedly waved its tail like it had been suffering a great deal.

[I knew it. I knew this is going to end up me being bullied when I started to work for him.]

[Fine. It always takes efforts to get food. Anyway, it doesn't really cost me much time. It is just as simple as blowing off the dust from something!]

At this moment, the crowd was bursting in an uproar.

"Great! Divine Yin Yang Fruits come down again..."

"Ah!"

"Don't touch it, guys!"

"It's another opportunity!"

"Why not! I own the fruits now..."

...

After that, there was a miserable exclamation...

The man who yelled that he owned the fruits suddenly became a black ball with bolts of lightning flashing around him.

He got hooked by whoever was fishing them...

After a while, another pair of Divine Yin Yang Fruits came down again...

Almost at the same time, people rushed over.

Another exclamation... Everything was back to silence...

These men were all high-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators who could be conquerors of many areas. However, they suddenly lost self-control, striving to get the fruits, just because Erhuo abruptly took away the fruits.

They believed they could be the next one, the main character. Everybody believed the others were only the side characters who were designed to die!

One after another, the cultivators kept becoming the black ball and being pulled up by whoever was fishing them.

Suddenly, people on the cliff all strived to get to the fruits first...

During the human-fishing process, it took only several breaths for a man to get hooked, killed, and pulled up. However, every time when a man was killed after touching the fruits, the fruits would disappear for a few seconds. They were probably pulled back by the fisherman before he put them down again. It didn't take a long time; in fact, it was such a short time. When the people saw one successful case with their own eyes, they couldn't wait to get the fruits next.

'Somebody has done it! I can be the next!' — It was a collective mentality.

Somebody did it, so I surely can do it too?

After that, every time when the fruits were put down, a bunch of cultivators would fight for the chance to get them...

They were literally striving to get themselves killed!

What happened was that someone touched the fruits and became

a black ball with a dead soul.

The one who died was always the strongest among the crowd.

Ye Xiao was watching them and twisting his mouth.

[What the hell is wrong with the world? How could these people be so unbelievably blinded by greed?]

[It is obviously suicide, yet they are all so enthusiastic like they are all drugged or something...]

After about seventy men died, it was finally cooling down.

"Damn it! Why is it so strange!"

"Who is the man that got the fruits earlier? I don't see any abnormal scene happening, which should happen when someone eats the fruits..."

"Holy hell. So many people died, yet no one succeeded..."

"Just wait... Be patient..."

"Maybe it is just like the previous. Somebody took the fruits, and then nobody could ever take them in thousands of years. It is nothing abnormal..."

"We can't be sure. The second person in history took the fruits not long before Yuankai did..."

"Gosh. Different people, different fates. I think we may need to wait for thousands of years..."

"Holy hell..."

Everybody was sighing.

Some of them were apparently hopeless. They were thinking about giving up on it.

However, at this moment, something changed in the sky again. Two fruits were coming down from nothing.

This time, nobody dared to approach recklessly.

"Just do more observation first. I guess I need to rest."

"Hmm... Just wait..."

"Holy sh*t! What's that..."

"Oh!"

...

Among a roaring exclamation of surprise, a blurred white shadow flashed over the fruits, faster than anybody could notice.

The two fruits that just showed up were gone!

Two fishhooks were left in the sky!

What astonished them was that the hooks didn't even move a little bit.

[Holy sh*t! Did that man show up again?]

[Did he do it for the second time?]

[How did he do it?]

People exclaimed. Most of them turned blue in the eyes because of jealousy. They kept looking around in the crowd, trying to find the man who got the fruits.

If anybody found that man, they would all rush over and beat him up like hell!

[He has four fruits already!]

[Why does he have to get so many of it?]

[You got the fruits already! Why didn't you eat them? Why did you have to get them again? What do you want? To be the god?]

[What an asshole...]

Many of them started to warm up, searching around with a pair of blue eyes. Some of them had been staying peacefully in this place for hundreds of years, but now they were all burning in anger!

Twice!

This was the first time in the tens of thousand years that somebody took the fruits twice!

That was unique!

There had never been anybody else...

[Is the fisherman changed?]

Their eyes turned red out of greediness again.

If it only happened once, it might not happen twice; however, if there was a second on the same day, there must be a third!

That was the rule!

They all recognized the rule!

They rushed up fast and approached the cliff to wait for the new fruits to show up.

Even if they found somebody who had taken the fruits twice, it might not be a good thing for them. Since he could move so fast, it must be an overwhelming figure. If the man swallowed the fruits and became an invincible cultivator, they might all get killed!

However, it would be great if they could successfully get the next pair of fruits to become an invincible cultivator!

But it took a much longer time for the fruits to show up this time.

...

Chapter 1167: In the Depths of the Galaxy

Deep in the universe, there was a place.

It was on a broken cliff too.

It was dark fog down below the cliff. It was too casual to call it dark. It was darker than the darkness.

Two shadows were concentrated in fishing on the cliff.

One person was suddenly shocked. He looked unbelieving while staring at the fishing pole which was covered by rolling dark fog. "What? My fruit is gone too."

The other nodded. "Just like mine, right?"

"Yes." The first said, "Somebody cut the soul connection and took the fruits. It was so smooth. Impressive!"

The other shadow stayed silent for a while and then said, "This is not normal. It happened twice today. We didn't lose alert, did we? Yet the fruits were gone again... It seems quite different this time, unlike the previous ones... Did they happen to know how to cut the soul connection down there?"

"Impossible!" The first one decisively said, "They are a bunch of ants in a cheap realm. How could they possibly cut the soul connection of yours or mine? Unless a frog can swallow the sky or an ant can shake a big tree!"

"Not to mention the ants, even if the conqueror's level cultivators in Human Realm Upon Heavens attempt to cut the soul connection, they would definitely trigger our alerts, and none of them could cut it so fast and traceless! We are talking about a much lower realm, the world that we use as a pond for fishing!"

"I understand. Then how do we explain what happened? It happened twice! Is there anything happening that is beyond our predicting capability?" the other person frowned and said.

Before he finished, the two of them started to move their fingers, trying to make a fortune telling...

After a while, they stopped sullenly.

"I got nothing. It seems... nothing special is happening..." The first shadow took a deep breath and said, "This is so weird. Such a strange thing just happened right in front of us!"

"Could it be... there is a stronger figure appearing in the low realm that we couldn't know in advance..." the latter one said.

"What are you talking about?" The first person humphed, "You and I are in the highest level in the universe. Those bastards in Human Realm Upon Heavens are only almost equal to us. There is absolutely nobody who could be stronger than us! Even if there is, we would have known it!"

"But how did it happen twice? Somebody cut the soul connection in such a traceless way. Even you and I, are you sure we can do the same?" The other person was confused about the current situation. In fact, he was a bit respectful to whoever cut the soul connection twice.

"I am curious too. Since he is so powerful, why would he want the bait of ours? It's a pity that we can't break the barrier of the heaven's will. Otherwise, we can go and check it out. I am afraid there is no way to see the truth." The first person stayed in deep thought and then said, "Maybe we can try put down the baits several more times. He took the baits twice. That means he is interested in the fruits. Let's try it for a few more times and see how he did it. Maybe we can get information about his background or anything else about him."

The other person said, "That's right. It has taken us hundreds of thousand years and a great number of efforts to create over a thousand low-level realms only to get the best soul cores. Yet this is the only realm that produces good soul cores. We can't just give up on it. Even if that man is mighty, we can absolutely defeat him

if we fight side by side, can't we?"

Apparently, the two unknown figures had a high opinion of the man who cut their soul connection. They even thought that the man was stronger than themselves. That was the caution a supreme cultivator had when facing unknown enemies. After all, the way Erhuo took the fruits and cut the soul connection was marvelous. Even the two strange figures didn't know how it was done!

Erhuo always called itself the 'foremost spirit in chaos'. It seemed it didn't just make it up!

The first nodded to agree. It took a black ball from a bunch of balls in a plate. Those were precisely the balls of the souls and bodies of the cultivators they caught.

The man took a closer look at the black ball and then threw it into the mouth. After chewing, he said, "Good meat! Tenacious! It does taste good. I never get bored eating these things... It benefits my soul hall after all... We just can't quit it."

"Again!"

"Yes, again!"

The two of them both laughed. The dark fog was rolling again, and a string was thrown out again with the baits.

"Oh? It is a good idea to let somebody take the fruits though. Look how the fish become crazy after that... Somebody took the bait so soon..." The shadow on the left side laughed and raised the fishing pole. A black ball was pulled out of the dark fog."

"Let me have a try... Oh, that's true! We don't even need to wait anymore." The one on the right laughed out loud. He raised his hand, and a black ball came out from the dark fog and flew into his hand.

"What a shame. The channel only allows one string to get through at a time. If it allows either of us to get through, even if we

just send our soul to go there, we can eat as many as we want..." The man on the right drooled with greed. Two drops of saliva dropped off his mouth.

As the saliva dropped into the dark fog, the fog started to roll up and down. Suddenly, it became denser. In the dark fog, many skeletons showed up... and filled up everywhere...

In a burst of miserable exclamation... some things were begging, crying, shouting...

The two of them were indifferent about the exclamation. They just casually waved their hands, and the skeletons suddenly cracked into pieces and became a part of the dark fog...

"The barrier is too strong for us at the moment." The other man laughed and said, "However, as long as we get enough soul cores... Day after day, the energy will be enough for us to break our limit someday. Then we can go wherever we want and travel every corner of the galaxy."

"When that day comes, we can eat whatever we want!" The man on the right was looking forward to it. His eyes seemed to burst into a mass of dark fog. He started to giggle and said, "Someday, we will break the limit. When the day comes, I will go to this realm that we are fishing now. I will eat every single fish in it!"

"Hahahahaha..."

In the waves of laughter, the two dark shadows took turns to hold the fishing pole and kept getting soul cores from down the cliff. It seemed they were having much more acquisition than usual on this day...

However, when each of them got over a hundred soul cores...

The man on the right suddenly exclaimed.

...

Chapter 1168: Succession

"Damn it! The fruits are gone again! How is it possible..." The man on the right burst out dark fog in his eyes. Apparently, he was utterly surprised and terrified. He sounded scared.

After losing the fruits twice, he was being extremely cautious this time.

However, the fruits were still gone silently... There was no trace left at all...

The man looked at the fishing pole. He couldn't believe it.

They were far away from Qing-Yun Realm... yet there was someone who could silently take away the baits from his fishing pole without a trace...

That was impossible!

Nobody had ever indeed taken away the fruits unless they intentionally let them do it. Even their sworn enemies in Human Realm Upon Heavens could never do it so quietly. Nobody could take away the fruits without alerting them!

However, within one day, somebody took the fruits three times.

They only noticed it after the fruits were gone...

That was unbelievable! It was incomprehensible!

"Holy hell... Damn it!" the man on the left shouted too.

After he threw out the baits again, the fruits were gone again.

The two of them looked at each other. They just couldn't understand what happened.

It was so weird.

"Although the Cycle Twin Fruits are not anything rare, they are things that only exist in our world..." The man on the right side murmured, "There are less than one hundred pairs of the fruits. It

only cost us four pairs in the recent ten thousand years. We wouldn't even lose the four pairs if we didn't let them take it... However, we suddenly lost four pairs more in one day today!"

The man on the right was upset about it too.

"A cycle of life and death makes one pair of Cycle Twin Fruits..." The man on the left felt distressed about losing the fruits, "I am afraid the fruits will run out soon if this keeps happening..."

They looked at each other.

Usually, it had been ten thousand years, and they didn't honestly lose the fruits to anybody. They could still keep using the fruits. It was endless. However, they only had ninety-nine pairs of the fruits in the beginning.

The reason why they could endlessly use the fruits was a distinctive feature of the fruit!

Every time when a man died touching the fruits, the fruits would return automatically. It was a cycle. The fruits would return to the tree...

Once the fruits returned, they could take them and use them again. When they used them to kill somebody, the fruits would return to the tree again...

Technically, they could keep the cycle going, and they would always have the same amount. As long as nobody truly ate the fruits, they wouldn't really lose the fruits. Since the fruits wouldn't be reduced, then it wouldn't be increased either. Heaven's law was fair.

What made them feel pain in the heart was that they actually lost four pairs on one day! In the ten thousand years before this, they had only used four pairs of fruits and spent two pairs to arouse people's lust for it!

One day!

The day hadn't end yet.

Whoever took the fruits must be utterly compelling, who had made four attempts, twice to each of the two unknown figures, and succeeded four times, casually and without a trace!

That was incredibly powerful!

He must be so incredibly powerful that the two unknown figures felt scared about it!

If they kept losing the fruits to the person, the fruits they had would not last for half a month...

What would they use to fish for soul cores if they didn't have the fruits anymore?

No other baits could replace the Cycle Twin Fruits. First, as far as they were concerned, there was nothing else that could get through the channel that was a thousand times narrower than a single hair!

Second, even if they could find something else to replace the fruits, they couldn't be sure that it could keep returning back to them as the fruits did! How many baits did they have to collect if the baits wouldn't return?

"Whoever it is, his power is unpredictable. Maybe some super powerful figure from some marvelous world saw the fruits and liked them. That might be the reason he kept taking the fruits. Let's just call it a day now and think about it. I don't think he is going to wait for his whole life for the fruit!" The two of them were both upset and awkward. Such an incredible thing actually was happening in such a low realm. There must be something wrong.

The only possibility they could come up with was that a 'super powerful figure' from some 'marvelous world' dropped by Qing-Yun Realm and happened to see the fruits, so he casually took them... They thought it was the only logical explanation...

Since the man was someone from another world who was so

mighty, he wouldn't stay in such a low realm for a long time. They figured the man would leave after a few days. Moreover, the fruits were rarely seen, and they had distinctive features, but they were not any precious objects after all. They didn't think the 'super powerful figure' would stay longer to wait for the fruits. When he left, everything would be back on track!

[Four pairs of fruits are expendable for us!]

...

The two unknown figures stopped throwing baits to discuss solutions. In Qing-Yun Realm, on the platform of Heaven's Terrace, people had gone entirely crazy!

[Four pairs!]

[He did it four times!]

[Oh heavens...]

[It must be a miracle day in the ten thousand years... It must be the easiest to get the fruits! Whoever makes an attempt will get the fruits!]

[The fisherman must be changed!]

[I have to seize the opportunity today!]

[What... What is that white shadow... Who is it?]

[He actually did it four times! He got the fruits four times!]

[Is he going to be a god beyond heavens?]

[Is he addicted to this?]

[He should better not show up, or I will beat him up to death...]

Everybody went nuts. Not almost all, but all of them were thrilled and crazy!

Everyone was here for the fruits! Who else would come to this place if not for the fruits!

Their eyes were all green or blue! When they looked at their friends, they had a strong suspicion in the eyes. [Did you do it, you piece of sh*t? Are you that lucky f*cking white shadow?]

...

Chapter 1169: Warning!

All the cultivators who were wearing white clothes among the crowd were really in bad luck. Every one of them was glared at by dozens of people around!

Han Bingxue, the Frost Sword, was the most eye-catching focal point among them all. Hundreds of cultivators kept glaring at him from all directions!

Well, he was wearing all white! Besides, he was well known for his excellent moving skills, and he was the strongest among the people... Of course, people stared at him; who else could it be?

However, many people just stared at the void in the sky.

They were all fully prepared, running their energy and waiting to thrust up.

They would rush up to grab the fruits as soon as they could when the new fruits showed up... They were waiting anxiously...

After all, it was unlikely that those people in white clothes, including Han Bingxue, was that fleeting white shadow. Instead of messing with these people, it was better to compete for the next pair of fruits. The four times of success had given everybody a great inspiration!

"What are you crowding for?" somebody shouted angrily.

"I have been waiting here for three hundred years... I pushed you a bit. I did. So what? You are standing right in my way! I pushed you, so I pushed you!"

"Pah! You bastard! Three hundred years yet you got nothing. You cowardly old bastard! That was not a reason for you to push me! You pushed me, so you pushed me, huh? I am going to show you why you shouldn't push me!"

"Pah! You little bastard! How dare you shout at me like that, kid?"

Say one more word, and I will squeeze the nuts out of your pouch!"

"Screw you! You old bastard! How dare you speak like that! You must want your miserable life to be ended soon!"

"I am going to kill you..."

"F*ck you both! Go start your stupid fight somewhere else! Don't touch me..."

- Bang, bang, bang... -

Here and there, people started to fight in Heaven's Terrace. It kept getting innocent people involved. So suddenly, it all burst into a mess.

Everybody's eyes were red. Even when they were fighting, they still kept looking at the sky. They were waiting for the fruits to come down again.

However, even when the night fell to them, the new fruits didn't show up.

It was the first time in the ten thousand years that the fruits stayed absent for such a long time!

"Holy hell! What is happening?"

"Did the people up there stop fishing because they lost the baits too many times?"

"How weird! I have never heard that such a thing would truly happen..."

"Damn it. Even though you are fishing, you can't just stop because the fish took your baits a few times, can you? What a narrow-minded bastard!" Somebody started to curse, "When your baits got eaten, it means there are fish down here! You should take every second to try to catch more... How could you just stop fishing?"

"That's right... It must be a rookie, a stupid one up there."

No matter how they cursed, nothing happened from the sky.

No fruits fell down again anymore.

It was the first time that Ye Xiao came to this place after he was reborn, and also the first time that the fruits stopped coming down!

Gradually, people turned quiet...

"Holy hell... This is not the end of it, is it? Are there still going to be the fruits?" one man said.

"What? No way... You... Just don't make irresponsible remarks!" Another person was terrified. His face turned pale because of it. "I have been waiting sixty-three years here. This is the first time I see hope. Don't tell me it is ended..."

"Sixty-three f*cking years? That means nothing!" A third guy spoke with anxiety, "I have been waiting here for over three hundred years..."

"Do you really think that three hundred years is a long time?" Another man responded disdainfully, "I have been waiting for over seven hundred years now. Who else dares to say he is more determined than I am!"

"Please, heavens... Do not take away the only opportunity for me to become invincible. Just let whoever was fishing us go on... I won't regret even if I will be killed in the end..."

"Gosh..."

Similar words kept being said everywhere. It lasted for the whole night. Ye Xiao couldn't hear anything else.

All that came to his ear was anxiety.

Everybody was worrying that the man up there would stop fishing... They were afraid that they had lost the opportunity to take the baits...

That was definitely a stupid theory. It honestly shocked and

disgusted Ye Xiao. He nearly passed out because he was too astonished. [This is incredibly unbelievable...]

[Somebody up there is treating you like a bunch of stupid fish, yet you actually...]

[How cheap! How dastardly! What morons! No! A bunch of morons! A bunch of cowardly morons!]

Ye Xiao naturally had no words to say to these people though.

Honestly, he understood why they would be so eager for that humiliation.

What they were yearning for was the opportunity to look down upon the world and conquer the realm.

If there was a chance for them to seize the opportunity, they could stay as low as it needed!

At this moment, Ye Xiao was having an entirely different thought in his mind. [No matter how powerful I am, even if I am invincible in this world, so what? There are people who can casually throw a bait to you, and you will still act like a fish!]

[I am not a fish.]

[I will never be a fish!]

[I will be at least equal to those who were holding the fishing poles!]

[I will even become more powerful than those people! And I will treat them like my fish! They will become my fish!]

His eyes were twinkling.

With a flash of white shadow, Han Bingxue was moving over to Ye Xiao.

"What do you think?" Han Bingxue talked to Ye Xiao through the mental connection.

He looked pretty solemn at the moment. He even sounded a bit

nevus.

He clearly understood what kind of influential figures the four pairs of fruits could create!

The four pairs of missing fruits meant... four Wu Fa!

There were going to be four more invincible super cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm!

However, for now, nobody knew who they were.

Han Bingxue was sure about one thing. Anyone of the four people who had eaten the fruits was powerful enough to kill him with a smack!

Xuan Bing was powerful enough to do so. Wu Fa was in a higher position in the ranking than Xuan Bing. Four cultivators who were equally powerful as Wu Fa, each of them could kill Han Bingxue by one slap on his face! There was no doubt!

Han Bingxue's eyes turned red because of it.

He even wanted to try!

He actually wanted to try to get the fruits!

Wu Fa and Xuan Bing were too many already. Six of them would make his life in the martial world much more difficult!

Instead of waiting for the four dominant figures to show up, he thought that it was better to take a risk on it!

"It is a fatal trap! You touch it, you die." Ye Xiao looked ahead in the distance with sullenness in his eyes. He warned, "Don't you dare to do it!"

...

Chapter 1170: Excitement!

Han Bingxue rubbed his nose. He didn't answer to Ye Xiao's warning.

"There is something you don't know. Do not take any reckless move. I know you are not reconciled to accept it, but I will tell you everything after this ends. However... before it ends, if you go touch the fruits, you and I are no longer brothers!" Ye Xiao sounded unprecedentedly strict.

Han Bingxue was stunned. He lowered his head and said, "Fine. As you wish. I won't do it."

He sounded just like a little concubine of Ye Xiao, who was wronged and was going to weep in tears!

Ye Xiao thought for a while and could not bear to see his brother in a grievance, so he spoke through mind connection, "Okay, look. The four pairs of fruits... are all in my hands."

"Ah!" Han Bingxue exclaimed.

"Shh!" Ye Xiao shouted, "What the hell are you shouting for? Do you want us to be beaten up to death?"

Han Bingxue immediately turned silent, but still murmured, "Why was I so stupid? Who else, except my boss, could do such a great thing? How many miracles have you created really... Catching the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish... Taming the Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snakes... Entering the Mountain of All Medicines... Today, you took four pairs of Divine Yin Yang Fruits... In the past ten thousand years, only four pairs have been taken. You got four pairs in only one day... I should have thought about it earlier... I was so blind..."

Before he finished murmuring, Ye Xiao had already pushed him away. He stayed far away from Ye Xiao.

However, he was getting more and more excited... [The fruits are

in his hands... It means there are plenty of opportunities for me...]

[Ahahahaha...]

That was such a delightful thing. He decided to do something to celebrate it and also expressed the pleasure in his heart.

"Ya!" Han Bingxue suddenly shouted. That literally shocked the world, as if a thunderstruck in the near sky.

The others were not prepared for such an explosive sound. What they felt was something exploding in their heads and bursting into detonation.

Ye Xiao honestly didn't know that fool would actually do this. He felt awkward, twisting his face and crouching down.

[Gosh... I knew he would be too excited... He would definitely do something stupid...]

[Just as expected, he did...]

[This is so expected. I am not surprised at all. I knew it. Why would I feel soft in the heart? Why should I tell him the secret? He is such an erhuo!] [1]

[Hey! Why did you curse me? I am the foremost spirit in chaos! Look how I casually took the fruits even though it is so difficult to get. Easy! Do not use my name like that ever again! Okay? Do you think he deserves my name?] Erhuo was annoyed when it heard what Ye Xiao was thinking, so it shouted at him!

"Bastards!" Han Bingxue stayed up while staring down at the other. He looked pretty angry as he shouted, "Quiet, you idiots! What are you doing? What do you want shouting like that?"

The other guys were all speechless.

[We talked in a low voice... We were nearly whispering...]

[We didn't shout, did we?]

[Well, only one man is shouting in the entire Heaven's Terrace...

Han Bingxue it is...]

[Do you think you are the best just because you are level nine of Dao Origin Stage?]

Well, nobody dared to ask that.

Because he was the best just because he was on level nine of Dao Origin Stage!

"Look how beautiful the view is here! Yet you all are making noises here! How stupid!" Han Bingxue was speaking arrogantly, "You are disturbing me when I am enjoying the wonderful moonlight! Bastards!"

The others were all pissed. [Holy hell! That can't be more brutal! You must be so annoyed because somebody else took four pairs of the fruits... You couldn't get any, so you are angry... You are just venting your anger on us!]

[Humph! You piece of sh*t!]

[If I eat the fruits, the first thing I will do is to crash you to death, you pretentious prick!]

[The Unique of the World?]

[Pah! Disgusting!]

"Kakakaka... Mahahakakalala... Jajajahohohomamashhh... shhh..." Han Bingxue couldn't hold the enjoyment in his heart. He wanted to laugh out loud, however, he suddenly remembered what Ye Xiao told him, so he forcibly tried to stop. That was why he laughed so weirdly...

The other guys were all surprised. [What the hell was that laughter? Has this Frosty Sword gone crazy because he couldn't get the fruits?]

"Ahem, ahem..." Ye Xiao coughed.

In the silent night, the sound of coughing spread pretty far. It sounded pretty sharp at the same time.

"Hmhashhshhherh..." Han Bingxue kept making weird sounds. Suddenly, he raged up and shouted, "Listen up, all of you! Nobody talks! Who dares to make one more sound, I will kill him!"

Then he stayed silent.

The entire Heaven's Terrace was silent.

People were all furious about it.

They were pretty upset because somebody took so many fruits away, but none of them got anything. After what Han Bingxue did, they only felt worse.

They never expected to bear the annoyance from Han Bingxue too.

[This is... unbelievably annoying.]

It was bound to be a sleepless night for all of them.

Han Bingxue was in level nine of Dao Origin Stage. He was the one who had the biggest fist among them all. What he said was the law. Nobody dared mess to with him by putting their lives at risk. Even though they were so annoyed, they could only curse him secretly in their hearts!

All of them stared at the sky obsessively...

[Is there going to be another pair?]

[Will the fruit come down in the midnight?]

Most of them were hoping the fruits would come down again and were also making a wish. They wished that if they got the power from the fruits, they could go slaughter Han Bingxue! [Unique of the World? Unique my ass!]

At the moment, everybody had the same thought. [If the others are asleep and I am awake when the fruits come down again... I can easily take them without making any noise... My dream is about to come true!]

However, because everybody had the same thought, none of them fell asleep.

Many people intentionally half closed their eyes but still stared at the sky through their eyelids. They didn't sleep but pretended they did. Everybody was snoring... pretending to be uncompetitive to others.

After a while of silence, the snoring filled the Heaven's Terrace. The snoring sound made one wave after another, rising and falling... In fact, nobody was asleep.

Finally, the sun came up.

Ye Xiao, Young Lord Ye, the only person who had slept, finally woke up from his sweet dream. He noticed that people were shouting in front of the cliff. That was crowded. Somebody exclaimed from time to time. People got hooked again.

That meant the fruits showed up again!

It seemed whoever was fishing didn't give up on this realm.

After a while...

Ye Xiao slowly walked to the cliff.

- Shoot! -

A white shadow fleeted out like a traceless beam of light.

...

[1] Erhuo means idiot in Chinese.

Chapter 1171: The True Story of Divine Yin Yang Fruits

Erhuo was thrilled when it saw the fruits, so it decisively did it again.

Nobody could tell what that beam of white light was...

Even the two super cultivators up in the universe couldn't see how Erhuo cut the soul connection and got the fruits, let alone these nonentities!

Everybody was shouted, "That white shadow... It appeared again..."

- Shoot! - As it flashed out, it disappeared!

As expected, the fruits were gone!

The crowd was bursting into madness again.

"Oh hell!"

"They are gone again..."

"Holy shxt this is no kidding..."

"This is exciting... If that white shadow hasn't get married yet, I would love to marry him... Oh..."

"Wake up, dude! You are a man! Are you sure he wants to marry a guy?"

"Damn it! Why did he get it again... Ahhhhhh! Why not me..."

"You would die attempting even he didn't take it... You are just a man who is bound to become one of the black balls... Why rush to die, man?"

"You would die! You are a stupid ball! Your families are all balls! You are all rushing to die..."

As expected, they started to fight drastically again.

People kept rushing over to get the fruits... but all became balls.

That mysterious white shadow appeared seven times!

Seven pairs of Divine Yin Yang Fruits were taken by that white shadow!

After Erhuo took the fruits for the seventh time, no more fruits were put down even though it was still daytime.

People kept guessing and talking about the white shadow.

Somebody confidently said that it was Wu Fa secretly coming to get the fruits!

They believed Wu Fa didn't want anybody else to be a competitor to him! That was reasonable and expectable!

Who insisted this theory talked like they had seen Wu Fa with their own eyes.

If anybody dared to challenge them, they would argue, "Who else can move that fast other than Wu Fa, the No.1 cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm?"

"What about you say a name?"

Whoever questioned them would immediately shut up.

However, nobody knew that...

A shadow was moving fast toward Heaven's Terrace at a stunning speed!

He went over thousands of mountains within only one second!

The man was moving from the south, through winds and rains!

...

Ye Xiao felt strange about what happened so far. It seemed something weird was happening.

[Isn't it too easy, too casual, too enjoyable for Erhuo to take the Divine Yin Yang Fruits?]

[It hasn't missed any one of them!]

[Although, as it said, it is the foremost spirit of chaos or something, isn't it still too unbelievably overwhelming?]

As far as he was concerned, he reckoned the people who were fishing there must be at least equally powerful as Meng Huaqing!

If the men up there weren't so narrow-minded, Ye Xiao would even believe that they were as powerful as Witcher and Ji Mo... However, after taking a deep thought about it, Ye Xiao realized the two feelings were too much different. They were impossible to be in the same league!

[It is still too early to estimate the power of the fisherman. He or maybe they are much stronger than me! That's for sure!]

[I have been planning to risk my life to get the fruits!]

[But... unexpectedly, things developed so well! Everything happened so smoothly!]

In the Boundless Space.

Erhuo lowered its adorable head, pushing the fruits with its small cute paws. It grabbed one fruit, and the fruit rolled over to it; then it pushed, and the fruit rolled away...

[This is so funny... One is black while the other is red.]

If somebody else saw Erhuo playing the fruits, they would definitely pass out! How could they not?

How dared they not?

What would they do after waking from passing out?

They would naturally try to catch the cat, boil it, eat it, and shxt of it. That might not be enough. They might eat the shxt and let it out again...

Again and again!

However, that was still not enough to make them feel better!

The cat actually played the precious fruits as if they were toys...

"Erhuo!" Ye Xiao stared at Erhuo solemnly.

"Meow..." Erhuo seemed fluttery.

"You... Do you know what fruits they are?" Ye Xiao pointed at the Divine Yin Yang Fruits.

"Meow..." Erhuo shook its head.

"Hmm?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"Meow Meow..." Erhuo innocently looked at Ye Xiao. [I genuinely have no idea what they are. No living thing knows everything in the universe!]

"You don't know. Then why was it so easy for you to get the fruits when you did it?" Ye Xiao frowned and looked at Erhuo, "Don't tell me it's your talent or some other bullshit. I won't believe it. You must know something about the fruits."

"Meow..." Erhuo answered, and started to ignore him and comb its whiskers.

"I thought you knew something..." Ye Xiao sighed, "It turns out you are know nothing more... Such an ignorant cat... And you call yourself the foremost spirit in chaos... That's ridiculous..."

Ye Xiao started to walk away, shaking his head, sighing, holding his own hands.

He looked undisguisedly disdainful.

"MEOW! Meow meow! Meow..." Erhuo was pissed off. 'Screw you! Who says I know nothing? I was pretending just now! Ok? I just don't want to share too much high-level knowledge to you! They are just some Cycle Twin Fruits of the Demon's Realm! It is not some special place anyway! Well, I don't think there are a lot of these fruits left in the universe. I have once wrecked this species after all... When I first saw the of Cycle Twin Fruits, I tasted some because I felt they must be tasty. They actually got me to suffer

diarrhea... That was embarrassing... How could I let it go just like that! The ten thousand acres of trees were all destroyed by me. I never expected there were any of the trees surviving my anger... Humph. How dare you question my knowledge. I am the foremost spirit in chaos...'

"Cycle Twin Fruits? Is it the real name of this fruit?" Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He hurriedly walked back and grabbed Erhuo on the neck. "Tell me more details! Come on!"

Erhuo was so upset.

[Oh heavens... When can I stop being sensitive about my reputation...]

[He was intended to provoke me, and he got me... I actually told him everything... This is not a good habit... I have to cut it. It's exposed.]

Erhuo lowed its head. It had to explain everything to Ye Xiao now.

Ye Xiao finally knew the history of the Divine Yin Yang Fruits.

It was a unique species in Demon's Realm. Its name was Cycle Twin Fruits. The fruit only grew in the place where the demonic qi was densest in Demon's Realm.

The most special thing about the fruit was... the fruit had no positive effect on any living things in Demon's Realm.

The only thing it would do to the livings in Demon's Realm was to cause diarrhea!

...

Chapter 1172: Aggregation of Wind and Cloud

The Cycle Twin Fruits, which were utterly useless to the demons, had a significant effect on human. Although it was only useful for the weak ones, it was still a truly rare and precious treasure for most of the human beings!

The fruits only grew in the soil of Demon's Realm, so naturally, it was always a key to the battles, the connections, the trades between human and demons. Demons had been working hard to plant the fruits in the old days. It was not an easy thing to plant the trees, but they had built ten thousand acres of it by putting all their power into the business!

However, things didn't end up well as they expected, even though the fruits were such valuable things. In fact, it was the cat that ruined all the valuable stuff!

When Erhuo loitered around Demon's Realm, it was in its prime dates. It saw a special fruit in the Demon's Realm. It surely wouldn't let it go since it was such a gluttonous cat. However, after eating several of the fruits, it started to have loose bowels. As an irritable animal, it certainly raged up. [There are so many of this evil fruits!] So it destroyed all the trees and the fruits...

Maybe it didn't ruin the place thoroughly, so some trees grew up again after all those years.

After Erhuo ruined all the fruits, it found something that made it regret so much.

It found that the fruits were good for human beings. After the fruits went through the human bodies and the human bodies digest the energy in the fruits, what was remained was excellent for it. Although the remains of one fruit only had limited effect, when there were ten thousand acres of trees... That would be an

entirely different story...

When Erhuo realized the truth, it wanted to return to Demon's Realm and see if there was another land of those trees. However, before it did, it was sealed...

Erhuo was stayed sealed till it hatched in Ye Xiao's Space.

Although it didn't return to its prime yet, it was still easy for it to take the fruits off the demonic hooks...

[Even if I grabbed the hooks, nothing could really hurt me...]

However, to keep Ye Xiao undercover, it moved at its fastest speed, to blind the other guys' eyes...

Most importantly, the remains of fruits only benefited Erhuo when there were tons of the fruits. However, it was no longer in its prime at the moment. It was less than one ten-thousandth as powerful as it used to be. The remains of several fruits would bring significant benefits to it!

"Do you mean... that in this firmament... there is a Demon's Realm up there other than Human Realm Upon Heavens?" Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes and said, "What is it like in Demon's Realm? What does a demon look like?"

However, Erhuo decided not to talk about it.

In fact, it was utterly repentant at the moment.

[Holy hell. This is not good.]

[I seem to tell him too much...]

[I actually told him about that world...]

[Well... It is not a good time for him to know about it yet...]

It regretted it so much that it pretended not to hear a word of Ye Xiao's questions. Ye Xiao got no response from it anymore.

He was quite confused, so he kept asking Erhuo about it. However, he got no response, so he was pissed.

However, no matter what he did, how he threatened Erhuo, how he provoked it, Erhuo just lowered its head, holding itself like a sea cucumber. It just wouldn't talk anymore.

Ye Xiao made a long sigh. He knew Erhuo would never tell him one more word.

He tried to convince it, but it didn't work. He wanted to talk it through, but it didn't work. He lured it, but it didn't work. He even threatened it, but it still didn't work. He shouted at it... but it just wouldn't work! Nothing made it talk!

"Damn it! I quit! Ok?" Ye Xiao had always been domineering to Erhuo. Now he failed in every possible way, so he was quite annoyed. He pretended to be utterly furious, swung the sleeves and left. "Erhuo, wait and see! Humph!"

According to the experience he had, when he left like this, Erhuo would submit right away.

That was his trump card!

However, it failed again. Erhuo watched Ye Xiao leave through the corner of its eyes, making no sound.

Ye Xiao's trump card failed. He was both disgraced and angry, so he had to really leave the Boundless Space. His hairs nearly all stood up because of anger.

"Holy hell!" Ye Xiao shouted furiously, "You are just a cat, yet you dare to act against my will... I have to give you a lesson!"

In a corner of Heaven's Terrace, where nobody noticed, a shadow arrived from far away like a ghost. It stopped on a tree in Heaven's Terrace.

There were seven men under the tree, but none of them noticed the man's arrival.

It felt like the man had become a part of the tree. It was silent and traceless...

The undetected spiritual mind of this man immediately covered the entire platform.

Nobody, not Han Bingxue, not Ye Xiao, noticed this man's arrival and existence. However, he could observe every single one of the people in the place freely!

He was noticing every tiny move of this place, including a slight wind blow... a slight change of one's emotion... He saw everything in detail. His spiritual mind had taken control of this entire area.

His spiritual mind was like air, wrapping the mountain inside.

It was horrible that his spiritual mind could cover such a broad area!

This man wasn't as calm as he looked. His heart was rolling with waves and tides.

[Who on earth took the fruits? Lots of fruits! It was not just good luck! Impossible! There must be a particular reason!]

[I have to find this person!]

Under the mountain, countless men in black clothes were gathering up quietly from different directions.

A few figures were shooting over in the sky with bolts of lightning around them.

They were all heading to Heaven's Terrace.

This place had become the focal point of the entire Qing-Yun Realm!

It had always been a focal point of Qing-Yun Realm, but not for the real influential figures in the realm. It was just like a casino for the weak to try their luck!

However, things had changed. Everybody knew that somebody had taken forty-two pairs of Divine Yin Yang Fruits. That was not just good luck anymore. It was a great temptation!

Nobody could resist it anymore, not even the dominant ones!

No individuals, no sects!

After all, whoever took the fruits could never eat them all by himself. Even if he ate all the fruits, what he got was only the boosted power that his mindset and battle experience would never be coordinate. He was unable to rival the dominators of Qing-Yun Realm after all.

No matter what, they knew the man at least need some time to get used to the power.

...

Chapter 1173: More Were Gone...

Whoever was lucky to eat the fruits might instantly get the capability of the peak level Dao Origin Stage, but he or she would not be able to well manage the power or to use the energy in the right way. Any cultivator, such as Han Bingxue, Zhan Yunfei, or Zhu Jiutian, who had been in the same level earlier could defeat the lucky one, even kill him. However, maybe the lucky one would fight back in the end when he or she realized how to use the power properly!

Therefore, the current situation was an opportunity for everybody, no matter the lucky one had or had not eaten the fruits. As long as they found the man, it would be great only to force him to give up one pair of fruits.

They wouldn't need to risk their lives to get the fruits on the hooks.

That was for private interests. Other than that, people had more concerns regarding public interests.

The man got forty-two Divine Yin Yang Fruits at the same time. That meant he could create forty-two dominant cultivators at once, as long as he gathered forty-two Dao Origin Stage cultivators!

Well...

Who on earth could stop the army of forty-two invincible people?

Were there even forty-two dominant figures in the entire Qing-Yun Realm who could fight against the ones to come?

That would be a destructive force that could look down upon the whole world and even sweep the entire realm!

The dominant cultivators who had been staying in the highest positions of the realm naturally would never let such thing happen.

Besides... Whoever found the man and controlled him before he ate the fruits would have the power to create his or her own army of invincibility! Was it a perfect plan to build a force for oneself to conquer the entire Qing-Yun Realm?

It would be easy to become the true king of the realm!

With forty-two powerful cultivators, one could defeat any other cultivator, even Wu Fa, in one single battle!

An individual was limited in power. Wu Fa was the most powerful cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm indeed, but how could he win a battle against several people who were equally powerful to him?

Everybody had the same thought. The influential figures of the realm all were heading to Heaven's Terrace after they heard that somebody had taken lots of Divine Yin Yang Fruits!

People in Heaven's Terrace was in chaos. Ye Xiao was upset because Erhuo refused to share more information with him.

On the other side of the string, a while earlier.

The two shadows, who were two influential figures of Demon's Realm were trembling because they were shocked.

Within two days, they had already lost eleven pairs of the fruits. Twenty-two fruits were gone.

In fact, it all happened in much shorter than two days. Regardless of all the time that was wasted, the eleven pairs of fruits were taken within shorter than the time of an incense!

Somebody took the fruits in the same way eleven times!

That was so weird.

What did that mean?

What did that tell the two demons?

Especially the last time!

"Did you notice anything?" The one on the right showed his face from the dark fog. He looked anxious and panicking, hoping to get an answer from the other one.

"No. What about you? You were holding the pole after all." The one on the left shook his head and then asked him back.

"There was an unbelievably powerful qi..." The one on the right was apparently frightened, "It was blurred... It was just... a flash... pasting fast... but I know it was there... It was real..."

"Powerful qi? Do you mean it?" The one on the left was disdainful, "That is our fish pond, dude. How is it possible that there was any powerful qi? Even if a supreme cultivator of the universe happened to be there and took away the fruits, he or she might not be as powerful as we two together. Do you have to be terrified like this? Come on. Pull yourself together!"

"No... It was real. I felt it. It was not just some kind of qi. It was... a vigor... Whoever took the fruits looks down upon everything, as if all things in the universe were powerless ants. He was casual, leisure, free, confident, and breezy when he took the fruits. Doesn't it indicate that he is a mighty existence?" The one on the right made a long breath. A big mass of dark fog was inhaled and exhaled.

"Do not panic. Ok? Don't terrify yourself." The one on the left thought for a while and then said, "I agree that whoever took the fruits must be mighty and wise. However, he may not be really that powerful. At least he shouldn't be more powerful than us. Think about it. If somebody who is even stronger than us is staying in that small realm, is he really interested in our worthless fruits? Besides, is the tiny realm that we use as a fish pond able to keep someone in such great levels? Come on. You are being too cautious. You are blinded!"

That was enlightenment.

The one on the right took a tumble, "That's right... How is it

possible for such a mighty figure to stay in that tiny little realm? If the person is much stronger than us, that small realm would never be able to endure the person. I was thinking way too much than necessary..."

"That's right. You were terrifying yourself. Listen to what you just said, I nearly got lost." The one on the left started to laugh.

The one on the left was teased. He didn't seem happy, so he said, "However, whoever took our fruits must be powerful. That qi, or vigor that I said was real. I didn't make it up. You have felt it several times. You felt it too!"

The other one sat still and smiled. "I agree to what you are saying about the qi. However, I have a different view on it. Maybe there is a hidden talented man in that realm. Maybe he is even a demonic figure. Anyway, he is especially good at fast moving. Besides, he happens to know a method to cut the soul connection. However, he is definitely a greedy prick... He didn't stop after the first pair of fruits... He actually wanted more..."

"Well... It makes sense. After all, for the cultivators in that tiny realm, one pair of fruits would already boost them to their limitation. More fruits wouldn't help. I guess the person doesn't know the specialty of the fruits. It doesn't seem like a supreme cultivator though. It is impossible that he is stronger than us. I was being over cautious!" The one on the left said.

"That's right. Now, I actually want to play this game with our little fish. It is not that easy to take away our fruits by playing some tricks. Not every person could take our fruits away from our hooks. I don't see a problem that he took the fruits because of good luck. However, it is his greed that annoys me! He is asking for death!" The one on the left was waving his hand when he was speaking. From the dark fog far away from him, another pair of fruits flew over to him. Then he said, "Well if you are too anxious or terrified, I will do this alone..."

He seemed happy about how he convinced the other one with a few words. - Shoot! - So he threw out the baits again.

As he expected, one after another black ball got hooked and pulled up. He continually got about thirty black balls at a time. That was a great harvest.

When the one on the right couldn't stay calm and finally wanted to join the game, suddenly...

- Shoot! -

The one on the left looked shocked. He couldn't believe it. Apparently, the fruits were gone again...

He withdrew the fishing pole and put on the new fruits again. After getting up a few black balls...

- Shoot! - The fruits were gone again!

...

Chapter 1174: In the Name of Public Interests!

The black shadow on the left stared at the empty hooks. He was stunned.

Eighteen pairs of fruits were gone. All were taken by one person...

That was unbelievable.

"Holy shxt! I should be right about it! What just happened? I was so cautious! How is it possible? How did he keep taking away the fruits? All the fruits were taken away without any traces left! It just doesn't make sense!"

He was rubbing his head. Lots of dark fog was bursting out of his eye frames.

Apparently, he was a bit freaking out...

How could he not be anxious!

In the first two days, the two of them had lost eleven pairs of the fruits in total. However, within a half day, he had lost eighteen pairs all by himself!

Things ended up so bad only because he wanted to prove his theory was right.

The two of them had ninety-nine pairs of the fruits at the beginning. They shared the fruits in equal amounts to use them as fishing baits. Four pairs were taken away during the first ten thousand years. They should have ninety-five pairs left. That was quite a high profit considering how small the cost was.

In the eleven pairs of fruits they lost together, this guy had lost six. It was an unexpected expense, but it was an acceptable loss after all.

However, he just had lost eighteen pairs within half a day. That meant he had lost twenty-four in total. Yet he only had forty-nine as a start. He had lost half of his fruits already!

That was terrible!

What a miserable day!

The guy on the left stared at his pole and took the hooks back. "Well... Do you want to take it? You have a try, and maybe that person will reveal himself..."

"Forget it... You have lost a great deal just now. Do not drag me down to it. Do I look like a fool to you? I am not doing it again." The one on the right was gloating, cracked a burst of laughter, "Didn't you tease that person just now? Didn't you say you want to play the game against him? What did you do? Come on, go on! Maybe you will reveal his identity by another strike..."

The guy on the left humphed. The dark fog suddenly spread out and rolled away. - Puff! - He disappeared.

He actually left the other guy because he was angry.

[I am done!]

"Well, I have to go too. Whoever it is on the other side, he must be incredibly powerful. He can easily play us both around with his fingers. It must be some mighty figure descending to that little realm from somewhere else. I was right about it. I guess we can't continue fishing in this place in the short coming future..." The guy on the right sighed and murmured to himself. However, he looked at the space fissure in the void again. He honestly didn't want to just leave this place. In the end, he couldn't help throwing the baits out again...

[Let me have a last try. Maybe that person has gone away after taking away over twenty pairs of our fruits...]

[Last strike!]

[This has to be the last strike!]

[Definitely...]

[I swear...]

After a long time...

This guy turned in a moving mass of dark fog and took leave, with sorrow in his face.

During the time of the 'last strike', he had gained over a hundred black balls but had lost thirteen pairs of fruits at the same time.

That felt like a billion times loss to him!

[Why was I so sure that the person would leave after taking the fruits! I thought it was my last strike... but I kept having the same thought again and again... I couldn't help... Now I know how it feels to fool myself around...] He slowly disappeared as he was complaining about himself.

...

On the other side. Qing-Yun Realm.

People in Heaven's Terrace had all gone crazy!

They were all lost in madness...

In the first two days, only eleven pairs of fruits were taken. However, it was already an incredible number considering how hard it was to get the fruits!

However, comparing to the number of how many fruits were taken, eleven was just a little, because thirty-one pairs of the fruits were gone!

That was almost three times as many as the total amount for the first two days!

What did that mean?

That meant... not long after this, forty-two cultivators of invincibility would show up in Qing-Yun Realm!

Forty-two Wu Fa or Xuan Bing, or at least Xue Danru!

What kind of a force was that?

That was insane!

"Who is it? WHO IS IT? How could you be so shameless! That can't be more disgraceful!"

Somebody shouted angrily.

Everybody's eyes were red.

Whoever took the fruits had a horrible potential to build a dominant force. Only one invincible cultivator of the forty-two was enough to kill these people at once. However, they were so angry that none of them still cared about it anymore!

Among the crowd, Han Bingxue was acting the most drastically, "Nobody fxcking moves! Do not leave! Who dares to leave now, I will kill him instantly!"

These people usually hated Han Bingxue's behavior, but what he just said gained their supports.

"Master Han is right! Nobody leaves!"

"That's right! Who dares to leave now, we will kill him!"

"To hold the fruits in hand doesn't mean anything. Before you eat the fruits, you are not invincible!"

"That's right..."

"But... What next?"

"You!" Han Bingxue flew out and grabbed a man in white clothes on his neck. The man in white clothes appeared to wear the clothes of Saint Sunlight Sect. Han Bingxue didn't say a word before he smacked on that man's head. The brain exploded and burst out of the skull. "Didn't you hear me? Well. If you dared to run, you must dare to accept your death!"

Then he took over the man's space ring and poured out

everything inside the ring. Things piled up on the floor.

Not everybody could have a private space ring. In another word, the disciple of a great sect who had a space ring must be someone important. That man's belongings should be valuable!

However, no matter how precious that man's belongings were, the people in this place wouldn't want any of them!

"Hmm? Why did you run like that? You don't have the fruits! I heard that the great sects forbid their disciples to come to this place. He obviously violated his sect's rule. What a disobedient bastard! Take it as a favor I did for your sect. These objects in his ring are naturally too cheap for me. Well, I will still take them as a payoff to my work." Han Bingxue looked solemn. He actually occupied all that came from that man's ring without feeling ashamed.

Well, it was not the fruits he was laying his hand to after all, so the others all just let him do it.

[You are a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator after all! You are the most powerful man among us all!]

"You! Don't you move... I shall kill you!"

- Bang! - Another one.

"You... Come here!" He flew out again.

All the men he was targeting were from the three factions.

Hmm. They were precisely all from Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect. One after another, Han Bingxue killed with one single strike.

He killed those men for several simple reasons. First, they moved; Second, they violate their sects' rules, so he killed them as a favor to the three factions. He would take over all the valuable stuff from those men he killed. He told everybody that the valuable objects were only the payoffs he deserved, and he didn't really like

them...

...

Chapter 1175: Do Best; Have Faith

"That's right. Whoever took the fruits, he took too many. Otherwise, things wouldn't end up this way... Damn it. The god doesn't dare to put down the baits anymore."

"That guy truly went too far! He had taken so many fruits! If I were the one who was fishing, I also would not be happy to lose the baits like that..."

"That's true... This is so annoying!"

Somebody made sarcastic comments about it, "Annoying? Well, you better get annoyed to death! What is the point of complaining here? That white shadow must be the most powerful figure in the world already... Who dares to mess with him? Which one of you dares to clap your own chest and said you dare?"

People felt even more sorrowful about it.

They all had a chance to be the world's best cultivator...

But now the chance was gone...

No more Divine Yin Yang Fruits were coming down anymore!

The opportunity to become invincible was gone!

They suddenly didn't know what to do anymore!

Han Bingxue didn't care if he would attract attention to Ye Xiao or not. He walked to Ye Xiao and spoke through mind connection with Ye Xiao, "What is it? What happened?"

"I was careless. I guess the entire Heaven's Terrace was mostly surrounded by all the powerful sects by now... They have sent all the best cultivators this time." He stopped and took a deep breath. "The overwhelming qi was rolling up to the sky... I believe eighty percent of the most powerful figures in Qing-Yun Realm are already here!"

Han Bingxue was shocked. He frowned and looked at the sky,

where the clouds were rolling. - Hiss! - He took a cold breath.

"Holy hell. This is actually happening. This is not good!"

Even Han Bingxue, such a powerful cultivator, felt numb in his feet and hands.

The two of them looked at each other. They both thought of a severe problem. The dominant sects and the best cultivators of the realm were paying close attention to Heaven's Terrace!

They actually hadn't thought of it in advance. It should be the simplest but most important thing they should think of.

Ye Xiao had experienced a lot in the Land of Han-Yang. He should have been greatly enhanced in scheming and plots. He should have made a plan before they came to this place. However, he must have been captivated by the victory. All he had been thinking was how to get more fruits. He completely forgot about the dangers that would come after this. Things had become pretty nasty now.

"I was careless. It is my fault. I focused on taking more fruits but never stayed clear-minded. Greed kills. How true..." He made a long sigh.

"Careless..." Han Bingxue made a sigh too, and he said, "The Divine Yin Yang Fruits can make a person invincible immediately. We were capable of obtaining it in a pretty easy way, and the fruits kept coming down. How could we not reach out our hands to it? It has nothing to do with carelessness." Han Bingxue sounded upset in the mind connection. "However, when the fruits were surely not coming down again, everything was done. We are late."

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. "Whatever we say, we are wrong... We have missed the best timing. We should have retreated in the morning yesterday."

"That's right." Han Bingxue's eyebrows slowly stood straight. He looked serious and said, "Boss, what should we do? Just tell me what to do. Instead of moaning in our thoughts here, we should do

something. At least we can eat the fruits. I believe we are powerful enough to fully digest the energy in the fruits. We don't need a transition. We will get exposed. That's true, but we will definitely get away safely!"

Ye Xiao blandly said, "We can just leave at any time if that's what we want... I am sure we can go away safely. However, it's just... I am afraid these people here... are all going to be killed..."

"We can just leave? Don't we need to eat the fruits?" Han Bingxue was shocked, so he turned around and looked at Ye Xiao.

In his opinion, they were in a dangerous situation. Yet Ye Xiao told him they could leave at any time! He even said he was sure they could go safely!

"We have the golden hawk. It's a powerful aid. We can fly away at any moment." Ye Xiao blandly smiled, looking at Heaven's Terrace, but he looked sullen.

Han Bingxue was surprised, and then he burst into laughter. He didn't feel worried anymore.

That was right. The hawk was incredibly fast. When it started to fly, nobody in this world could stop it.

Even Wu Fa could only make a sigh and submit to it!

Han Bingxue must be stunned by the situation. He hadn't thought of the hawk. Others might not know the hawk, but he definitely did!

"Well, since we have such a great retreat plan, why don't we just leave. We don't need to bother for these people." Han Bingxue said his suggestion, "These men are rotten inside for a long time... When they came to this place, they had lost the dignity and honor of cultivators. They have put their lives on the fruits. Even though they knew it was nearly impossible, they are still yearning for it."

"Even though you help them survive, they won't be able to step on the path of cultivation anymore. What was left for them to do

was daydreaming."

"They are blinded. The only hope they have is to get the fruits and become powerful. They will do literally anything to get the fruits... Even if you save them, they won't feel grateful."

Han Bingxue looked distant, "We are in a dangerous situation ourselves. We shouldn't waste our time on these losers."

Ye Xiao made a sigh and said, "What we do will always be seen by the heavens. Let's just try our best. I want to save as many as I can. Maybe one day, one of these men will return the favor to me."

Ye Xiao abruptly turned around and flew up. He shouted, "Guys, I have a word, please!"

The others were surprised as they all turned over to look at him.

In the breezing morning wind, Ye Xiao was talking loudly in the sky, "I have a sharper sensation than ordinary people! Please, listen to me. I have news to share. The sects in the entire realm have all heard the news about somebody taking lots of Divine Yin Yang Fruits. Heaven's Terrace has been surrounded by the powerful forces at the moment... If we leave now, we may survive. If we don't, guys... it won't be a good end..."

Before he finished, the crowd was bursting into cursing.

"Are you a f*cking idiot?"

"Who is that stupid bastard! How dare you make up such a story to arouse anxiety!"

"You have a sharper sensation? You are merely on the initial levels of Dao Origin Stage! You are the weakest among us all! Do you really think there is something you know but we don't? How naive, you fool!"

...

Chapter 1176: Hastiness! Massacre!

"Everybody knows about the fruits in Heaven's Terrace! It is known to the whole world for over ten thousand years... Are you telling me that the powerful sects only come for it after waiting for such a long time? Ridiculous!"

"I think you just want us all to leave so that you can stay here to take your chance on the fruits!"

"That's right! The bastard is talking nonsense, trying to scare us away!"

"You are merely a low-level Dao Origin Stage cultivator. How dare you think of occupying the fruits to yourself? You are literally seeking for death!"

"Go get him!"

"Come down here, and I will show you the way to death!"

- Shoot shoot shoot... - After a series of shooting sounds, a wave of flying hidden weapons was shooting over to Ye Xiao. People looked at Ye Xiao as if he had killed their fathers...

[Bastard! He actually wants to fool us? He actually wants us to leaven Heaven's Terrace?]

[The man is the enemy of us all! We should kill him together!]

Ye Xiao saw the hatred in those people's eyes. He could only sigh.

Many people kept shifting their gaze between Ye Xiao's face and the spot where the fruits should be...

They would never leave this place.

"Come on. It's true... I don't need to lie to you..." Ye Xiao kept dodging the attacks and spoke loudly, "Besides, I don't think there will be any more Divine Yin Yang Fruits coming down... It is a waste of time to stay here... It's true..."

"Fxck you..." The crowd was getting even more furious. People kept cursing him, and many of them started to move over with their weapons in the hands. They wanted to kill Ye Xiao.

[I see. You want us to leave. I see. You want to take the fruits. But you shouldn't say that the fruits are not coming anymore! Liar!]

[Fxck you!]

[Absolutely not!]

[I have to kill that bastard to vent the anger in my heart.]

Ye Xiao didn't feel scared. He just slowly got down to the floor. What he could do were only making sigh and shaking head.

Soon he had to do more than just shaking his head. Before the people who were yelling and waving their weapons approached, he hurriedly ran away like a mouse running for life on the street. He eventually went away from the platform, and the people finally stopped chasing him.

They still had to go back and watch the spot after all. The fruits might come down at any second. Ye Xiao was just a weak young man. They wouldn't waste too much time on such a small figure. They had to seize every second to get the fruits as soon as the baits came down... Otherwise, it would be a hundred times more difficult for Ye Xiao to escape their attacks.

"Now what? You got the lesson now, didn't you?" Han Bingxue showed up on his side from nowhere, staring at him with a wicked smile, "You can't convince these people. This place is their hope. It's all they have left in their lives. Their lives will become meaningless if they leave this place."

"People are always blinded by lust! These people, they all are! Anyway, I have done whatever I can. One can fight the will of heavens but always submit to the devil inside one's heart. They should blame themselves!" Ye Xiao looked calm and said in a deep voice, "At least we have run away from the crowd now. Let's find a

place to get on our way back."

"Good!"

Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao, like two streams of floating cyan smoke, disappeared in the forest of the mountain.

A shadow was hiding in the darkness somewhere, staring the two of them with a pair of sharp eyes. He coldly watched Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue leave. After hesitating for a second, he became a mass of fog and moved after the two of them.

[These two are suspicious.]

[Han Bingxue is a dominant figure. Why would he stay with a man who is weak as an ant?]

[Why are they so sure that the fruits would not come down again?]

[That guy is weak. How did he sense the approach of the influential people?]

[This is weird.]

[It is better killing ten thousand innocent than setting free a guilty one!]

[I shall follow up and see.]

...

After Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao left, countless men in dark clothes appeared around Heaven's Terrace. They showed up from nowhere like magic.

One man of them suddenly shouted, "Kill the way up! We spare no one!"

Countless men in black started to rush up to the platform like a sanguinary army from hell!

A massacre began...

The men in black had a simple task. They would kill everyone

who was wearing different clothes! All they did was the slaughter!

Suddenly, a bunch of deadly killers showed up and started killing. The men on the platform were rattled!

Almost within the time of a blink, the platform of Heaven's Terrace became a big heap of dead men and blood. Many of the people didn't even have time to touch their weapons before they were killed. Most of them died in the first wave of attacks.

"Who are you?"

"This... This must be a mistake..."

Many people kept trying to talk while swinging their weapons to defend themselves. However, the killers looked so cold and indifferent in the eyes. They didn't care. They had no mercy at all. They just kept killing.

None of the men in black talked. Every one of them was incredibly powerful in martial art! The weakest among these killers were level four of Dao Origin Stage. Many of them were level eight! Some were even on the top of level nine! They were a group of dominant cultivators...

When the killers rushed up to Heaven's Terrace, it appeared like a bunch of tigers running into the sheepfold. After a wave of shooting hidden weapons attacks, they just directly ran into the crowd! That had caused bloodshed!

At that moment, all the people in Heaven's Terrace who were waiting for the fruits felt extremely regretful.

A young man had tried so hard to warn them earlier. However, none of them listened. Now that death was approaching, they finally realized how honest and kind that man was.

They had treated the man's kindness like dirt. They didn't listen to him, and they even tried to kill him, eventually drove him away...

Death had come now.

What a shame!

"Kill them all! Spare none!"

A man in black who was standing in front of the others on the highest spot. He kept looking around with two sharp eyes.

He shouted, "Spare none! None!"

"Take all the spatial equipment from these people! Do not miss a single one!"

"Quick! Quick! Quick!"

"Get it done in half incense! Then we retreat immediately!"

"Keep your eyes open! Do not miss a single piece of equipment!"

At last, the massacre didn't even last for half intense. The men were all killed. After the killers made sure nobody survived, they gathered up fast, with the broken parts of other killers' dead bodies on their backs.

Apparently, they were not leaving a single trace after.

A few of the killers who seemed to be the most powerful ones took a quick tour around Heaven's Terrace. They were using their strong spiritual mind to carefully scan the entire area, to make sure no spatial equipment were left...

After a while, someone shouted, "Retreat!"

The men in black all became dark flows of smoke and rushed down off Heaven's Terrace. After a few seconds, they were all gone, leaving no traces behind.

...

Chapter 1177: Who Did This?

It the blood and flesh didn't pile up in Heaven's Terrace at the moment, nobody would believe a massacre like that could happen in such a short time!

Nobody among the killers who wore in black talked except the leader who was giving orders! They didn't shout when they attack; Nor did they moan when they got hit. It was silence. Their discipline, their efficiency, made them move like silent ghosts. They killed for their mission. They completed the mission and left immediately!

They obeyed the rules, followed the orders. They never hesitated. They never left traces behind.

In the entire Heaven's Terrace, they took away everything that might expose themselves. They even clean a tiny piece of the cloth that was ripped off their black clothes. They literally left nothing behind.

What left in Heaven's Terrace was a hell that was filled with mountains of dead and rivers of blood!

...

After the time of incense, the strong wind started to blow with thunderclaps. The superior cultivators from all the great sects were arriving.

This time, the sects had sent their best elites.

The Prime Master of West Hall and their elders arrived, as well as the Prime Master of East Hall and their elders. Misty Cloud Palace, Qiong-Hua Palace, and Ice Cloud Palace had sent important figures of their leadership... Saint Sunlight Sect, Saint Starlight Sect, Cold Moon Palace, and the other four great sects also had sent their elites.

Even though they were all influential figures in the world, when

they saw the hellish scene in Heaven's Terrace, they all took a cold breath in a tremble.

They were all experienced cultivators, who had seen lots of battles. However, it was their first time to see a lot of dead bodies which all belonged to superior cultivators. They soon realized the massacre happened in such a short time and understood what a profound effect this event could do to the world. None of them could stay calm anymore!

"Quick! Check if there are any survivors!"

It was Prime Master Wu of Saint Sunlight Sect, who was talking anxiously.

"Prime Master Wu, are you scared numb in your head by this?" A middle-aged man who was about in his thirties with a handsome face looked at Wu Huitian disdainfully and blandly said, "Look at the dead. It is impossible even to find a complete body, yet you actually want to see a survivor from it. I wonder whether you don't have a brain or your brain is rotten!"

"Please don't be mad. I am simply telling the truth. At the very least, if there are any breathing ones on the floor, do you think we are unable to sense it? You are the Prime Master of Saint Sunlight Sect. That gives you the right to stand here with us. However, don't expect the rest of us are as stupid as you are. You can embrace shame, but we can't bear to do so!" The man smiled and then continued, "The point that we should focus on is we should find out who came beforehand and did this massacre!"

Wu Huitian was humiliated, so his face turned red. However, he didn't say anything about it, just stood aside with a dark face. Apparently, that middle-aged man was so powerful that even Wu Huitian didn't dare to mess with!

The prime masters and elders of the sects all just stood aside. Their disciples were checking the details in the scene.

"People who killed these men are all superior cultivators. Even the weaker ones of them had brilliant experience in fighting!

"Look at the wounds on this body part... The cut... Whoever did this must be over level six of Dao Origin Stage.

"The killers haven't been gone long... The wounds are still bleeding. The body parts are still warm.

"There are tens of thousand corpses in Heaven's Terrace. All the dead were beyond level one of Dao Origin Stage. The killers must be at least three thousand cultivators who are all over level six of Dao Origin Stage! Otherwise, they couldn't have done this so fast!

"Whoever gathered in Heaven's Terrace were not ordinary cultivators. Many of them were pretty potent. There must be many high-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators among the killers. They must have more than one level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivators! Otherwise, they couldn't be sure they could finish the massacre so soon!

"Furthermore... They have taken away all the spatial equipment from these people. It should have taken them quite some time to do this. I am afraid they have one thousand more people to get this job done at the same time. At least one thousand.

"Many dead bodies looked poisoned. There are poisonous signs on the wounds that were caused by edge tools, including swords.

"The poison they used on their weapons is too ordinary to trace back to the source. It is a strong poison.

"Ninety percent of these people were beheaded by one strike.

"The shooting weapons are all standard weapons. I don't see any specialty.

"They are a large number of superior cultivators who move fast and secretly. They came and killed, finished and left. It was clean and fast. They must be a well-trained organization."

It had eventually come to a conclusion.

The others who heard the conclusion of the conjecture all looked gloomy and sullen on the face.

"Who are they? What do they belong to? Why are they so overwhelming?

"We are all here. Two great halls, three great palaces, seven great sects, and the other powerful sects such as Sky Ice Palace, we are all here. The best league in Qing-Yun Realm is here. We know that we didn't do this massacre.

"In another word, there is an influential and domineering secret force out there in our realm..."

That middle-aged man looked sullen. His face looked dark. "This force... Does it mean none of us has ever noticed it?"

He was asking all the others.

He looked around their faces one by one.

Everybody was shocked.

They couldn't believe that there was a secret organization in their realm!

Nobody noticed anything about it!

How horrible!

What terrified them most was that they still didn't know how dominant that organization could be. After all, they didn't know whether they had used all their power to make this massacre or just a part of it! They hoped it was the former. Because if the truth were the latter, the organization would be too horrible!

After a while, Prime Master of Cold Moon Palace, Yue Changtian coughed and said, "Prime Master Zong, we did notice something earlier. It seems there is a strange organization in the martial art that has recently done some mysterious and creepy cases... It seems to be a big organization..."

The middle-aged man was the prime master of the most dominant sect in Qing-Yun Realm, Zong Xingyu. Zong Yuankai, the first person who ate the Divine Yin Yang Fruits in history, the initiator of West Hall, who had been the world's most potent cultivator in the history, was Zong Xingyu's ancestor.

...

Chapter 1178: Started to Unravel?

Yue Changtian was the prime master of Cold Moon Palace. Basically, he was in an equal position as Zong Xingyu. However, in front of Zong Xingyu, he didn't dare to sound arrogant. He was talking quite humbly to Zong Xingyu.

Zong Xingyu's eyes lit up. He said, "Prime Master Yue, do you know anything about that secret organization?"

Everybody started to look at Yue Changtian. They were confused. [We never had a clue about such a big issue. How come the almost weakest sect of the seven great sects would know about it?]

[This is weird.]

"We knew it because of luck. It was after all too much an issue. Besides, we never have any evidence for it. I thought it was impossible to convince others, so I didn't spread the information." Yue Changtian sighed and said, "We recruited a young disciple who had just ascended from the lower realm, Ye Chongxiao."

Zong Xingyu nodded and said, "I know that guy. I have heard that he luckily ate the Golden-scale Dragon Fish when arrived in this realm. What a shame that the heavens didn't bless him in the end!"

Yue Changtian glanced at Wu Huitian of Saint Sunlight Sect and Yun Xiran of Saint Starlight Sect with a pair of cold eyes. The two prime masters' faces turned red.

Yue Changtian then showed an ambiguous smile and said, "Because of Ye Chongxiao's discernment, we discovered something about that organization.

"After that, we know that there has been a mysterious and horrible organization hiding in Qing-Yun Realm..."

He briefly told the others all the information he had about that secret organization. He emphasized the fact that the organization was raising assassins who had the same faces with families or

friends of the influential people in Qing-Yun Realm.

Zong Xingyu's face turned darker as he was told more. Finally, he couldn't help raging up and shouting, "An evil organization! An unconscionable and despicable crime! How come nobody has ever noticed their existence before?"

"Whoever noticed it died... except for some of our men. If not for Ye Chongxiao's discernment, over one hundred of my good men might also die in the same trap too!"

Yue Changtian sighed and said, "I heard about it for the first time when Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian reported to me. Whenever I recollect that trap my men nearly died in, I feel scared... Poor Chongxiao, good kid. He would become a significant figure if he were given enough time. However, he died in the hands of some despicable people. Cold Moon Palace couldn't save him... We owe the kid too much..."

"We have a pretty high estimation about that secret organization. They are after a big goal. They are strong. They have their forces everywhere. They have money. They have all sorts of terrible methods... They are doing an excellent job in confidentiality... They are obviously a mighty monster that was scaring and surprising!"

"According to what they are doing now, we have a bold conjecture. We believe that they are aiming at the whole Qing-Yun Realm... We, as the prime masters of the most powerful sects in Qing-Yun realm, don't have a damn clue about such a monster, even though it has started to do some horrible things in our world. That is what scares us the most.

"Somebody abruptly took away forty-two pairs of Divine Yin Yang Fruit in several days. It must arouse the greed of that organization, so they made the massacre. That is why we now know its existence. Otherwise, I am afraid it will remain a secret..."

That was all he wanted to tell the others. He didn't say much

detail about it, but a few sentimental remarks.

He knew that what he had said was enough!

He didn't denounce Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect for Ye Chongxiao's death either. No matter what they had done, it was over. Besides, it was more like a private matter within the three factions. He didn't want to bring it up formally. Most importantly, he knew Ye Chongxiao was not dead. Ye Clan was allied to Misty Cloud Palace, Cold Moon Palace, and even Qiong-Hua Palace. That meant Ye Clan could be as dominant as a great sect.

The spiritual qi in the Oracle District, which used to be an unattended district, had become standard. The influential sects would soon send their people to settle in that area. That meant people would sooner or later find out the truth that Ye Xiao was Ye Chongxiao. That was why it would be meaningless and a waste of time that Yue Changtian openly denounced the two other factions!

After the breaking news from Yue Changtian, everybody turned serious with an extremely gloomy face!

According to what Yue Changtian said, the secret organization was way more than just powerful! It was apparently the most overwhelming force in the history of the realm!

Zong Xingyu's eyes looked profound. He murmured morosely, "This organization must have much more than just a large number of powerful killers. They must have some top-class dominant cultivators as their leaders to get an essential balance. According to the number of their killers, I am afraid they must have two or more ultimate dominant figures.

"Like Prime Master Yue said, to maintain such a huge organization and keep it undercover, it takes a substantial daily expense... They must have a business as financial support, and it has to be a business that has branches in different places in Qing-Yun Realm. It is difficult to keep such a big business undercover

for many years. This organization must have two to three trading cartels in the realm... They have to be the top-level cartels in Qing-Yun Realm!

"There is the manpower they have to concern... They must have hundreds of thousands people to maintain the project of training those assassins who have certain appearances. They must have raised other assassins too... How many people do they have? Assassins?

"To make sure their assassination can be perfectly safe, they will have to build an intelligence department, which should be much better than the assassination group... How many people do they have in their intelligence department?

"None of these people I mentioned above are in their leadership, except the several unlimited dominant cultivators I said at the beginning.

"There must be a group of top-level cultivators to build up their leadership!

"I guess... there must be..." He paced around and became more sullen. In the end, he said, "Ten thousand men... even more..."

"We still haven't mentioned their administrative department..."

"Besides... It is a huge organization we are talking about... They must have quite a lot of people working as executioners... These men must also be superior cultivators..."

"All in all, I am afraid this organization has no less than two million people. What?" He himself was terrified by the conclusion. He looked pale in the face because of fear.

...

Chapter 1179: Track; Confusion!

...

<Author's note: Two-in-one chapter!>

...

Not only Zong Xingyu himself, the others who had heard what he said were terrified.

They were unprecedentedly shocked and frightened.

"Guys, you are all important figures in your sects. You surely understand why I said. To become such a huge organization, even if they have that amount of people, it still takes at least five hundred years. Think about the patience and the ambition they have... It is horrible..."

Zong Xingyu took a cold breath and continued, "Guys, such a huge organization has been hiding around us for... at least five hundred years... However, we, who claim to be the best in Qing-Yun Realm and know everything in the realm, haven't noticed their existence in all those years... If we are to be wiped out by them, we have nobody to blame but ourselves!"

He smiled bitterly and looked at the others with sparkling eyes. "Now, is this a joke? Or are we truly rotten so deeply? Have we all become muddleheaded?"

The others all looked embarrassed on the face. Nobody could argue against what Zong Xingyue just said.

What he said was true. Such a huge organization had been hiding among them for such a long time. Even though they claimed to be the most powerful sects in the world that had most resources in the realm, they noticed nothing!

"This is the most important and terrifying problem that we need to solve!"

Zong Xingyu bitterly smiled and said, "Heaven's Terrace has become... a hell full of blood in the world. I guess there will be no fruits coming down from the sky... That means there will be no more Divine Yin Yang Fruits!

"Whoever got the fruits is mostly lying among these corpses..." He sighed and continued, "The fruits must be inside one of the equipment the secret organization took away..."

"In another word, guys, we are in big trouble!"

What he said about the fruits was the biggest bomb that exploded in people's hearts!

Everybody was shocked!

If that terrible organization got dozens of Divine Yin Yang Fruits, what would happen? They all had the answer.

The oppressive organization was about to become more powerful than before. It was going to be invincible in the realm. It was going to rule the realm!

"It seems we have to gather up together this time. This is the only possible way to solve this problem. Guys, if you don't want to be broken down one after another, and became dust in the river of history, we have to work together." Zong Xingyu decisively said, with his glaring eyes, "West Hall is not far from this place. Prime masters... what do you say that we go to my place and have some tea?"

"Absolutely! We would love to hear more of your enlightening idea!"

"I have heard that West Hall has the most beautiful view in the realm. This is a good chance to pay a visit."

Everybody agreed with Zong Xingyu's suggestion. Nobody declined his invitation.

After all, they all understood that Zong Xingyue was telling the

truth. The secret organization with the Divine Yin Yang Fruits was a crisis they had to face together.

If they couldn't come up with a practical cooperation plan soon, they might not be able to save the future when it was late!

If they couldn't honestly work with each other to fight against the crisis, everybody in the Qing-Yun Realm would become that secret organization's slave!

The organization might rule the realm one day!

It was necessary to stay together and discuss the horrible situation!

No matter what conflicts they had between each other, they had to put them down for now.

After a while, under Zong Xingyu's invitation, these people all left the mountain.

Everybody was frowning.

A storm was going hit the martial world.

Even the three factions had to put aside the plan to fight against the people who were coming for Xiao Monarch. They had to focus on the crisis of the entire realm first.

It was literally the most severe problem for all of them!

Nobody could ignore it!

Since leaving Heaven's Terrace, Ye Xiao had been trying to let the hawk come down to take the two of them away. He wanted to stay as far away as possible.

However, he felt something disturbing his heart for no reason.

That feeling didn't go away when he walked away from Heaven's Terrace. Instead, it was getting stronger. He felt more and more disturbed in the heart!

He knew it was not his illusion. He was weak at the moment; In

fact, even when in his prime days, he was weaker than just the best cultivator, but his instinct, his spiritual mind was the best in the world!

[Who is it?]

Ye Xiao kept asking the question. He hadn't seen any traces so he couldn't be sure who was following them. However, he had a name in his head already.

Maybe the man he had in mind at the moment was the only person who had the capability of following them like this.

Maybe the man was the only person who could give him such an unbearable suppression on his nerves!

Wu Fa!

[Is it you? The best cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm!]

Ye Xiao had evidently heard of the man, but he never had the chance to meet him! He always scrupled about meeting the world's most potent cultivator. He couldn't ignore Wu Fa's fame. There must be a reason he could be the world's best!

When Ye Xiao was in level nine of Dao Origin Stage, he knew it was impossible to defeat Wu Fa. However, he believed he was in the same league as Wu Fa, which meant he could still fight against Wu Fa!

As he knew more about cultivation, he knew more about the power of an individual. He who was ignorant feared nothing, yet who was well informed were in awe. Let alone Mo Tianji the Wizard and Ji Mo the wicked guy, the two ultimate supreme cultivators, let alone Meng Huaiqing, Master Bai, Wan and Xiu, the superior cultivators in Human Realm Upon Heavens, he was currently far weaker than himself in the previous life!

When Xuan Bing played Han Bingxue around all the way to Ye Clan like an adult fooling a kid, it proved a lot!

Han Bingxue was also a cultivator on the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage. However, he could do nothing to resist Xuan Bing's attack. He was a bit weaker than Xiao Monarch indeed, but only a tiny bit. Ye Xiao knew that if he had to fight against Xuan Bing when he was still Xiao Monarch, he wouldn't do any better than Han Bingxue. If he risked his life to fight her, he would die! That was the disparity!

Now he might have to fight Wu Fa, who was known to be even stronger than Xuan Bing. How could he not be scared?

He was almost certain who was following them, yet he didn't feel relieved, but only felt stressed. He had just gotten away from the surrounding of the superior cultivators in Heaven's Terrace, but fallen into another dangerous situation immediately!

Whoever was following them didn't do anything yet. Ye Xiao had no idea where the man was hiding.

However, Ye Xiao clearly knew that he was around!

An enemy in the dark was the most terrifying because he was waiting for the best timing to attack. As long as Ye Xiao showed a flaw and gave the man a chance, the man would make a thundering attack right away.

That attack was unstoppable. Even when he was Xiao Monarch, he might not be able to resist that attack. Even though he had Han Bingxue with him, they still couldn't handle that attack together.

Ye Xiao knew that he would become invincible if he ate the fruits. However, he couldn't, because during the seconds he was going to swallow the fruits, whoever was following them could kill him a thousand times!

If he died alone, he might be willing to take the chance, but Han Bingxue was here too. If the fight were started, Han Bingxue would definitely get involved.

He had to stay calm and stopped being terrified. Negative

emotions only made him weaker. That wouldn't help. He had to think of a way to handle the dangerous situation. He couldn't solve the problem with a fight, then he could only use his intelligence...

After all, he was now much more scheming than his previous life!

He was moving fast ahead in silence. Han Bingxue was moving on his side quietly too.

Ye Xiao was good at moving skills, but he was after all only in a low level of Dao Origin Stage. Even though he was doing his best, he couldn't stay further from Han Bingxue a bit. After all, Han Bingxue was also good at moving skills. He was the Unique of the World after all!

"Brother Han, the fruits..." Ye Xiao seemed to remember something, so he paused and then continued in a low voice, "Can they really make a man invincible?"

He sounded quiet, calmly and peacefully. He was just like a young man who had just stepped on the soil of the martial world, full of curiosity about the fruits in the myth.

In another word, he was acting just like an ignorant fool who hadn't experienced a lot in the world!

Han Bingxue nearly lost his breaths. If he was not truly good at moving skills, he might have fallen down and cracked his head on the floor.

When he looked back, he found Ye Xiao's face full of curiosity. However, the eyes were different. Ye Xiao was giving a hint to Han Bingxue through the eye contact to give a warning.

In Qing-Yun Realm, the person who knew Ye Xiao the best was not the Fierce Blade Li Wuliang, or the Vast Sky Jun Yinglian, but was the Unique of the World, the Frost Sword Han Bingxue!

He didn't know what was exactly going on, but he understood something must be wrong. He smiled in a low voice and answered, "You are indeed a rookie in the martial world. What an ignorant

kid... If the fruits are not that good, the superior cultivators who died in that place during the latest ten thousand years must be some dumb fools. What do you think? Where did Zong Yuankai, the first Prime Master of West Hall get his invincibility if the fruits were not that powerful? Why do you think Wu Fa could become the best cultivator in the realm? Come on. It's the Divine Yin Yang Fruits!"

Ye Xiao was still fleeing ahead. He stayed silent for a while as if he was trying to understand what Han Bingxue wanted to teach him. After a while, he sighed and said, "Forty-two pairs of the fruits were taken... within only a few days... Well, I won't ask for more, just one pair..."

"Yes, you wish..." Han Bingxue disdainfully said, "How do you deserve such marvelous treasure... Kid, the only thing that would happen if you go grab the fruits is to become a black ball..."

He sighed and continued, "It has been truly too weird these few days... That white shadow kept taking the fruits off the hooks. I was careless in the beginning. I admit that I didn't really pay attention to the fruits. However, I have never been more concentrated than that in the end. I was literally running all the energy in me. My spiritual mind was covering every inch of that place. Yet I still didn't see anything. I knew that the white shadow was much faster than I did, but I thought I could at least see him do it. If I could see how he did it, maybe I could get the fruits too. However, that white shadow was too fast. It was much faster than lights.

"I wonder how he took the fruits... That was some stunning speed. I have never thought that a living being could be fast like that! How horrible!

"I even suspect that Wu Fa couldn't be as fast as that white shadow!"

Han Bingxue kept shaking his head, speaking in a low voice. He

was flying as he was talking. It was nearly impossible to hear his words clearly.

Somewhere in the dark, the man who had been following Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue frowned. What Han Bingxue was exactly what he was thinking.

He had been focused on that white shadow too, and he also couldn't see anything.

He was confused all of a sudden, [Does it mean... that it was not them?]

Ye Xiao said, "That white shadow must be a secret ultimate supreme cultivator. Wu Fa couldn't do it indeed, but it doesn't mean nobody else can. There is always a stronger one. This is the rule of nature..."

"Humph! What do you know about it? What you said only applies to an ordinary situation. I am not underestimating the heroes in the world, but to be honest, nobody could be as fast as that white shadow in Qing-Yun Realm. Wu Fa couldn't surpass it, let alone others." Han Bingxue humphed.

"Do you mean nobody could be that fast? Then who is that white shadow? Should it be somebody in Qing-Yun Realm?" Ye Xiao looked confused.

"Hmm..." Han Bingxue thought for a while and said, "I give my opinion due to my own recognition. To be honest, I am on the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage too, but I am way much weaker than Wu Fa and Xuan Bing. However, I am pretty sure that I am just a bit slower than them in moving skills. But I couldn't even see a clear route of that white shadow. That means it truly is way faster than the best cultivators in the world... If there are people who can be that fast, nobody except two people were possible to do so..."

"Two? Who?" Ye Xiao asked.

"One is naturally the world's most powerful cultivator, Wu Fa..." Han Bingxue nodded and then shook his head, "However, I don't think he can be as fast as that..."

The man hiding in the dark was listening to every word of Han Bingxue.

"Two people. One is Wu Fa, then who is the other? Is it the great elder of Misty Cloud Palace, Xuan Bing?" Ye Xiao asked.

"No way. Xuan Bing is lower than Wu Fa in the ranking. If Wu Fa couldn't, nor could Xuan Bing... The other one... he might be the only person who could move as fast as that white shadow..." Han Bingxue sighed and said, "He is the first person who ate the fruits in the history, Zong Yuankai. If the old Prime Master Zong were alive, with his knowledge about the Divine Yin Yang Fruits, he might be able to take the fruits in such an unforeseen and undetected way."

...

Chapter 1180: Do Not Eat that!

Ye Xiao was stunned, and then after a while, he said, "Do you mean the man who used to take the first pair of Divine Yin Yang Fruit? The initiator of West Hall, Zong Yuankai? Well, if he were alive, he could probably do it, since he knew so well about the fruits that place. However, he is dead..."

Han Bingxue laughed wickedly and said, "Well, who knows whether Zong Yuankai is truly dead or not? It is a myth after all. However, I know one thing... I am pretty sure that Wu Fa, who claims to be invincible in the world has never made any troubles in West Hall!"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

The man in the dark frowned, but still followed them silently.

He looked doubtful in his eyes, but he wouldn't just give up following these two guys.

He was still determined.

Ye Xiao was helpless. He was quite confident that what he and Han Bingxue had just said could make anybody give up on following them. However, unexpectedly, that man was still there.

[Why?]

[Is he somebody else? Am I wrong?]

"Brother Han, I think that white shadow looked pretty weird. Don't you think so?" Ye Xiao said. That was an abrupt change of topic.

Han Bingxue was confused, but he still nodded to act in concert with Ye Xiao. In fact, he was freaking out in his head, but he had to answer, "Of course... That was not weird. That was incredibly fast! Holy hell!"

Ye Xiao lightly nodded and flew around a big tree to get into

another piece of forest. Then he nodded and said, "I feel that... the white shadow is abnormal... But I can't tell how it is different. It just felt weird..."

That was such an abrupt topic. Han Bingxue had to think hard about how to continue. The man who was following them was shocked. He was also lost in thoughts. [What is so weird about that white shadow? What is so abnormal about it?]

Now the man's head started to run in the flow the was designed by Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao hurriedly urged Erhuo in Boundless Space, "Erhuo, if I eat the fruits, can I regain my prime status, or even become stronger? I have a mindset of a top-level Dao Origin Stage cultivator after all!"

Erhuo meowed lazily and rolled up its eyeballs to Ye Xiao.

"A cultivator who eats the fruits can be boosted to the top level of Dao Origin Stage. That is true. The more powerful the cultivator's mindset is, the shorter time the transition takes. In fact, a worse mindset will take longer and harder time. However... there is no perfect way to instantly boost one's cultivation. The fruits are not perfect either... There is a special demonic attribute in the fruits... That is why it doesn't work on those demons but boost a human cultivator to the topmost level of the initial stages..."

Ye Xiao frowned and said, "What? The topmost level of the initial stages? Do you mean the top level of Dao Origin Stage?"

"That's not the point. Focus on the fruits, dude! The demonic attribute in the fruits might cause a significant impact on a man's sanity... He would unnoticeably follow the mind flows of demons, and eventually become a tool of the demons... The fruits are something the demons planted to create more demons... That's all... This is the real reason why I would destroy all their trees. Do you really think I am that narrow-minded? Why would I bother destroying so many trees just because of having loose bowels?"

"Think about it, why would all these fruits grow in the Demon's Realm? Why couldn't it grow in other worlds such as Qing-Yun Realm?"

Erhuo lazily played with the fruits. It was a bit upset about having a dull master. [Look at you. Yet I am the one who is being called Erhuo.]

"What? Do you mean I can't eat that?"

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[Holy hell! After all that we have done, now you are telling me I can't eat that!]

[After such making vast chaos, I got something that looks good but is completely useless? What the hell?]

"Meow meow meowwww..." Erhuo talked and made gestures again.

'What are you talking about? Completely useless? Things all have two sides, one is good while the other is evil. What we need is to erase the demonic attribute in these fruits. You can only eat the good parts of them!'

"Is it complicated to erase the thing? How long does it take? Master Kitty, you are the foremost spirit in chaos! I know you can do it very soon!" Ye Xiao said with hope.

Erhuo replied gloatingly and proudly, "Absolutely! Who am I? I am awesome! Three days is all I need! How about that? Stunningly fast, isn't it?"

[Three days!]

[Three days?]

Well, it was honestly not long, considering how complex the word was!

However... Ye Xiao cursed in his head. He was totally hopeless now... It would only take him three breaths to kill himself thirty

thousand times...

[Three days? You f*cking need three days?]

[It is stunningly fast, but also stunningly hopeless and depressing! How could you even gloat and feel proud on this...]

"If you don't mind becoming a tool of the demons, you can just eat them now. You eat them, and you become the best Dao Origin Stage cultivator. No kidding. You made the call. Nobody is standing in your way; Don't you think? My dear master!" Erhuo combed its whiskers and waved its little white paw lazily.

Ye Xiao was totally broken down. He awkwardly retreated from the Space.

Sometimes one had to take the bad consequence for the current good. However, he believed there was still time to think of other solution. Even if he ate the fruits, despite the possible danger in the future to solve the problem ahead of him, he might not be able to have a positive outcome eventually. The fruits could instantly make him become a top-level Dao Origin Stage Cultivators indeed, but Wu Fa was also a man who was boosted by the fruits. Besides, he might survive the fight against Wu Fa after eating the fruits, but what about Han Bingxue? Should he let Han Bingxue eat the fruits and take the risk too? They might both fall in the midway of the path of cultivation!

All in all, to eat the fruits was the worst solution! He decided to wait!

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue were already seven hundred miles away from Heaven's Terrace. The man who was following them was still like the worm in the rotten meat to them. They couldn't call for the golden hawk since they were tailed after.

Before the hawk landed, the two of them might be chopped into parts.

What else could they do?

"Brother Han, we are quite far away now. Do you think we can take a rest for a while?" Ye Xiao chose to stop at the highest spot in a clear field. He said, "I am exhausted after moving for a long time."

Han Bingxue looked confused in the eyes for a few seconds, and then he was enlightened. [It seems the problem remains unsolved. We have to keep playing this. This is not a long way to come. Ye Xiao or I, both won't be tired at any point. How is it possible that he is exhausted?]

...

Chapter 1181: Both Sides were Running!

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue had been talking disorderly and confusingly. Ye Xiao had been warning Han Bingxue about the dangerous situation. He was afraid the man who followed them would start a killing strike. Han Bingxue couldn't realize who was chasing after them, but that was the reason why he felt utterly terrified. Men always feared the unknown. He knew that they were in danger, but didn't know what danger it was. That was the most horrible feeling in his heart. As time passed, the fear was growing!

Han Bingxue thought, [Oh I am a terrified baby...]

He was honestly terrified, astonished, frightened, numb in the head, but he had to pretend calm and steady...

"Really? I don't think such a short distance could exhaust you!" Han Bingxue stood still, appearing calm and imposing. What a brilliant actor!

"I am exhausted in the heart! Ok?!" Ye Xiao took out the water bag and started to drink. "Back there, you talked to me through mind connection, telling me that it was improper for you to show up and tell them about the danger. You asked me to do it, to ease your mind. Now we are away from the danger. What do you think... if we go back there? Maybe the battle is over... If the fight is ended, this should be the time when the Heaven's Terrace has the least number of people. If the fruits come down again... isn't it our best chance to get the fruits?"

When Ye Xiao said the words, his eyes were twinkling with hope.

He wasn't acting though. He just thought that it might be an excellent way to get rid of that man's chase!

"What? Go back?" Han Bingxue was shocked.

He was confused. [Well, unlike the others, I know exactly where the fruits are right now! They are in your own pockets, aren't

they? Why do you want to go back? Are you acting? What a wonderful actor! I don't see anything fake at all! Don't tell me you are actually an excellent actor!]

Ye Xiao stood up and excitedly said, "Let's go! Let's go back to Heaven's Terrace! This is our opportunity! We should seize it!"

Han Bingxue made a long sigh and said, "Come on. Cut it off. I would rather choose to be beaten up to death than go back there."

"Well, just wait here then. I am going back." Ye Xiao decisively said, "I believe this is a great opportunity for us. If I miss this, there will be no chance for me to get the fruits anymore!"

Han Bingxue kept making sighs. After a while, he said, "You just can't stop coming up with random ideas, can you..." Then he followed up and lowered his head, said to Ye Xiao, "I must owe you a lot in my previous life! There must be something wrong in my head..."

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "Brother Han, you don't owe me anything. My master asked you to look after me. That is all I know. What is the story between you and my master by the way? Do you owe my master? Can you tell me?"

Han Bingxue nearly got the eyes pop out the eye frames.

Ye Xiao kept starting random topics. It was too abrupt. If Han Bingxue didn't have privacy with him, they would have been exposed.

Not only Ye Xiao, but also Han Bingxue was brilliant in acting! They were literally two wonderful actors!

However, Han Bingxue did so well in acting at the moment because he hadn't detected the enemy all the way along. It scared him a lot. He felt that the man in the dark must be one of the most horrible enemies in his life.

It was impossible that Xuan Bing would do this to them. Zong Yuankai should be dead. Only one man was possible!

Wu Fa!

Thinking of the name of this man, Han Bingxue couldn't stop trembling.

The only question he had in his head was why Wu Fa would chase them.

[Does he think that we have the fruits?]

[But... Why hasn't he attacked yet? What Ye Xiao said made him give up attacking us?]

[That's impossible.]

[Why?]

After grumbling for a while, he couldn't ease his mind, so he said, "You want to go back, Fine. But just stay safe. It is very likely there are still a lot of superior cultivators over there. The place could be still crowded... Just keep your safe in safety. If you dare to do anything reckless, I will knock you out and leave."

"Absolutely! I surely care about my own life!" Ye Xiao nodded.

Now he was relieved. It seemed Han Bingxue understood what he wanted.

The man in the dark frowned and watched the two of them going back cautiously. He was confused all of a sudden.

He was pretty sure that he had the best hiding skills, that nobody in Qing-Yun Realm could notice his existence when he was chasing after others. Besides, he was quite far away from Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue.

[The question is... If they didn't notice me, why would they turn over?]

[What is going on?]

[Well, they are right about something though... What they said about Zong Yuankai... Is it possible that the old man didn't truly

die?]

[The fruits... The Heaven's Terrace is empty at the moment... If they go back to that place, is it possible that they could take the fruits?]

On the way back to Heaven's Terrace, Ye Xiao kept thinking how to get rid of the stalker.

Precisely he was thinking about how to make that man leave automatically!

It was impossible to get rid of him. Any forcible action would lead to severe consequence!

However, he had done some actings trying to make that man leave, but it just didn't work.

The man was following them all the way back, in a certain distance, no rush, no impatience. It felt like he was ready to chase after them for the rest of his life.

Luckily, he didn't make any attacks either.

It was a frozen situation. Ye Xiao had to do whatever he felt should be done and see how long the man could spend on this. [There must be a lot of people back in Heaven's Terrace when we return. There is a large amount of them. I will make chaos in the crowd, and that may give me a chance to get away. It is better than this anyway. This is hopeless, and that gives me opportunity...]

[We don't have the fruits on us after all... Even though the fruits are in the Boundless Space, nobody can get access to it. Even Master Bai, Wan and Xiu, Meng Huaiqing are unable to check my Space, let alone cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm!]

...

On the other side.

In a range of mountains. Two shadows were fleeing fast like a wild wind. They both had blood stains on their clothes. They must

have been injured severely.

The two figures were both slim and beautiful, wearing white clothes. However, the white garments had been stained with blood. Maybe the blood was from their enemies, or perhaps it was theirs.

"Hang on, we are almost there... We will be safe soon..." The figure who was in the front kept holding the other.

...

Chapter 1182: Master and Disciple

"Master..." The one who was held weakly said, "Just put me down... If you keep holding me with you, we will... both die..."

The other one in the front looked sad, but spoke with steadfast eyes, "Chuchu, you are my disciple... No matter what... I won't leave you behind!

"We live together; We die together!"

That was striking.

The lady behind got her eyes turned red in tears. She gritted her teeth and pushed herself harder. That actually made her accelerate a little.

What her master said must have aroused her strong will of surviving. Since they lived together and they might die together, she would rather choose to fight for survival than give in to death!

These two ladies were Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu.

Since they were back to Qing-Yun Realm, Wenren Chuchu had been working really hard like she had gone mad. After Ye Xiao removed the disease inside her, she was boosted in cultivation.

She took every material the Misty Cloud Palace offered that could help her in cultivation. Anything she could reach, anything the sect could offer, she would use them all to improve herself.

Within a short period of time, she actually had become level five of Dream Origin Stage.

That was such a miracle!

There was no doubt it was a miracle. It was unfair to compare her to Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao used to be on the top of level nine of Dao Origin Stage, and he had a mindset of a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator. That was the perfect mindset for a cultivator. Before he returned to his prime status, he would get no obstruction in his

mindset. That was why he could improve so fast. It was totally sick!

As for Wenren Chuchu, she was just a talented woman, who was born an ordinary person. It was a real miracle that she could reach Dream Origin Stage in about one year after her illness was removed. She was completely different from Ye Xiao, a rigged player!

She had fought hard for the miracle.

Bing Xinyue had been cultivating in isolation soon after she came back. The illness in her was removed too. Her cultivation suddenly bounced up after she set loose to the limitation. After concentrating on cultivating for quite some time, she had reached the top of level two of Dao Origin Stage.

She should be able to reach a higher level considering her capability. However, sometimes it would bring hidden troubles if she boosted herself too fast. Even though she wasn't obstructed by the illness anymore, she still had a restrained mindset. The mental obstruction played an even more significant role after she reached Dao Origin Stage. To keep the balance of herself, it was the best to stay in level two of Dao Origin Stage for the moment!

After they broke through in cultivation, they should be in an accumulating time. They should have set themselves in a peaceful status to have some proper rests. The two of them still didn't often meet each other. Sometimes when they saw each other, they just said hi and nothing else. Deep in their hearts, they understood the awkwardness in each other's heart.

They all were hiding the secrets deep in the heart. They wouldn't let anybody know...

However, they both had the same sort of longing show in their eyes.

When they heard the story of the talented young man Ye

Chongxiao, they both believed that it was Ye Xiao.

They were right.

What happened was entirely out of their expectation. Ye Chongxiao became a disciple of Cold Moon Palace... Ye Chongxiao was hunted... Ye Chongxiao escaped to Cold Moon Palace, but encountered a sneaky attack and died...

When they heard the news, they felt like being struck by thunder. They couldn't believe it, but they had to. Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect worked together on the sneak attack, and the two prime masters both showed up to make sure it was done. How could Ye Chongxiao survive such a deadly plot?

After some time, their great elder, Xuan Bing went away and returned with an unbelievably large number of lotuses... Misty Cloud Palace even became an alliance to Ye Clan...

Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu were lit up in the hearts. They knew that Ye Xiao could not only remove the diseases in them but also plant high-quality Regeneration Lotuses... They started to believe the lotuses Elder Xuan Bing brought back must be related to Ye Xiao!

After that, Oracle District suddenly became the center of chaos. Ye Clan, one of the weakest clan in the world suddenly rose... Ye Nantian, who had just returned from the lower realm suddenly became the new chief of Ye Clan... Most importantly, his son, Ye Xiao, had returned to Ye Clan too... It was said he was a genius, who was Cold Moon Palace grand elders' private disciple...

Ye Clan became an ally to Cold Moon Palace, Misty Cloud Palace, Qiong-Hua Palace... All kinds of unbelievable things happened one after another...

Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu both knew who was playing the game behind the scenes. I had to be the particular person!

Ye Xiao!

Finally, they realized Ye Xiao wasn't dead. Instead, he was having all sorts of fortunate experience. However, they were still unhappy...

Wenren Chuchu seemed to be troubled, and Bing Xinyue appeared to have an unstable mindset too. Finally, one day, the two of them went out for a walk together after making some random excuse to join each other.

They were two talentless actresses. They tried to look casual and enjoying while they were traveling, but it was apparent that both of them were having a troubled mind. No matter where they were, how beautiful the scenery was, nothing freed them from the haunted souls.

In the end, Wenren Chuchu made a suggestion. "Should we go to Oracle District? I heard that there are many excellent views there!"

Bing Xinyue was excited about it, but she pretended to be calm. After hesitating for a while, she responded solemnly, "Since there are good views there, maybe we should go check it out."

From the ancient time, Oracle District was the least favorite place of all cultivators. It was full of empty lands and torrential waters!

However, the two of them weren't honestly going after the views, were they? No matter how boring that place was, they still wanted to go.

They had been moving exceptionally slowly toward the north to Oracle District. Neither of them had figured out what to say when they saw Ye Xiao... Other than that, what mattered the most was how the two ladies should face each other!

They didn't say the words, but they both knew each other's heart.

Both voices were sounding silent!

When they silently went past a big mountain, something went wrong!

It was the territory of Saint Sunlight Sect.

The two ladies were thinking about sneaking over that place. That was all. The elder of Misty Cloud Palace, Xuan Bing might be domineering, but not all the ladies in Misty Cloud Palace were respected the same way.

Qing-Yun Realm was ruled by violence after all. No matter how dominant their sect was, they might still get bullied if they were not stronger than the opponents. Maybe they could seek justice afterward, but that was after they suffered. They might get killed. Perhaps the sect would take revenge for them, but couldn't bring them back to life, could they? Revenge meant nothing to the dead!

Sometimes things always went against one's wish. They didn't want to mess with anybody, but somebody would get on them in advance. When they were about to rest in the night, they saw a large number of cultivators gathering up. It seemed to be a big event.

No matter how noisy those cultivators were, it was none of the two ladies' business after all. However, from the conversations among those people, the two ladies realized it was an operation against the Ye Clan!

Ye Nantian's Ye Clan!

...

Chapter 1183: Reveal the Scheme

Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu couldn't just stand aside since it was about Ye Clan.

With curiosity, the two ladies sneakily approached the people and reasonably but surprisingly heard a big scheme.

It was a deadly scheme against Ye Clan!

A few of the best cultivators of Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect were leading the plot. They were going to rob Ye Clan for the lotuses and destroy Ye Clan afterward!

The two ladies couldn't just let them do it!

They wouldn't leave.

As they stayed longer, they found that the scheme was actually aiming at Ye Xiao!

The two sects had pretty simple reasons to do so. First, Ye Clan was obviously rising up. It was basically impossible to stop. Second, Ye Xiao was the most important disciple of Cold Moon Palace, Ye Chongxiao. Everybody knew it now.

Most importantly, more and more Ye Clan's allies were showing up. The two great sects couldn't bear sitting aside and watching anymore.

Cold Moon Palace had shown apparent attitude against the other two factions. Ye Xiao was Ye Chongxiao, who was "killed" by the two great sects. Although they had no idea how Ye Chongxiao survived that murderous attack, they were sure he would take revenge for that as long as he became powerful enough... The two great sects plotted of murdering him in Cold Moon Palace after all.

When Ye Xiao started to proceed his revenge, Cold Moon Palace, Misty Cloud Palace, and Qiong-Hua Palace would only need to provide a little bit of help, then it would become a chaotic storm

against Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect.

Instead of waiting for it, they decided to nip it in the bud.

That was why they made a scheme together to thoroughly destroy Ye Clan once and for all. As long as Ye Clan was gone and Ye Xiao died, the alliance would be canceled right away. That would solve all the problems for good.

Hearing the details of the scheme from those people, the two ladies felt cold on the back.

"We need to inform Ye Clan, so that they can prepare for this." The two ladies were anxious.

However, the two sects must have started to proceed with the plan. They didn't know how far had the two sects done in the plan. These people they saw were probably only a part of the plan.

What about the others?

How long did they need to strike out?

The ladies were worried and anxious.

They couldn't let the two sects do this, no matter for what reason.

When they were going to leave, they bumped into somebody from Saint Sunlight Sect to attend the meeting. The ladies had just jumped off the tree, but got caught by the man who was approaching!

A man in silver clothes was moving fast with wind and thunder around him. When he just descended to the near sky, Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue just jumped up to the sky.

At that moment, both sides were terrified!

None of them could expect this.

"Guys! I found two spies outside!" The man in silver shouted and gave up descending. He forcibly dashed sideward and drew out his

long sword. With the flashing sword light, he was rushing toward Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu.

Bing Xinyue knew that things had gone wrong when she saw that man. It was a critical moment. She didn't have time to hesitate. She hurriedly swung her sword and used the sword to stop the enemy. When the point of her sword touched the enemy's sword, she actually felt severely oppressed on the chest! That man in silver was actually stronger than Bing Xinyue!

Luckily, she had a sharp and quick reaction. She hurriedly exhaled and let go of all the oppression on her chest. Meanwhile, she jumped up and dragged Wenren Chuchu up with her left hand. With the flying white clothes, they were like two fairies. She actually took use of the blast of the enemy's sword attack to jump away over a hundred meters away. After that, she started to run as fast as she could.

The man in silver was unable to stop the two ladies, even though he was stronger than Bing Xinyue because he was not so good at moving skills. Besides, that sword hit had blasted the lady away quite a certain distance. When the two ladies started to run, the man in silver couldn't chase up with them.

However, the man in silver was not alone. Before the ladies went far, people who were having the meeting had come out to follow. They were moving incredibly fast!

These men all looked annoyed and worried.

After all, they were planning on destroying an important clan for the current time. It might be a piece of cake to destroy Ye Clan before what had happened lately. However, Ye Clan had already become an ally to several influential forces. In another word, Ye Clan had become another influential force in the world.

If the information about their scheme leaked out, even though they were two of the seven great sects, they would not be able to afford the loss!

"The two women... It seems they are using Misty Cloud Palace's moving skill!"

An old man was shocked and shouted.

The others all turned pale on the faces!

[They are people of Misty Cloud Palace!]

[Misty Cloud Palace is precisely one of Ye Clan's allies! The two women of Misty Cloud Palace actually heard our secret meeting about the scheme against Ye Clan...]

[If Misty Cloud Palace's leadership knew about it... If they told Xuan Bing...]

[It will be a disaster!]

"We can't let them get away!" The old man was frightened, but his eyes were shining in fierceness. He shouted decisively, "We have to kill them both! No matter what it costs!"

Bing Xinyue was fleeing with Wenren Chuchu. For three days, they were running away from the chase for life. They didn't even have time to think about which direction they were heading to. They just kept fleeing forward following their instinct. Misty Cloud Palace had the best moving skill in the realm, and the two of them both were cultivating Ling Xiao Ice Art. Otherwise, they would both have been caught up by the men of the two sects!

If they were caught, they would die!

The two of them were both regretful and despair.

They had done this too recklessly at the first place. However, things happened so fast. It felt like what happened to them was arranged by the will of heavens. Maybe they were too unfortunate, or they could also be lucky.

Where they were was too far away from Oracle District, also a long way from Misty Cloud Palace.

They were far from both sides, far from help!

No forces that would be willing to offer them help were around this place.

They were entirely on their own!

In the three days of escape, Bing Xinyue was supporting herself with her fast recovering ability, extraordinary moving skill, and excellent endurance. The two of them both got severely injured though.

Wenren Chuchu was severely wounded.

She had been shocked inside, cut on the back, and hit by a palm strike on the shoulder.

She was going to fall unconscious at any second.

...

Chapter 1184: Do You Regret?

The men of the two sects were approaching. Bing Xinyue suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. She started to consume her life energy and took Wenren Chuchu to fly through a dense forest, to pull away from the enemies.

She was well aware that this was extremely serious. Although the men who were chasing after them were all below level four of Dao Origin Stage, including some Dream Origin Stage small figures, she knew it was only temporary.

Ye Clan was not really that powerful after all. The two sects didn't need to send their best cultivators to proceed with this plan.

After what just happened, Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect might not be able to keep their best forces aside anymore.

They would send their best cultivators.

They would do anything it took to destroy Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu, and wipe out every evidence!

Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect were not brave enough to let the two ladies report what they just learned to Misty Cloud Palace!

When they realized these men couldn't kill Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu in a short time, they would definitely send their elites, their elders, grand elders, even their prime master to end the two ladies lives!

Bing Xinyue knew that if she didn't get powerful support or reached a safe place before the enemies' best forces arrived, she would die with Wenren Chuchu in this hunt!

That was why she chose to burn her life energy to accelerate herself. She was pushing herself to the fastest status at the moment!

She was almost seven times faster than her best!

Two beautiful ladies were flashing over in the sky.

"Go!"

The men who were chasing them were all having red eyes.

"Whatever it takes, even our lives, we can't let them escape!"

"Send a message to the sect! We need support! We can't risk this!"

"Now?"

"You are damn right! Now!"

They had been afraid that they might get punished if they told the sect in the beginning, but now they couldn't care about that anymore.

The only thought they had... was to make sure the two women died.

This was way too severe to be responsible for...

...

Under a precipice.

"Chuchu, how do you feel?" Bing Xinyue wiped the blood stain on her own lips. She was pouring her energy into Wenren Chuchu's body.

"Hmm..." Wenren Chuchu moaned and opened her eyes.
"Master... I... I am fine. Where are we?"

"Somewhere safe. At least for now..." Bing Xinyue was frowning.
"But I don't think it is going to last long. When you feel better, we leave right away."

Wenren Chuchu's eyes became even fainter than earlier. She thought for a while and slowly said, "Master, I beg you one thing..."

"Stop talking nonsense. Focus on your condition right now." Bing Xinyue interrupted her decisively. She started to pour more energy

into Wenren Chuchu in a faster rate. She wanted her disciple to get better as soon as possible.

She knew what Wenren Chuchu was going to say.

"No... Please. If I don't say it now, I may never have another chance. Please, let me finish it!" Wenren Chuchu suddenly grabbed Bing Xinyue's arm and looked at her with pleading in the eyes. "Master... If you don't promise this, I... I won't be in peace even after death!"

Bing Xinyue closed her eyes and stayed silent for a while. Then she said, "If you are asking me to run for my own life, you can cut it now. It is simply a waste of time."

Wenren Chuchu deplorably said, "Master, think about the current situation. If you don't go now, we... we both will die..."

Bing Xinyue took a breath and didn't say a word.

"Master, please. Listen to me. If we stay together, we will eventually go to die. If you go now, you may get away from the chase. As long as you can survive this and make it back, they may not kill me. They may use me as a hostage to put suppression on you..." Wenren Chuchu said.

"Chuchu, what you said seems to be reasonable. However, it is not. I won't waste more time arguing against it. Just tell me. Do you even believe your theory yourself? Do you? If you don't believe it, don't mention it again!" Bing Xinyue shouted in a low voice.

Wenren Chuchu was born in a royal family. She always had a scheming mind. Bing Xinyue always would listen to her advice. However, this was not some ordinary situation. The two sects would never think of having a hostage. They would simply kill whoever they could catch. One died, they had fifty percent chance to keep the secret. Two died, their secret would be safe with death. Wenren Chuchu was lying!

"Master, this is not just about you or me... it is about... him... It is

about the survival of Ye Clan..." Wenren Chuchu weakly said, "As long as one of us can make it back safely, Ye Clan will be saved from this crisis... If we both died, Ye Clan would be destroyed."

Bing Xinyue gritted her teeth and started to pour even more energy into Wenren Chuchu. She didn't say a word.

"If this were only concerning our own lives, I wouldn't regret dying with you, master... I wouldn't waste time on talking... But... this is different..." Wenren Chuchu slightly shook her head and started to shed tears. "I wish I will die the next second after pouring all the life energy of me into your body... so that you can fly faster... I will do it. I certainly will..."

"Master, if I were you, I would definitely run by myself. What you are doing is unwise... We are in a critical moment now. You can't let your emotion make the decision..."

"All I can do is to bring you to death with me. I am an encumbrance... That's all..."

"You are not! You are my disciple! You are, and you will always be my beloved disciple!" Bing Xinyue looked determined. "Stop this now. If you care about Ye Xiao that much, then... get yourself together now and go help him! Otherwise, just let us both die in this place. I am not as wise and rational as you. I am not a decisive person. I care too much!"

Wenren Chuchu looked disappointed. She looked at Bing Xinyue and begged, "Master, please..."

Bing Xinyue's face suddenly turned dark. She hurriedly hit Wenren Chuchu with one finger to forcibly stop her from running spiritual power. Then she scolded in a low voice, "How dare you, Chuchu! How could you even think of killing yourself? Chuchu, I am utterly disappointed!"

Wenren Chuchu powerlessly looked at Bing Xinyue, shed tears and said, "Master... If there is a way to survival, I will seize it..."

But... it is nearly impossible for us to survive both... If you keep staying with me, we are both going to die..."

She was still begging Bing Xinyue with her full heart. If Bing Xinyue didn't know Wenren Chuchu's martial arts so well, she might not be able to notice it when Wenren Chuchu tried to end her own life. Wenren Chuchu could have been dead.

Bing Xinyue didn't talk. After a while, she finally sorted Wenren Chuchu's Jing and Mai to a well status. She sighed and said, "Chuchu... Do you regret?"

...

Chapter 1185: The Woes of the Princess

"Regret?" Wenren Chuchu was blank for a while. She understood Bing Xinyue would never leave her behind, so she started to operate every bit of her energy to accelerate the recovery. When she heard Bing Xinyue's question, she was lost.

"Don't you understand what I am asking?" Bing Xinyue held her own knees. While staring at the dark sky with a pair of dazed eyes, she murmured as if she was dreaming, "You are a princess of a kingdom in the lower realm. You used to be elegant and protected. Your position in a kingdom was only below one person. In the lower realm, you had a much easier and better life... Why did you have to come to this world... Qing-Yun Realm... where only the strong will be worshipped... Now that you are almost at the end of your life, do you regret?"

Wenren Chuchu sorrowfully smiled and said, "Master, why ask? How could I regret?"

Bing Xinyue said, "For cultivators in Land of Han-Yang, we are like gods. Everybody in this realm is like a god to them... We are powerful; we move like the wind; we travel within seconds; we do everything. However, after experiencing everything in this world, one will learn the cruelty of this world.

"Qing-Yun Realm's cruelty made it a hundred times more difficult to survive than in Land of Han-Yang. In fact, this world is much less orderly than Land of Han-Yang...

"With your background, you could live a wealthy life. You could spend your life in peace and health. With your power and your wisdom, you can even rule the entire Land of Han-Yang and look down upon all the others in the world. Nothing was impossible. However, you chose to come to this place to suffer. Now you are in this fatal crisis. It is most likely that you will die... Don't you regret even a bit?"

Bing Xinyue looked at Wenren Chuchu sentimentally. She was taking in a light voice, but heavy words.

"Regret..." Wenren Chuchu bitterly smiled and blandly said, "Master, you obviously don't understand what royal life is like. You certainly have no idea what it feels like... to be a princess."

She smiled with self-mockery and said, "You know what. Some people are living miserable lives in a kingdom. Some people are living the poorest lives. There are also people who deserve to die. Some could not be forgiven even to be beheaded a hundred times. However, there was one kind of people who were most piteous. These people usually are the few. However, they exist in every dynasty. They are... the princesses of a country."

"Urh..." Bing Xinyue was surprised. She just casually asked a question, never expected to get such a surprising answer. It was an unbelievable and confusing answer. So she asked, "How so?"

"Maybe you won't agree. Maybe you think I would say so just because I was a princess myself. Maybe you will argue that many people have more miserable lives than me..." Wenren Chuchu bitterly smiled and said, "However, living in the society, no matter how poor or unfortunate a person was, he or she could change the life after enough efforts.

"Those malfeasants, treacherous... they had their chance to make their own choices. It was their own choices that led them to where they were in the end.

"Those killers, murderers, who ended up in prison or dead, also made their own choices before what they became.

"There were two keywords... Change and choice.

"However, a princess... A princess's life is always settled at the moment she was born. She doesn't have the right to change. She doesn't get to choose.

"If she is a princess of a strong country, who is loved by the king,

she must be fortunate. She won't have to worry about her own marriage. Before she gets married, she can enjoy everything the kingdom offers to her. When the time comes, she had to marry somebody to serve the political purpose of her father. Mostly the king will let her marry the son of some influential official as a reward.

"Is the husband a capable man? Is the young man a good man? Will he treat the princess well? Nobody cares. Princess is only a bargaining chip or a tool.

"Well, that is a lucky one though. The most fortunate. Since the princess is born into a strong kingdom, she doesn't have to marry somebody in another country. No matter who she marries to, that man's family would show her respect, at least in appearance, because of the awe of the royal power. However, the princess will never get the happy afterlife like any ordinary woman can have!

"In fact, even a princess in a strong country may get mistreated by the king. It will be a tragedy if a princess isn't loved by her father. She will have to follow all the strict and inhuman rules. Even some maids and eunuchs can tease her as they like to. When she grows up and get married, she may still have to suffer the mistreatment from her husband. A princess who isn't loved by the king is merely a useless tool! She is useless to the king, also to her own husband!

"No matter what, these are both endurable lives for a princess. No matter what their afterlife will be, they can always see their families from time to time and eventually die in peace. It may not be a wonderful life, but not the worst!

"The most tragic life of a princess is the life of a princess of a weak country. Such a princess is born to grow up and marry somebody in another country. She will have to go somewhere she has never heard of before, to marry a man that she has never even heard of. And that man will be the one who rules her afterlife.

"It is called peace-making marriage. A country exchanges the princess for a certain period of peaceful time... More precisely, the princess is a thing that is sold to somebody who can make decisions in a country.

"Normally, the peace-making marriage happens between to hostile countries! If they are not enemies to each other, why would one country send the princess to the other as an exchange for peace... That princess will spend the rest of her life sleeping and serving the enemy of her own country! She will submit to all kinds of mistreatments. Nobody will help her."

Wenren Chuchu was talking with bitterness and self-mockery.

"A kingdom raises the princess to let the enemies mistreat her as they wish! That is the tragedy of the weak countries.

"In fact, if the mother country stays weak in the princess's life, it may not be too difficult for her to keep living through the misery... If her mother country rises up stronger after the particular period of peaceful time, what the king wants will be washing the disgraces and forwardly starting a war.

"If that happens, the princess will be the poorest and most piteous person. Her family sends an army to fight her husband's family. Her own families wouldn't care about her; Nor will her husband!"

Wenren Chuchu looked deeply grieved, but spoke in a calm voice, "This is the life of a princess! If a person is poor, unfortunate, bullied, he or she can fight for a change. However, a princess can never make a difference in her life. Her life is doomed from the moment she was born. She sees the future, but has nothing to do to make a change of it!

"Everybody in the world has the right to fight for a better life, except the princesses! Their lives are doomed!

"So, princess... is the most pathetic and tragic kind of people in

the world, even though the life of a princess looks so glaringly wealthy!" Wenren Chuchu's eyes seemed to burn with the flame of anger. She bitterly smiled and said, "Even a prostitute has her right to make her own decision at some points. At least, if she hates a man, she can refuse to sleep with him no matter how much he would love to pay. A prostitute has the right to choose her client. A princess doesn't have it!

"When a woman is born as a princess, she is always a princess! She doesn't have the right to give it up!"

...

Chapter 1186: One Has to Fight for Happiness!

Wenren Chuchu bitterly smiled and said, "Master, if I didn't choose to follow you, if my father didn't believe I belong to the upper realm, I wouldn't be able to get rid of my fate as a princess. How would I regret?"

"Even if I will be cut into pieces in this world after living solitarily for my whole life..." She decisively said, "I wouldn't even think of going back to be a princess! That is why I have always been working so hard in cultivation."

Bing Xinyue was utterly wordless at the moment.

She just asked a random question to keep Wenren Chuchu talking, so that she wouldn't think of killing herself. However, the long speech of the life of a princess was unexpected.

If the rulers in Land of Han-Yang heard what Wenren Chuchu just said, they would all feel disdainful and indifferent. Even the citizens who had clear minds wouldn't agree with her theory. Since a princess was born with wealth, she was bound to pay for what she was granted. When a princess married a man in another country, it might be the mistreatment of the princess herself but was a blessing to the entire county. Sacrificing a prince exchanged the peace for all the people. A princess was born with the wealth and power that nobody else could have. If she also had freedom and all other pleasant things, it would be so unfair! Nobody got all the best things in the world!

However, Bing Xinyue was Wenren Chuchu's master and was also a woman. That was why she was shocked and touched!

"I never regret. I never have." Wenren Chuchu smiled and confirmedly said, "After the day I was free from the invisible chain of being a princess, I finally started my own life... I can..."

She paused and bravely said, "I can love whoever I love. I can do whatever I can for the people I love, I care, with all my heart. Maybe he doesn't know. Perhaps he doesn't want me to. Maybe he doesn't love me back..."

"But I do it for my own life. I do things for the people I love to approach the happiness that I long for."

"That is the perfect path of a woman's life. I always do."

She bravely looked into Bing Xinyue's eyes and said in a low but clear voice, "Master, what do you think?"

Bing Xinyue embarrassedly turned over her head. After a while, she answered, "I don't know."

Wenren Chuchu smiled and weakly said, "Master... You look frosty, arrogant, isolate, but deep inside your heart, it is soft... If I am going to fight against you for something... you will probably lose."

Wenren Chuchu's dim eyes suddenly shined with a colorful glow. She powerlessly said, "Master... Sometimes you have to fight for happiness... Happiness is limited... Everybody wants it. One has to fight for it. I mean it."

"On the way to happiness... we can't waste our time in dignity and courtesy. They are obstructions that stop us from happiness... After all, you get it or you don't get it. That's the only possible ways!"

"Happiness is all the same in all women's eyes... You get it, then you get happiness. I get it, then I get happiness... I am talking about the happiness that lasts for a lifetime."

"Master... you... you really need to make a change. Otherwise, no matter who you are fighting against... you won't get it..."

"Happiness never drops into your hands... You have fight for it..."

Bing Xinyue stayed silent for a longer time.

Wenren Chuchu closed her eyes. It seemed she was too tired.

In her heart, she felt the bitterness and also relief.

[Master, I am sorry. I know I shouldn't have said these words to you no matter what situation it is... I... I am your disciple... I don't get to teach you anything...]

[Besides... we are rivals on this matter...]

[However, I am dying. Maybe tomorrow, we will never see each other again...]

[Master, you can survive this. Just leave me, and you will very likely be rescued. Rather than we both die in this place, I prefer you to survive and to become brave to fight for the happiness you deserve...]

[Don't hesitate. No matter who is standing in your way...]

[Otherwise, you won't get it...]

[Men's battle is full of blood and fire. Women's battle is calm and noiseless, but also full of blood!]

She closed her eyes, coughing heavily. She tried so hard to operate her spiritual power to recover herself a little. She was doing this, not to run away with Bing Xinyue, but... to be able to stay behind and fight for some time for Bing Xinyue. Even a few seconds could save her.

Wenren Chuchu felt complete for such a life!

The night was getting darker.

In the darkest moment, Bing Xinyue had a feeling that was warning herself in her heart. [Danger! Danger approaching!]

She started to have such feeling only in this escape.

She had no idea where she got such capability though. It was excellently useful, and always warned her at the right time!

During the long escape and fights, she realized her power was

increasing.

Her power was boosting incredibly fast. Even though she was such an experienced cultivator, she had never heard of such a thing.

It seemed to be an accident, but she somehow felt reasonable...

It seemed a mysterious power had been hiding deep inside her body and it was waking up recently.

She took a deep breath, grabbed Wenren Chuchu, put her on the back, tied her up, and quietly flew away. She was heading in a different direction this time!

After the time of half pot of tea, three figures silently arrived at the place the two ladies had been resting in. They sneakily entered the cave-like three ghosts.

The three of them all operated their spiritual minds and withdrew them right away. Soon they waved their sleeves and flew out. "Targets are gone! They shouldn't be far... The incense was still warm. They must have left only a while ago."

"Transmit order!"

- Shoot Shoot Shoot... -

Several shooting fires rushed up to the sky. Suddenly the fireworks made a colorful sky. People within ten miles could all see it.

"Skip direction we came from. One of them is severely injured. It is impossible they will go the east since it is where we just came from. The south and the north have been occupied. They won't dare to go either. There is only one direction, West."

"Guys lets head to the west!"

"West! Seal all the tunnels! Don't miss anything!"

"Women are always the easiest to track." A slim old man showed a cruel smile and said, "No matter how they try to cover

themselves, they never hide the smell of women. It is the hardest to cover the smell of nature."

"Let's go!"

The three people fled out.

...

Chapter 1187: Absolute Surprise

"Be aware! Do not draw any more attention... Look at you, making twinkling lightning and howling wind. People from thousands of miles away can see you. What? Are you so eager to show others your Dao Origin Stage capability?" The old man blandly scolded. He wasn't angry but sounded imposing. "Will you stop being Dao Origin Stage cultivators once you stop making that lightning and noises?"

When the old man was talking, the others all slightly bowed to listen.

"Elder Yuan, it is the Heaven's Terrace two thousand miles ahead of us..." A big-beard man said, "Over there..."

"Luckily Misty Cloud Palace people would never be to Heaven's Terrace! Otherwise, this may have become more complicated! Anyway, catch them before reaching Heaven's Terrace!"

The elder looked solemn and continued, "If they go to Heaven's Terrace, I am afraid our secret will not be safe anymore. There are too many people in Heaven's Terrae after all."

"Yes!"

"At any cost!" The elder spoke in a deep voice, "We should even give up all our lives on the way to Heaven's Terrace to catch the two women... We can't let them approach Heaven's Terrace!"

...

In the darkness of the night, suddenly sword lights were flickering. A sword strike was moving ahead as if it was going to tear the dark sky apart.

Bing Xinyue's eyes turned cold. The long sword in her hand was swung out and crashed the sword attack. As the swords crashed, it made a deep sound like a thunderclap. Sparks shot away and shined on a few figures in the dark. These people were all showing

cruel and vicious faces.

When the two swords crashed, the sword light dimmed out, and one of the shadows in the dark spat out a mouthful of blood.

Apparently, that sneaky sword attack didn't serve the purpose of him. Instead, it hurt him badly.

Bing Xinyue won the first round, but she didn't look happy at all. She didn't even have time to get her sword back before she jumped up immediately. Almost at the moment when the two swords crashed she had thrust away.

However, the sound of other swords flicking the air was sounding behind. They were aiming at Bing Xinyue!

Everybody was silently watching the attack!

At the moment, every attack was set to take the life of her.

Bing Xinyue had been moving so fast in the air, but when the sword attack was approaching, she forcibly twisted her posture. The next moment, the sword was flying over touching her skin. With some blood spilling out, she had stepped on the top of a big tree.

When she just stood on the tree, three more streams of sword lights were shooting over. Three cultivators together had made a murderous attack. The next moment, one of the three men moved to the place before Bing Xinyue while the other two were approaching from the two sides!

The three swords were shooting in the sky with flickering lightning. It seemed the swords were covered by the sword lights.

It meant the three cultivators were completely manipulating the swords in the air.

They must be at least level five of Dao Origin Stage!

Otherwise, they couldn't have controlled the swords like that.

She hadn't stood firmly yet, but her left foot slightly pushed

down a bit. That big tree actually fell down because of that slight push. She then flew up lightly and split her feet in an amazing posture.

When the two swords moved under her, she stepped right on the two swords. The next moment, her slim figure flashed in the sky, and the three swords blasted in strong lights.

A scorching light shot over.

Bing Xinyue spat out a mouthful of blood to the sky while she was shooting upward. She actually dodged the last sword attack in an extremely close distance.

The next moment, she flashed again and disappeared.

That last sword attack didn't stop but continued rushing ahead.

Everybody was shocked!

Three at least level five Dao Origin Stage cultivators together made a murderous attack with full effort, yet failed to catch the woman!

Bing Xinyue had been injured by the three swords, but she escaped after all!

That was absolutely a surprise.

The three men stood there with their swords in the hands, full of doubts in their eyes.

"Who said... that this woman is merely level two of Dao Origin Stage?" An old man shouted with a dark face, "Fucking bullshit! Even a cultivator on the top of level five could never be able to escape that attack! How ridiculous our intelligence is!"

Another old man looked quite upset too. He cursed angrily, "That's right! A bunch of pig heads! They are not going to be forgiven for giving us such absurd information!"

The intelligence people were innocent though.

They had confirmed that Bing Xinyue was in level two of Dao Origin Stage, even lower. In fact, if she was a level five Dao Origin Stage cultivator, she could have killed all the people who were having that secret meeting in the first place. She wouldn't have to run away...

However, they just couldn't explain why three of level five cultivators together couldn't catch her. There was no explanation for what had happened!

"Useless fools!"

A few people arrived and checked the scene. After a while, they cursed and left.

"We are approaching her! There is no way she can get away again!"

"It wasn't easy to step on the sword lights just she did earlier though. Anyway, she was deadly injured!"

"I wonder how long she can keep consuming her life energy!"

"Go!"

...

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue casually walked back to Heaven's Terrace. When they looked around, all that got into their eyes were blood and dead like hell.

It might be exaggerated to said somewhere looked like hell, but this place was precisely appearing as a hell. The bodies, the blood... Nothing could adequately describe the horrible scene!

After them, the man who was following was still around.

That man had thought it through already. He had to keep following these two guys even if they weren't the ones who took the fruits. Since Heaven's Terrace was ruined, there must be somebody powerful involved in this matter. Whoever did the massacre must have taken the fruits. The man was hoping maybe

he could find something different since these two fellows were acting pretty weird!

Ye Xiao exclaimed when he saw what happened. "Oh my heavens... This..."

His face suddenly turned pale. What a clear image of a rookie in the martial world!

Han Bingxue couldn't stop his face twisting.

[These dead bodies... Are they all killed by the same people?]

Ye Xiao was pretending when he looked shocked, but Han Bingxue was really appalled like that. After all, no matter how strong and stable he was, when there were such a large number of dead bodies before his eyes, it was reasonable that he would be astonished.

The smell of blood was in the air. Even the wild wind couldn't blow it away in a short time.

"This..."

Han Bingxue looked at the bodies on the floor and couldn't say a word.

Ye Xiao looked shocked, but in fact, he was a bit terrified too. He knew something was not right.

Something he couldn't predict was happening... The blood smell in the air aroused the killing intent of the man who was following behind.

The man was about to kill...

[What should I do to put this off...]

When Ye Xiao was anxiously thinking about possible solutions, he suddenly sighed. [It is too late.]

A dark shadow had suddenly shown up on the platform of Heaven's Terrace.

That man had finally shown himself.

...

Chapter 1188: Sword Attack of Nobody; World-trembling!

That man showed up with dark smoke wrapping around him. His face couldn't be seen. Nor could his body. As he moved, it was like a mass of dark smoke moving.

It made Ye Xiao think of somebody else—the Great Elder of Misty Cloud Palace, Xuan Bing.

When Xuan Bing showed up, it looked exactly the same as this man.

Maybe the dominant figures in Qing-Yun Realm all liked to play this smoky trick. Ye Xiao didn't know what to say about it!

In fact, they weren't exactly the same dark smoke though. When Xuan Bing showed up, her dark smoke showed a brisk cold killing intent; this man here only showed a bone-piercing frosty viciousness.

- Clang! -

Han Bingxue made a reaction immediately. He drew out his long sword and shouted, "Who is it?"

The dark shadow didn't move. The smoke was rolling in the air. A weird voice asked him back, "Are you Han Bingxue?"

His voice sounded like steals cracking. It was cold and oppressing, terrifying people.

Han Bingxue turned stiff in his entire body and shouted, "Are you Wu Fa?"

The shadow didn't respond this time. He didn't admit it or deny it. The Heaven's Terrace suddenly started to blow cold wind, like they were standing in the world of death.

The wind that always blew to Heaven's Terrace howled like ghost

crying. That continual howling sound crept them out.

On the upper part of that human-shape dark shadow, there suddenly appeared two small holes, which looked just like a pair of its eyes. The man's cold gaze went through the holes and focused on Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue. The man blandly said, "Give me the fruits you got, and I will spare you a quick death."

Han Bingxue became calm and steady when he heard the man speaking. He indifferently sneered, "The world's recognized dominant cultivator, the most powerful figure in the realm, actually becomes a robber! Since when did you start to do such a filthy thing? Directly asking for others' belongings and threatening others' lives. Look what you are doing. What a breaking news to the world. People must be really interested in this!"

The dark shadow still stood there firmly like a mountain. He still didn't admit or deny it. His cold eyes kept staring at Han Bingxue, and he blandly said, "The Unique in the World? That is totally bullsh*t! You don't deserve it! Even though you have the power of level nine of Dao Origin Stage, you still need to make an attack with your filthy mouth, huh? I guess when people talk about dominant cultivators, they should be more strict to the standard!"

Han Bingxue was pissed. He shouted, "It is none of your business how I use my mouth! Whether I deserve the title or not, you are not the one to judge! Why don't you come over and try if I deserve it or not?"

The dark shadow was suddenly waving. - Puff! - A stream of smoke shot out from inside that mass of dark smoke.

It was like a long dragon moving to Han Bingxue instantly.

The smoke suddenly stopped in front of him and then turned into the shape of a long sword. However, the sword looked so fake.

"It is indeed useless to talk much. Only practice tells the truth. Move your sword! Let's see if you deserve the name of the Unique

in the World!"

The man in the dark smoke coldly said.

Han Bingxue shouted and made a sword strike down from the sky. It was an overwhelming attack with endless cold qi filling the air.

At the moment Han Bingxue's sword moved down, the long sword that was formed by the smoke moved too. It directly pierced Han Bingxue's sword. An attack on an attack.

That smoke sword moved a bit later than Han Bingxue. However, it made the hit first. The sword fiercely hit Han Bingxue's sword!

That was unexpected and frightening!

Han Bingxue's thrusting sword attack was actually stopped! The sound of his sword flicking the air was gone!

That smoke sword casually hit his sword and he couldn't move the sword any further! That meant... no matter who that man was, he must be much more potent than Han Bingxue...

Han Bingxue's face turned dark and prepared to withdraw his sword.

When he was about to take his sword back, when the sword started to move backward back to him, the long smoke sword actually moved forward again! It hit Han Bingxue's sword up high in the air.

At this moment, Han Bingxue's chest was uncovered! His vitals all showed up to the smoke sword!

He was utterly terrified. He hurriedly pulled back the sword and prepared another attack. However, when he was ready to attack, the smoke sword had already moved over to Han Bingxue pointing at his throat!

Han Bingxue rolled his sword and made steps around to dodge the attack on his throat! However, the smoke sword actually

changed to side swing! It was going to cut his head off! He was terrified, hurriedly made seven steps backward so fast that it was difficult to see his feet clearly when he was moving. It was his famous stunt, Seven Stars Phantom.

That smoke sword kept moving around his throat, chasing directions. After every step Han Bingxue took, the smoke sword became more threatening.

After seven steps, the stunt was finished. Han Bingxue still couldn't get rid that sword. He had no other choices but only to fall behind and lie on the floor. Finally, he successfully dodged the smoke sword's lethal attack!

That smoke sword didn't give up though. After missing the hit, it suddenly started to strike down fast. It was actually aiming at Han Bingxue's crotch.

Han Bingxue realized where the smoke sword was going to hit, so he felt terrified again. Hurriedly he kicked the floor with both feet, and his entire body shot away on the floor. At this moment, he had completely lost the dignity of a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator...

After surviving from that posterity-extinct attack, he couldn't immediately calm down from the fear yet. He was sure if that smoke sword still got any further attacks. When he tried to see the smoke sword, he found the sword suddenly cleared away while it was moving halfway down to the bottom.

The energy in that smoke had run out.

The smoke was gone, but Han Bingxue was still sweating with a red face.

He was such an experienced cultivator who had seen and been through countless battles. However, he had never felt so frightened ever before. He had been dangling on the edge between life and death for the past few minutes!

The dark shadow hadn't move a bit since the smoke sword appeared. Even the dark smoke around that man had frozen.

That sword 's moving path was designed beforehand. He only poured enough energy into the smoke sword and waited till every move of the sword was made. He did nothing after that.

Even when the smoke sword was disappearing, he didn't even think of adding more energy to it.

However, that automatic smoke sword of nobody nearly killed Han Bingxue, a level nine Dao Origin Stage superior cultivator, in one strike!

...

Chapter 1189: Fury!

Han Bingxue was struggling on edge between life and death. When he confirmed that it was safe, he was totally wrecked.

He was terrified! He was really terrified!

A top-level Dao Origin Cultivator was also a human being. He might be brave to face a lethal situation one or two times, but to get through many times in a row was too terrifying! How could he not be frightened?

Most importantly, when the smoke sword was chasing after him, he found that his Dao Origin Stage power was blocked! He couldn't do any of his own secret movements...

He was blocked!

Maybe he just couldn't have time to do it!

During the fight, the only thing he did was to make the sword attack in the beginning. After that, he just kept defending himself and dodging away, stepping back again and again!

That smoke sword was terrific!

If the smoke didn't disappear itself, it could have killed him by the last strike, because he was in the dead end at that moment!

He would be slaughtered! If he were killed in that way, it would be disgraced and humiliated.

Ye Xiao was surprised too!

That smoke sword attack showed the incredible prediction of that man!

The man in the dark smoke had designed everything including the energy flow, the moving routes of the sword, the reactions of Han Bingxue, and other details. He saw every move that Han Bingxue would make.

Nineteen! He predicted nineteen movements beforehand.

Most importantly, the smoke sword seemed fierce, but the man didn't plan to kill anybody in the first place. Otherwise, he would have poured a little bit energy into that smoke to get Han Bingxue killed right there!

Ye Xiao would never be able to save him!

Ye Xiao stared at the dark smoke. He had an unprecedented feeling of terror and threats.

The man never admitted that he was Wu Fa. However, that smoke sword proved him a most potent cultivator in the realm!

He could actually set up every step and predict every move of the enemy.

He was also incredibly confident!

One step went wrong and what he did would be a total joke! Yet he was so confident about it!

Nothing went wrong at all.

Xuan Bing hadn't done this ever, so it was hard to compare her to this man. However, Ye Xiao guessed Xuan Bing wouldn't be able to make such an incredible manipulating art.

[This... This must be... the Tittle Phase!]

Tittle Phase!

Ye Xiao was suddenly enlightened. He had heard about the Tittle Phase, which was one of the three distinctive phases on the top of Dao Origin Stage. The three grand elders in Cold Moon Palace told him. In Tittle Phase, one could see through the infinitesimal detail to the significance. That was where the limitation of the three grand elders stayed!

Ye Xiao didn't one hundred percent believe what the three old men told him in the past because the three elders made it sound too magical. They said that when a cultivator was in Tittle Phase,

he could see the essences of all weapons through the surfaces and destroy the weapons instantly. When a cultivator reached the top of the Tittle Phase, he could see through all things in the world, including the energy flow of a palm hit, the air flow of wind! He could have a complete scan of the enemy!

As Ye Xiao finally watched how marvelous the Tittle Phase could enhance a person, he was enlightened. That smoke sword was merely a strike of a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator. In fact, it was not anything lethal for Han Bingxue.

However, the smoke sword took moves that all were correctly pointing against Han Bingxue's weakness from the beginning to the end. The first move of the smoke sword had restrained Han Bingxue's reacting space. The only thing he could do was to draw back his sword and step back. When he stepped back, he showed his weakness. No matter how fast he was, the smoke sword could take a second move right in time.

That moment was when Han Bingxue lost the fight already. Every move of the smoke sword was forcing Han Bingxue to take a specific reaction. Even though his unique footwork looked great, it was just a movement skill facing the automatically moving smoke sword. Step by step, he was forced to the dead end. What touched Ye Xiao most was the last attack of the smoke sword. It was a "half strike". The half strike was a perfect move too, just like the previous moves. It was about to strike down on Han Bingxue when he just finished a dodging movement and didn't have time to take the next step yet. Although Han Bingxue had prepared to thrust aside, the smoke sword might also kill him if that man poured a little bit more energy into the smoke sword. That man knew it, so did Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue. That was why Han Bingxue was so frightened. What frightened him and Ye Xiao both was that the smoke sword's moving path was designed beforehand by that man in the dark smoke. It was so horrible that a man could control the development of a situation in such a precise way!

"Han Bingxue." The man in the dark smoke was staring at Han Bingxue with his bland eyes. He said, "I didn't want to kill you when I made that moving sword. If I did, you would have been dead. I guess you know it!"

He paused and said, "Well... I just used thirty percent power."

Han Bingxue stood up with a pale face, but coldly said, "I don't care if you were using five percent or thirty percent power, you attacked anyway. I, Han Bingxue, don't need your favor!"

"I never want you to be grateful." In the dark smoke, the man's eyes were flickering like ghost fire. He coldly said, "I am giving you the last chance. Just give me the Divine Yin Yang Fruits!"

Ye Xiao had a quick thought and actually came up with an idea. He remembered something Erhuo told him and he believed there was a way to get through the despair. He said, "Why are you so sure that we have the fruits? It just doesn't make sense! If we have the fruits, why didn't we just eat them? Why would we come here for any stupid opportunity?"

The man in the dark smoke solemnly shouted, "Shut up!"

Certainly, Ye Xiao had no right to speak when two dominant figures were having a conversation, as he was merely a small figure who had just reached Dao Origin Stage!

Ye Xiao giggled and said, "Well, laozi[1] understand that laozi shouldn't sound my voice in front of a superior cultivator like you. However, now that you popped out from nowhere. No matter laozi have the fruits or not, you will kill me. Laozi am going die anyway. Then why would I shut up? Even though this may be the last moment of my life, laozi guess it is a pleasure to say whatever the fxck laozi want in front of a fxcking so-called dominant figure like you! Isn't it?"

Ye Xiao kept saying laozi when he referred to himself. The man in the dark smoke knew that Ye Xiao was trying to provoke him

but just couldn't stop the flame of anger rising in the heart.

Nobody ever dared to call oneself laozi when talking to him in his life!

This level two Dao Origin Stage small figure was dead meat!

...

—————

[1]Referring to oneself, showing contempt for the spoken to or used jokingly. Laozi also means 'father'.

Here the author is going to make a joke about this word, so I use laozi instead of translating it into 'I'.

Chapter 1190: Demonic Creature!

The man in the dark smoke slowly turned his head over. The dark smoke was turning with him. That was a creepy scene indeed. In the dark smoke, the man's eyes were like ghost fire. He stared at Ye Xiao and blandly said, "How dare you? You... just called yourself laozi in front of me?"

Ye Xiao sneeringly smiled and said, "Why do you think... that only your father can call himself laozi in front of you? I guess you should understand this. Otherwise, you may not deserve the fame of yours!"

Suddenly the phenomenon of the entire place changed as he said these words.

The clouds turned dark; the wind started to howl; sounds of moaning ghosts suddenly resounded in the air.

The world suddenly became full of sorrow.

The sun seemed to lose its light.

The killer intent had gathered the murderous qi.

Ye Xiao looked cold in the face, holding his arms, sneering at the dark smoke. He pitifully said, "I guess you are just a demonic creature. No matter how potent you are in cultivation, every normal person in Qing-Yun Realm can call himself laozi when talking to you!

"Besides, shouldn't you feel grateful for the man who is willing to be your laozi? After all, it takes quite a brave step forward to claim to be a demon's laozi, doesn't it?"

Demonic creature!

The man in the dark smoke was shaking when hearing Ye Xiao speaking.

Suddenly, he suddenly burst into creepy laughter behind the

smoke. "Hahaha... hahahaha... haha..." It seemed his laughter contained many spirits of the wronged that never took a rest.

"You are Ye Xiao, aren't you?" The man stared at Ye Xiao. Suddenly, he didn't laugh anymore. His voice was cold and calm.

Ye Xiao had successfully provoked that man.

This weird plainness and calmness made a sign before his fury erupt.

"What?" Ye Xiao proudly said, "Do you have a problem with it?"

"Heh heh..." The man looked at Ye Xiao and blandly said, "No, I don't. One thing is certain though. No matter which Ye Xiao you are, you will be dead. You are done. I am telling you."

"Even Xiao Monarch wouldn't dare to talk to me like this when he was alive." The man said.

"Pah! What do you think you are? It is an insult to Xiao Monarch to have his name come out from your filthy mouth!" Ye Xiao sneered, "He wouldn't dare? Well, he never met you!"

The man turned silent and calm again. Everything was so quiet like they were in a lake of death.

He looked at Ye Xiao from head to toe again and slowly nodded. It seemed he had taken a quick thought. He said, "I see. It is you."

The man in the dark smoke sounded quite certain as if nobody was allowed to doubt him. He actually confirmed this young man in front of him was Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch!

Ye Xiao was still cold and solemn. He proudly said, "Yes, it is. So what?"

"So the boy Ye Xiao is Xiao Monarch indeed." The man in the dark smoke laughed and said, "Only Xiao Monarch himself can be so certain that he has never met me before! It turns out you are still alive!"

The man blandly continued, "You did have a great opportunity.

As I know, it seems you don't have good luck."

Ye Xiao blandly said, "Well, you don't get to judge. However, you just admitted you are Wu Fa, didn't you?"

"Hahahaha..." The man laughed out loud. Suddenly, the dark smoke exploded and disappeared. The man was revealed. He was wearing black clothes, with central parting long hair that laid on her shoulders, hands behind the back, two deepest eyes. He stared at Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue with the fierceness and viciousness in the eyes just like when he was in the dark smoke.

It felt like he was staring at two dead men.

Wu Fa finally showed his real face.

"In Qing-Yun Realm, there were a few people that I thought could have the honor to have a fight against me." He held his hands behind the back, casually walked over. Every step he made, his dark robe flicked the air, as if the dark clouds in the sky were moved.

"Ye Xiao, you were one of them!"

"When I heard that you were dead, I sighed, because I overestimated you. However, heaven's will is unpredictable. Now that we are here, facing each other, it means we are bound to have this fight. Since you are doomed to die in my hands, I shall certainly show enough respect for your fate." Wu Fa slowly stepped ahead and said, "I shall send you to hell in my true appearance!"

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue looked at Wu Fa walking closer. The world seemed to follow the beats of his paces.

It was... a rhythm that slowly sounded on inside one's soul!

It was like the sound of the drum that was oppressing one's soul!

That sound was resounding. They didn't know whether it was sounding further or closer. All they felt was being suppressed by it as if the sky was falling on them...

When they tried to listen to it carefully, they couldn't tell the distance of it. It just kept sounding inside their heart and spread out to the entire universe!

It was a sensation that no words could describe! It seemed real but fake at the same time!

At that moment, deep in their hearts, their souls, the drum was sounding. It kept beating them and made them stagger. They could barely stand firmly on the floor.

Wu Fa was walking closer to them step by step. The recognized best cultivator in the realm, the most influential figure in the world, was walking closer with heavy steps as if thousands of mountains and rivers were following his paces. His long dark hairs were like millions of moving snakes, twisting in the air.

His eyes looked calm, cold and indifferent.

Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue felt that the space they were in seemed to be divided into countless tiny pieces.

Ye Xiao tried to control himself to resist the negative situation that was affecting his mind. He sneered, "Wu Fa... the world's most powerful figure is actually pissed off. Really? Did I hurt you so badly?"

Wu Fa didn't reply. He just kept slowly moving over.

However, Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue felt times more oppressed all of a sudden. They could still forcibly handle it, but it was reaching their limitation, especially Ye Xiao. He had a strong mind, but his cultivation power was weak!

Ye Xiao didn't feel bad; Instead, he was happy about it. He laughed loudly and said, "What? Are you pissed because I called you a demonic creature? Do you stop playing thoughtful and composed now? Hahahaha..."

Wu Fa's eyes were no more calm and steady. At this moment, it seemed there were the flames of anger flickering inside them.

He finally spoke again, "Ye Xiao, it seems I have to tell you some truth today. A man can play with his sharp tongue as he wishes indeed. However, he has to be really careful about whom he was talking to. When you speak with your sharp tongue to somebody you can't afford to mess with, you are dead. Today, let me show you why I believe my theory is true."

Ye Xiao sneered, "Wu Fa, thanks for the advice. Well, let me tell you another truth. If a man did something shameful, he has to bear it for the rest of his life. He will never be free from the guilt in his heart! Even though he thinks he is invincible, that he can keep killing people who see through his true face, he still won't be able to face himself, to show his true face to the world! If a man wants to live in honor and dignity in the daylight, there is only one way... Never do disgraceful things! Today, I, Xiao Monarch, will prove it with my life."

Chapter 1191: Wu Fa's Sword

Wu Fa laughed loudly and said, "What a shame! You seem to be a man who sticks to honor, dignity, and righteousness. But guess what? You are going to die in my hands! This is your fate. Nobody can change it! You haven't risen up to your prime yet; in fact, even when you were still the Xiao Monarch, do you think you could survive my first three attacks? Don't deny it. The biggest hope you have right now is this stupid Frost Sword. Well, do you really think he can protect you? Frost Sword Han Bingxue... Xiao Monarch, who claimed to laugh upon all heroes in the world... What? The Unique in the World and the Monarch? Pah!"

Ye Xiao automatically turned over to look at Han Bingxue.

Han Bingxue was sweating, showing a fierce expression in the face, with his both eyes wide open and nearly popped out, holding his sword with blood stains in his hand. He couldn't move a bit!

The dignity and the imposing manner of the Unique in the World were completely gone!

Apparently, he was suppressed and restrained by Wu Fa! He had no power to fight back anymore!

In fact, under such an overwhelming suppression, he couldn't even easily blink or move a finger, not to mention moving his arms and legs!

That was the true peak-level power of Dao Origin Stage!

Whoever was weaker would be suppressed so hard that he or she couldn't even move freely!

Han Bingxue's forehead was full of sweats.

In the sweats, there was blood.

"Oh?" For the first time, Wu Fa felt surprised. He looked aside and stared at Han Bingxue.

Almost at the same time, Han Bingxue, who should be stiff at the moment, suddenly raised up his head and spat out a mouthful of blood. He suddenly shouted like he was roaring with all the energy that was left in him, "Brother, go!"

After that, the splendid sword lights abruptly burst out with the extreme power as if it was going to destroy the world!

The grandiose sword lights were moving with bone-piercing cold qi. At that moment, the sword lights suddenly became like a vast scorching flame of a miracle! It was burning crazily and rushing over toward Wu Fa!

It was burning!

That was the ultimate sword strike of Han Bingxue that he made with all the power inside him!

Was it the last strike of him in his life?

Even though he was known as the cold frosty sword, he could burn the sky like a flame!

Frosty flame roared in the sky!

His life energy was burning as he made this strike. It was crazily consuming his life until nothing was left!

Han Bingxue condensed all the power he had into the last strike! During the process, he had to ignore the damages on his inner organs, on his Jing and Mai, to break through Wu Fa's suppression. With all the life energy and the soul energy he had, he made the last strike!

"Brother, go!"

As he shouted out the two words like thunderclaps, he rushed out without hesitation.

In his eyes, there was only madness!

His body, heart, mind, soul, spirit, qi and sword were condensed as one!

In the field of martial arts, what he was doing was called Seven-to-one Mergence, also All-in Method!

It was always a technique that people only remained to oneself. It was a method that nobody would use, a suicidal move!

It was more extreme than self-explosion!

No matter who was using this, what martial art he or she was operating, it would become a murderous attack!

It was more extreme than self-explosion because there was a big difference between the two methods, although they were both suicidal acts. When a cultivator made a self-explosion, his or her soul, mind and body would explode at the same time. That meant the cultivator would be dead. However, if the cultivator was over level nine of Dao Origin Stage, it was possible that the broken piece of his or her soul would lead to a rebirth. Even though it was a small probability, it brought hope!

However, Seven-in-one Mergence was something beyond life and death!

When a cultivator operated Seven-in-on Mergence, he or she would temporally become seven times as powerful as he or she was! That was a horrible enhancement!

Before the energy of the seven aspects ran out, the mergence couldn't be stopped. The power would keep remaining at the incredibly high level. Even after killing the enemy, what was started wouldn't stop!

During the process, the cultivator would have forgotten who he or she was.

The cultivator would become desperate.

What was left in the cultivator's mind was the last thought before the Seven-in-one Mergence started.

In Han Bingxue's case, it was... 'Brother, go!'

When his energy ran out, he would die. Seven energies out, cultivator died. When the cultivator died, he was not just passing away. When he died after all sorts of energies ran out, everything about him would be gone! His soul, his mind, his qi, his spirit, his sword, everything!

It was the most exhaustive death of all kinds!

"Oh? Seven-in-one Mergence? This is finally getting interesting." Wu Fa was a bit surprised, and he was impressed by Han Bingxue too. He stared at Han Bingxue who was rushing over fast. For the first time, he looked cautious and solemn in the eyes. He reached out one hand and unfolded it. Suddenly a long white sword showed up from nowhere in his hand!

Wu Fa's sword!

Apparently, even though he was the most dominant figure in the world, he had to be cautious and careful when a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator was rushing toward him with an extreme attack!

However, Wu Fa showed his sword but didn't make any move with it. That long sword actually automatically flew out thrusting toward Han Bingxue's splendid sword light, as if the sword was alive!

As the first long sword showed up, more long swords were showing up in Ye Xiao's hand! They kept thrusting out one by one...

Han Bingxue was seven times as powerful as he was, and he was seven times as fast as he used to be too! When he started to rush to Wu Fa, Wu Fa was about thirty meters away. However, before he got to Wu Fa, Wu Fa continually created thirty-six swords!

All the long swords were shooting directly toward Han Bingxue one by one.

The first sword cracked into pieces! The second cracked! The

third too! The tenth sword was broken into three parts! The sixteenth became two parts! The twenty-seventh was hit off! The thirty-sixth sword eventually had neutralized the blasting power of Han Bingxue's desperate attack!

During the process, Han Bingxue kept shaking as he got shocked by electricity. Every time when one of the thirty-six swords crashed into him, he suffered a terrible impact like a mountain falling down on him.

The power of those words hit him like thunder!

One after another strike hit Han Bingxue. He was enduring them all, while Wu Fa was unharmed!

Wu Fa's swords kept flying out, and they didn't influence him anymore. However, Han Bingxue's sword was tightly held in hand.

Under the horrible and fast blasts of those swords, Han Bingxue kept spitting out blood. It felt like all his blood was going to erupt out of his body and erupt into the air...

...

Chapter 1192: Close Call

Apparently, Wu Fa was excellent in battle schemes. When Han Bingxue operated Seven-in-one Mergence, he became seven times stronger. Literally, at that moment, he was stronger than Wu Fa. However, it only lasted for a while. If Wu Fa chose to have the tough fight against Han Bingxue, he would at least get hurt, even if he wouldn't be defeated. Instead, he decided to make a thirty-six-swords attack. As the swords were cracked, broken and hit off to the floor one by one, Han Bingxue eventually ran out of the energy that he had given up his life for. After that, he was no longer a threat to Wu Fa!

Wu Fa moved one hand and held the point of Han Bingxue's sword with two fingers like squeezing a mosquito.

After that, he stared at Han Bingxue in the face with his sharp eyes and blandly said, "What a pity. In front of my absolute predominant power, your Seven-in-one Mergence means nothing."

Then he slightly waved his left hand and made a palm hit.

It seemed he was doing it casually and lightly, but that palm hit was murderous. Han Bingxue was already exhausted; In fact, even if he was well, he still couldn't get away from that hit.

Ye Xiao shouted, "Don't you dare!"

When Han Bingxue abruptly burst into a life-consuming attack, Ye Xiao didn't have time to react. Now he couldn't just watch and see. When Wu Fa was about to make that palm hit, Ye Xiao had already rushed out. He knew that he was too weak to fight against Wu Fa, so he kept letting out everything he could use, including the flying knives and needles, the sword. He was shooting everything out toward Wu Fa's wrist.

At the same time, a white shadow appeared and rushed out incredibly fast from behind Ye Xiao with a flow of light and elegant

scent.

Wu Fa completely ignored Ye Xiao's all kinds of attacks. However, that white shadow with the unique fragrance lit up his eyes. He shouted, "Wait!" That palm hit which was going to lay on Han Bingxue suddenly changed a direction. He waved the hand reversely and then became a dark tornado rushing up to the sky, chasing after that fleeting white shadow.

He actually just left Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue behind.

He had recognized that white shadow. That was the white shadow that had taken away all those fruits!

He never expected that the white shadow would appear at such a critical moment.

Although the white shadow had attracted all Wu Fa's attention, before Wu Fa left for that white shadow, he had made the last strike with his hand right before his feet left the ground.

He even added another stream of power into that attack, because he wanted to make sure that last strike would crash both Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao into muddy flesh and blood!

He didn't want to spare either of them!

After the fight against Han Bingxue, Wu Fa was sure Han Bingxue was exhausted, even weaker than the falling arrow in the air and absolutely had no power to defend himself. In fact, he might even just die.

The only person who could make any move was Ye Xiao, a level two Dao Origin Stage cultivator.

How could a weak cultivator resist the palm hit of Wu Fa?

That was why Wu Fa was confident. He just made the palm hit, turned around and dashed up. He didn't even look back. The priority for him was to catch that white shadow.

To get the forty-two pairs of Divine Yin Yang Fruits was what he

wanted the most. Nothing else mattered!

At the same time when he turned around, he heard an exclamation.

He smiled wickedly and didn't hesitate, rushing to the white shadow.

Behind him...

Han Bingxue looked at Ye Xiao, who just made a short but painful exclamation. He didn't know what was happening at all.

What he felt was a flash of golden light which blinded his eyes for a few seconds. After the blank sight, he heard Ye Xiao's piercing exclamation. It seemed his exclamation had exactly covered the sound of something else.

That sound...

* Puff! -

If he had to describe it, he would say that it was like the sound of a fart.

And it had to be the fart of a woman.

Even Han Bingxue himself didn't understand why he had such a weird thought when he was about to die the next minute. A fart was a fart. Yet he actually even considered the difference between the fart of a man and the fart of a woman... Besides, what was the difference?

After that, Heaven's Terrace was back to his sight. However, Wu Fa was gone. Ye Xiao was looking at him with a wicked smile. He seemed quite casual as if everything was under his control.

"What... is going on?" Han Bingxue still remembered the sword and the palm hit of Wu Fa which nearly shocked the entire world. He was currently suffering pain in almost every inch of his body. His inner organs were burning, and his Jing and Mai were cracking. His breath was short. He thought he might have been

through a nightmare.

However, he clearly knew at least one thing. He was dying. He was slowly losing consciousness at the moment. His Jing and Mai were broken and blocked. His inner organs were wrecked. He couldn't breathe freely. It was the portent of his cultivation decreasing, his body disappearing and his soul vanishing... However, since Ye Xiao was safe, he thought it was worth his sacrifice!

Brotherhood sometimes was the purest thing in the world. A man would always give up his life for his brother's life and never regret it. What was between Han Bingxue and Ye Xiao was precisely the pure brotherhood. Han Bingxue thought that he didn't disgrace the brotherhood after all!

"Nothing serious, brother. I just counteracted the palm attack from your savior Wu Fa. That's all..." Ye Xiao got down and put a dan bead into Han Bingxue's mouth. "Just get some rests. Keep the last bit of breath of yours. What matters is that... we have to leave now."

Then he held Han Bingxue up and carried him on the back. He ran pretty fast off Heaven's Terrace immediately and stopped at a place that was covered by some big trees. He raised up his head and made a weird sound loudly.

A hawk's howl suddenly resounded from the sky. With the flashing golden light, the golden hawk dived down from the sky.

Ye Xiao carried Han Bingxue and jumped up on the hawk's back. He hurriedly urged the hawk, and the hawk waved its huge wings. The next moment, they rushed up to the clouds like a sharp shooting arrow.

Han Bingxue had a lot of questions in his head at the moment. However, he was too exhausted to ask any. If he were still energetic enough to keep talking, he would keep asking one after another question that was filling his head. [Boss, have you lost

your mind? Since when did that Wu Fa guy become my savior?]

[He is the only reason I am fxcked up like this, isn't he? Besides, what did you do? That must be too awesome, wasn't it? I still remember the palm hit of Wu Fa at the last moment! He did it in his full power. Even when you and I were both in our primes, Xiao Monarch and Frost Sword together, we might not be able to survive that. How did you just casually defuse that attack?]

[Hmm... Why am I still alive? How is this possible? I started Seven-in-one Mergence. It was impossible that it was stopped. By now, it should be finished, and I should be completely gone... Well, I am almost broken in every inch of myself, but... how come I am still alive?]

He was totally lost.

"You must be wondering why you are still alive, aren't you?" Ye Xiao giggled and said, "Your Seven-in-one Mergence was forcibly stopped... idiot!"

Han Bingxue exhaled and murmured, "Well... Then... Does it mean... we are not going to die..." He felt relieved and then passed out right away.

The two of them had been flying in the sky. They were safe now. Ye Xiao took a breath of relief too.

When he thought of the fight a while earlier, he started to shed cold sweats on the back.

...

Chapter 1193: Chasing!

Han Bingxue had activated Seven-in-one Mergence. It allowed him to keep attacking the enemy with all the energy he had at once. However, it was consuming his energy until every bit of him was used up. He would have vanished in the end. After he started it, no matter how many supreme dan beads Ye Xiao had, none of them could save him!

When Ye Xiao realized what Han Bingxue did, it was already too late to stop it.

After Han Bingxue crashed the thirty-six swords of Wu Fa and finally ran out of his last bit of energy, Wu Fa seemed to enjoy the feeling of being pretentious. He pinched the point of Han Bingxue's sword to entirely stop Han Bingxue's last attack, but at the same time, he stopped Han Bingxue's last bit of soul energy from running out. After that, Han Bingxue was broken. He couldn't even stand up on the floor, not to mention making another attack. However, that saved the last bit of his soul!

In fact, the tiny bit of his soul energy was unable to bring him back. It only gave him a few more minutes to breathe. At that critical moment, Ye Xiao played an important role. The tiny bit of Han Bingxue's soul energy had kept him alive. If Han Bingxue didn't have the last bit of energy, Ye Xiao's supreme dan beads wouldn't help!

That was why Wu Fa had become Han Bingxue's savior. Things in the world were always unbelievable. Nothing was absolutely right. Things were always weird, strange, magical!

Ye Xiao understood what situation Han Bingxue was in immediately, so he hurriedly got close to Han Bingxue and fed him with a dan bead. That dan bead was not some ordinary thing. It was a Life Origin Dan bead in supreme level!

Life Origin Dan was what Ye Xiao gave the three grand elders of

Cold Moon Palace when they were about to pass away. It literally brought them back to life and made them energetic again. However, Ye Xiao only gave the three elders the dan beads with dan mist, because he didn't want anybody to be astonished. However, a Life Origin Dan bead with dan mist was already a rare treasure in Qing-Yun Realm. This dan especially repaired one's life. Ye Xiao had collected a lot of materials from Mountain of All Medicines, so he made a lot of supreme Life Origin Dan beads at a time. He was planning to give them to the three elders when he was back to Cold Moon Palace some day. He wanted to help the three elders become stronger. However, it turned out he had to use them on Han Bingxue first!

Han Bingxue was lethally damaged in seven aspects at the moment. Among the seven points, his life, soul, and mind were the most difficult to repair. Life Origin Dan was exactly the perfect solution. The damage on other aspects such as his Jing and Mai, his inner organs, his muscles, were all easy cases. It only took a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator about half a month to fully recover!

After a while, Han Bingxue took a deep breath and murmured, "What did you do... to stop... Wu Fa's... palm hit... Please, I can't stop thinking about it. It's killing me..."

Ye Xiao found it both funny and annoying. "Look at you, idiot. Why do you have to be so curious?"

Han Bingxue murmured, "My heart won't be eased before I get the answer..."

"Oh heavens!"

Ye Xiao cursed and turned over his right hand. A small golden tower showed up in his hand. He annoyedly said, "See? Happy now? Rest in peace now!"

"Urh..." Han Bingxue rolled up his eyes and fell into unconsciousness as expected.

...

On the other side, Wu Fa was like a black shooting star shooting toward, staring at the white shadow which was almost invisible in his sight. He was crazy.

It might be the first time in his life that he kept chasing after something in the fastest speed.

The white shadow was moving at the breakneck speed and also in excellent sensibility. Wu Fa had to fully operate all his power to boost himself not to be left behind.

One tiny mistake was enough to let the white shadow disappear in his sight.

He was not only moving fast but also highly concentrated. The white shadow wasn't just moving straight ahead fast; It was moving in extremely strange route. No matter what was before it, rocks, mountains, trees or forests, it just kept moving in random directions.

It moved so fast that it was like a long twisting white line. It literally took any turns smoothly no matter how rugged the area was.

Wu Fa was put to shame comparing to the white shadow.

However, because the white shadow was more powerful, Wu Fa felt more confident. After all, whoever was able to take those fruits must be at least this fast!

There was always a reason for everything that happened! That was the nature's law.

Wu Fa was concentrated on the white shadow at the moment. He was also moving incredibly fast in the sky. He was so scarily fast that he didn't even notice the golden light that had shined for a second.

It seemed the chase was never going to end since it was started.

The white shadow suddenly started to fleet ahead in a straight line. It was moving over a dense forest like a beam of a white line. It kept rushing forward as if it was never going to stop. Other than that, it actually became even faster...

Wu Fa actually felt happy instead of worried about it. He thought that white shadow was doing precisely what he wanted it to do. He started to consume his own spiritual qi at an extreme rate to keep himself within three hundred meters from that white shadow. At the same time, he tried to adjust his breath in case he would make any mistakes because of anxiety.

He believed nobody in the world had more affluent spiritual power than he did. Even though the white shadow was moving faster, it might not last longer than him!

If the white shadow could fly faster and longer than him, then it meant the white shadow was at least as powerful as him. If that was the truth, the white shadow didn't need to run from him! [If he is genuinely faster and stronger than me, then I should have lost the title as the best cultivator in the realm long ago!]

[As long as I keep him in my sight, I will catch him sooner or later.]

When he started to chase the white shadow, he was about three hundred meters away from it. Six hours had passed, and they had flown over thousands of mountains, yet they were still about three hundred meters from each other.

He didn't get any closer, but also didn't get left behind any further!

Even though the white shadow started to rush in a straight line and accelerated, it still didn't leave Wu Fa behind. He began to burn his spiritual power and boost himself up. It didn't help him catch the white shadow, but at least kept the white shadow in his sight. He thought as long as the white shadow made no more acceleration, he would never lose sight of it.

Chapter 1194: Hair?

Wu Fa wasn't worried since he was confident. [With my power, even to consume massive of my spiritual power to stay fast moving, I can keep flying for seven full days. How long can this white shadow last though?]

[As long as he slows down a bit, I will catch him!]

The sky turned dark again. It was another night time. They were still moving in the incredible speed which was beyond the speed limit of Qing-Yun Realm!

When the sun rose up from the horizon, Wu Fa was surprised. He found a mountain ahead of them that was pretty familiar to him. The mountain was surrounded by lots of clouds and mist. Some were dark clouds.

[That is... What? I am almost back to my place?]

Dark Cloud Mountain.

Wu Fa couldn't believe it. It had been only one full day, and he had moved thirteen thousand miles chasing the white shadow!

Thirteen thousand miles was exactly the distance between Heaven's Terrace and his residence!

After he confirmed it was real, he couldn't help praising the white shadow's persistence.

In fact, they had been moving in winding routes at the beginning... That meant they had traveled over twenty thousand miles!

[The speed... The persistence... The endurance... I am afraid that even Xuan Bing, who is only weaker than me in this world, is unable to do this!]

[However, you are heading the wrong way. This is my place. It means this is the end of your good luck. Nobody knows better

about Dark Cloud Mountain than I do in the world!]

[You were merely flying into your own death.]

[The moment when we reach Dark Cloud Mountain, the real ultimate chasing begins!]

They arrived at Dark Cloud Mountain after a while. The white shadow was moving the same fast. It was like a straight beam of dazzling light rushing up near the mountain. There was a dark hole in the mountainside.

The white shadow was obviously going to enter that hole, to use the unknown internal structure of the mountain to keep the chase going!

Wu Fa felt even more relieved when he knew what the white shadow was doing. The structure inside the mountain might be unknown to the white shadow, but Wu Fa couldn't be more familiar with it!

The space inside was not spacious, and there was no other way out.

Although it was not a difficult thing for a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator to make another hole out, it still took time to do it. It was a critical moment. Any slower the white shadow became, Wu Fa would catch it!

Maybe Wu Fa had his lucky day, or maybe heavens blessed him. The white shadow shot into the hole like a shooting arrow and disappeared in it.

Wu Fa followed up to the hole but didn't immediately entered it. At this moment, he thought this chase was finally going to end, and he was going to be the winner of this game. He was so happy, so he laughed out loud and said, "A sure catch! I wonder where else you can go!"

It was only ten meters deep and ten meters wide cave in the hole. Wu Fa stood at the hole, and he could see everything in the cave.

In another word, the white shadow had nowhere to hide.

Wu Fa gloatingly stayed outside the cave, looked inside the cave and then... The next moment, his smile froze. His face suddenly turned dark.

"Where is the man?"

He did see every inch inside the cave, but there was nobody inside. What he saw was an empty cave. The white shadow was gone!

Inside the cave, there was a white robe on the floor. It was exactly the white shadow's robe.

The robe was here, but the person was gone. A man just disappeared in a cave which had no other way out.

"Where is he? Where is the man?"

Wu Fa shouted and made a turn. Seven phantoms of himself showed up and searched every inch of the cave. After that, he returned the entrance of the cave. He was lost.

[How did he disappear?]

[Even if he is in Tittle Phase, it was impossible that he could disappear like that.]

[There should be traces of his movements.]

[This... This looks like... He just became a part of the air and... just gone. This is impossible.]

He grabbed that soft white robe. That was the only thing that was left for him. He nearly shouted out.

[How did this happen?]

[Was it fake? Was I chasing a fake person all the way along?]

[No... The robe is real. That means the shadow is real. How did he get away without leaving any traces?]

He grabbed the robe in hand and stopped outside the entrance.

Suddenly, he flew up high, stopped and started to make continual crazy palm hits to strike the mountain with his two hands, as if they were two huge axes!

The strong winds kept blowing over the mountain. His attacks kept hitting the mountain like sharp swords falling from heavens.

How could the cave support such blasts? Suddenly, it became dust flying in the air. The next moment, the entire Dark Cloud Mountain fell into pieces. The place was riddled with dust, which covered the light from the sky.

Wu Fa stayed high in the air looking at everything within ten miles. He wouldn't miss anything. However, he couldn't find anything about that white shadow. Even when the mountain cracked into many small rocks of the same size as a little finger, he still couldn't find anything.

"He actually just disappeared like that..." He murmured.

His eyes actually burst out two small clouds of dark fog. - Pah! -

He opened his hand and looked at the robe in it. He frowned and got lost in confusion...

[What is wrong?]

Wu Fa unfolded the robe and carefully checked it. He frowned tighter when he started to check the robe and didn't find anything immediately.

Suddenly, his eyes lit up. He reached one finger into the robe and picked up a small white hair.

His wide opened up his two eyes and couldn't believe it.

If he wasn't such a steady person, he might have exclaimed out loud!

[Hair?]

[A hair?]

...

1195 An Inexplainable Improvement

It was a uniformly white hair, which was tender and silky, shining special glow. When it was on the white robe, because of the color, it was hard to notice it. However, because it was an entirely different material from the robe, it was easily distinguished from the robe!

However, it wasn't the only incredible thing!

Wu Fa knew it for the first sight that it was definitely not a human hair!

"The white shadow I was chasing... it wasn't a human, was it? It is an animal!" Wu Fa murmured. He couldn't even believe his own judgment.

[What kind of animal can move that fast?]

[It wasn't a fowl! That is for sure!]

"If it wasn't an animal... How to explain this hair?" He couldn't accept the fact that he was slower than an animal.

However, the hair in his hand proved the truth. He had to believe it. He was numb.

"Maybe it is the man's pet? Could this be a hair of a man's pet?"

"What is going on? Things are so weird these days." He couldn't understand it. "Even if the white shadow was an animal, it was impossible that it could just disappear in front of me..."

"Weird..." He frowned and lost in thoughts. In the end, he bitterly smiled. "Forget it..."

Standing on where the Dark Cloud Mountain was cracked into pieces, he turned over and looked back.

It was thirteen thousand miles away from Heaven's Terrace.

[Should I go back and check?]

Hesitating for a while, he decided to return to Heaven's Terrace. [For this martial world... For anybody, the forty-two pairs of fruits are enormous attractions... If somebody ate the fruits, I can eat the man. I must be able to bring me a good enhancement after all...]

Then he disappeared.

This time, he moved slower than ten percent of the speed he was in when chasing after that white shadow.

He had consumed lots of his spiritual power to keep himself fleeing extremely fast for one full day. After flying over thirteen thousand miles, he broke an entire mountain. Even though he was Wu Fa, the most potent cultivator, it was too much a consumption.

He had to stay in a recovery status.

What made him feel annoyed the most was that he hadn't gained anything useful so far. Instead, because of the white shadow, he had destroyed his own residence...

He didn't have a place to live in now...

He definitely should feel annoyed and upset!

He kept asking himself in his head, "What is that white shadow?"

...

On the other side, Bing Xinyue was fleeing so fast that she was like a beam of white light, carrying Wenren Chuchu on her back.

Comparing to Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue, who had encountered Wu Fa, Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu seemed to have a much intense escape. To describe the process, one million words might be exaggerated, but eight hundred thousand should be the least word counts. Bing Xinyue was the one who did the running work, while Wenren Chuchu was the one who made the strategy.

When talking about battle strategy and battle experience, nobody except Ye Nantian could rival Wenren Chuchu in the entire Qing-Yun Realm. In Land of Han-Yang, battle wisdom was regarded as

more important than martial forces!

While they were escaping, Wenren Chuchu kept making incredible schemes to distract the enemies, including diversionary tactic, substitution tricks... Sometimes they left a piece of cloth on the tree which pointed the wrong direction, or attached particular smells in several directions, or put their own smell on some mice and let the mice run away... They always distracted the enemies behind.

All in all...

Wenren Chuchu had played lots of crafty tricks. It saved a lot of time for Bing Xinyue in this critical situation.

In another word, if Wenren Chuchu were alone, she would have been caught for a long time, even killed by the enemies. If Bing Xinyue was alone, even though she didn't need to carry Wenren Chuchu anymore, she might also get caught or killed.

However, the two of them together, they had both wisdom and power at the same time. That was why they kept escaping dangers all the way along. Every time when they seemed to fall into a fatal situation, they survived it...

It was definitely a legend... a myth...

The battle wisdom of Wenren Chuchu and the power of Bing Xinyue were the reasons for this legendary story, but not only reasons. There was one more reason which was so important that the two of them wouldn't survive without it.

During the escape, Bing Xinyue was improving fast. The two of them both felt shocked even a bit scared to find how fast Bing Xinyue was improving!

...

It honestly couldn't be more horrible. Wenren Chuchu was the most astonished. For several times, she clearly felt that her eyes were popping out of the eye frames because of surprise.

Bing Xinyue was concentrated on dealing with the dangers. She had to keep watching around, so she didn't have much time to focus on herself. However, Wenren Chuchu had nothing to do, but making plans on the back of Bing Xinyue. She had to make an estimation of their own powers. Because she had to check Bing Xinyue's status, she got shocked so many times that she nearly freaked out — well, surely in a positive way.

She was so excited and happy that she nearly freaked out!

To describe her thought at that moment... she might say...

"I truly don't understand the nature of the world anymore."

[Master got improved after every fight and every injury. She just kept improving. How come?]

To achieve improvement in practical fights was always an excellent way to cultivate. If a person got improved after one fight, maybe he or she happened to be ready to improve, and that fight was just a trigger. However, she got improved after the next fight! Perhaps she was ready to improve twice before the fights, so both fights were triggers!

However, what about the third? She was injured when she kept fighting more! How come she got improved again and again?

Did she get enlightened by the injuries?

Chapter 1195: An Unexplainable Improvement

It was a uniformly white hair, which was tender and silky, shining special glow. When it was on the white robe, because of the color, it was hard to notice it. However, because it was an entirely different material from the robe, it was easily distinguished from the robe!

However, it wasn't the only incredible thing!

Wu Fa knew it for the first sight that it was definitely not a human hair!

"The white shadow I was chasing... it wasn't a human, was it? It is an animal!" Wu Fa murmured. He couldn't even believe his own judgment.

[What kind of animal can move that fast?]

[It wasn't a fowl! That is for sure!]

"If it wasn't an animal... How to explain this hair?" He couldn't accept the fact that he was slower than an animal.

However, the hair in his hand proved the truth. He had to believe it. He was numb.

"Maybe it is the man's pet? Could this be a hair of a man's pet?"

"What is going on? Things are so weird these days." He couldn't understand it. "Even if the white shadow was an animal, it was impossible that it could just disappear in front of me..."

"Weird..." He frowned and lost in thoughts. In the end, he bitterly smiled. "Forget it..."

Standing on where the Dark Cloud Mountain was cracked into pieces, he turned over and looked back.

It was thirteen thousand miles away from Heaven's Terrace.

[Should I go back and check?]

Hesitating for a while, he decided to return to Heaven's Terrace. [For this martial world... For anybody, the forty-two pairs of fruits are enormous attractions... If somebody ate the fruits, I can eat the man. I must be able to bring me a good enhancement after all...]

Then he disappeared.

This time, he moved slower than ten percent of the speed he was in when chasing after that white shadow.

He had consumed lots of his spiritual power to keep himself fleeting extremely fast for one full day. After flying over thirteen thousand miles, he broke an entire mountain. Even though he was Wu Fa, the most potent cultivator, it was too much a consumption.

He had to stay in a recovery status.

What made him feel annoyed the most was that he hadn't gained anything useful so far. Instead, because of the white shadow, he had destroyed his own residence...

He didn't have a place to live in now...

He definitely should feel annoyed and upset!

He kept asking himself in his head, "What is that white shadow?"

...

On the other side, Bing Xinyue was fleeting so fast that she was like a beam of white light, carrying Wenren Chuchu on her back.

Comparing to Ye Xiao and Han Bingxue, who had encountered Wu Fa, Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu seemed to have a much intense escape. To describe the process, one million words might be exaggerated, but eight hundred thousand should be the least word counts. Bing Xinyue was the one who did the running work, while Wenren Chuchu was the one who made the strategy.

When talking about battle strategy and battle experience, nobody except Ye Nantian could rival Wenren Chuchu in the entire Qing-

Yun Realm. In Land of Han-Yang, battle wisdom was regarded as more important than martial forces!

While they were escaping, Wenren Chuchu kept making incredible schemes to distract the enemies, including diversionary tactic, substitution tricks... Sometimes they left a piece of cloth on the tree which pointed the wrong direction, or attached particular smells in several directions, or put their own smell on some mice and let the mice run away... They always distracted the enemies behind.

All in all...

Wenren Chuchu had played lots of crafty tricks. It saved a lot of time for Bing Xinyue in this critical situation.

In another word, if Wenren Chuchu were alone, she would have been caught for a long time, even killed by the enemies. If Bing Xinyue was alone, even though she didn't need to carry Wenren Chuchu anymore, she might also get caught or killed.

However, the two of them together, they had both wisdom and power at the same time. That was why they kept escaping dangers all the way along. Every time when they seemed to fall into a fatal situation, they survived it...

It was definitely a legend... a myth...

The battle wisdom of Wenren Chuchu and the power of Bing Xinyue were the reasons for this legendary story, but not only reasons. There was one more reason which was so important that the two of them wouldn't survive without it.

During the escape, Bing Xinyue was improving fast. The two of them both felt shocked even a bit scared to find how fast Bing Xinyue was improving!

...

It honestly couldn't be more horrible. Wenren Chuchu was the most astonished. For several times, she clearly felt that her eyes

were popping out of the eye frames because of surprise.

Bing Xinyue was concentrated on dealing with the dangers. She had to keep watching around, so she didn't have much time to focus on herself. However, Wenren Chuchu had nothing to do, but making plans on the back of Bing Xinyue. She had to make an estimation of their own powers. Because she had to check Bing Xinyue's status, she got shocked so many times that she nearly freaked out — well, surely in a positive way.

She was so excited and happy that she nearly freaked out!

To describe her thought at that moment... she might say...

"I truly don't understand the nature of the world anymore."

[Master got improved after every fight and every injury. She just kept improving. How come?]

To achieve improvement in practical fights was always an excellent way to cultivate. If a person got improved after one fight, maybe he or she happened to be ready to improve, and that fight was just a trigger. However, she got improved after the next fight! Perhaps she was ready to improve twice before the fights, so both fights were triggers!

However, what about the third? She was injured when she kept fighting more! How come she got improved again and again?

Did she get enlightened by the injuries?

Chapter 1196: Determination!

Bing Xinyue had been boosted in the next thirty fights. She had reached the top of level six of Dao Origin Stage from merely level two!

In the history of Qing-Yun Realm, nobody else could break through so dramatically!

Absolutely not!

It was not just a legend! It was a myth! A miracle!

Wenren Chuchu had only one thought. [This world is crazy.]

Let alone Wenren Chuchu, Bing Xinyue herself didn't understand the situation either.

When she was fighting, she had to focus on the fight. When they were safe, she still felt the amazing improvement of herself. The incredible improvement did save them from dangers but also surprised them a lot. In the beginning, she just felt grateful for what heavens gave her. After that, she felt confused and anxious about it. [How did this happen?]

She even came up with a strange idea from time to time. [Am I... not a human being? Am I a monster? Am I some creature that will be massively improved after a big fight?]

[Otherwise, how do I explain what is happening to me...]

In the first fight, she was surrounded by a large number of enemies. She had no other choice but to burn her life energy to flee away in her extreme speed. When she finally made it out safely, she realized she didn't get weakened at all. Instead, she was boosted in cultivation. She had consumed her life energy, but... her life energy actually had grown. That was unbelievable. She was shocked!

In the second fight, she had to fight three superior cultivators at

the same time. Those three were no weaker than her. Even though her martial art was marvelous and she was quite good at Ling Xiao Ice Art, she was too weak to defeat the three enemies at the same time. She didn't have an optimistic view about this fight.

However, only the first twenty attacks from the three people had put her in danger. After about thirty more attacks from the enemies, she actually killed them all. The three men died strangely, and she won the fight confusedly. When the fight was ended, she tried to check herself and only found that she had broken through. She was level three of Dao Origin Stage by then.

In the third fight, she became stable in level three of Dao Origin Stage...

Fourth, fifth, sixth...

She kept improving.

She seemed to notice the pattern of the weird improvement.

The more dangerous it was, the more lethal the fight was, the more she believed she would die in that, the more she fought desperately in that fight, and the more her cultivation improved in that fight.

In the latest, she fought against six level six Dao Origin Stage cultivators at a time. The six men had over a dozen low-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators too. She was surrounded by them. It was impossible she could make a way out of this, so she desperately chose to burn her life again. When she spat out a mouthful of blood, which indicated her life energy was burning, she felt that something was breaking inside her.

It felt like something that had been stopping her was broken.

After that, some purest spiritual qi started to run into her drained Jing and Mai.

She suddenly reached level six of Dao Origin Stage from level five. In the deadly situation, she suddenly broke through and killed

lots of the enemies. That was how she fought a way out and ran away... When she stopped, she finally realized that she was already in level six!

She was lost. She was confused. She was stunned!

That was too horrible!

“Chuchu, have you ever heard anybody improving like this?” Bing Xinyue asked.

“Never.” Wenren Chuchu answered. Both of them were blank.

“Did you ever see something like this before?”

“No...”

“What is going on?”

“I...” Wenren Chuchu looked at her with confusion in the eyes. She had no more words to say.

She was stunned too. How could she know things of cultivation that even Bing Xinyue didn’t?

Bing Xinyue didn’t really expect any answer from Wenren Chuchu. There were no others around her, so she automatically asked the stupid question aloud! Wenren Chuchu was the only person who was with Bing Xinyue after all.

She had just been through over twenty fights and escaped from death over twenty times. What happened to her was over twenty times improvement!

She was level two of Dao Origin Stage in the beginning. During the several days, she defeated enemies who were in level three, level four, level five, level six! Eventually, she reached the top of level six of Dao Origin Stage!

Only the two luckiest men got improved faster than her. Those were the two men who had eaten the fruits from Heaven’s Terrace!

If the two ladies had thirty or fifty more fights afterward, Bing

Xinyue might become as powerful as Xuan Bing!

She might even surpass Xuan Bing!

That was not just a dream. In the last fight, Bing Xinyue killed two level six Dao Origin Stage cultivators and five level five Dao Origin Stage cultivators at the same time! She left the fight casually in the end!

Because she looked casual, the two sects were very possibly going to send their true powerful disciples!

High-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators!

Dao Origin Stage cultivators could be roughly divided into four grades. Cultivators in level one, level two, level three were low-level cultivators; those in level four, level five, level six were middle-level cultivators; the ones in level seven, level eight, level nine were high-level cultivators, the rest were top-level cultivators who were on the top of level nine. Zhan Yunfei and Zhu Jiutian hadn't reached the top of level nine, so they were merely high-level cultivators, not top-level. Han Bingxue, Li Wuliang, Jun Yinglian and the prime masters of those dominant sects were all top-level cultivators of Dao Origin Stage, as well as Xiao Monarch.

When Ye Xiao was with the three grand elders in Cold Moon Palace, he learned that some cultivators were beyond top-level cultivators. These were super-level cultivators. Only those who were beyond Tittle Phase were super-level cultivators.

Wu Fa, Xuan Bing, Xue Danru and the three grand elders were all super-level cultivators. However, they were in entirely different power levels. Beyond level nine, there was still a vast space for improvement!

Was Bing Xinyue... going to...

Bing Xinyue wrapped up her own wounds and then carried Wenren Chuchu on the back again. In the darkness of the night, she was walking ahead step by step.

Although she had been significantly improved, it still took time for her to recover the energy she had used. What she needed was a safe place for a rest.

However, with lots of enemies around them, what was a safe place?

Wenren Chuchu looked pale in the face.

Her situation didn't get better in the latest several days. Bing Xinyue was significantly improved, so she had thought about pouring spiritual qi into Wenren Chuchu to get her better. However, Wenren Chuchu understood how important even a bit of spiritual energy was. It would put them both into risks if Bing Xinyue consumed energy for Wenren Chuchu. If Bing Xinyue didn't strangely get improved, they would have been dead for a long time!

Bing Xinyue knew it too. She also knew how determined Wenren Chuchu could be. If she forcibly poured energy into Wenren Chuchu, it might even make her feel worse. So she decided to let Wenren Chuchu recover by herself.

For several days, Wenren Chuchu had been staying on Bing Xinyue's back. Bit by bit, she tried to run her own spiritual qi to keep her body activated. That gave her the last bit of power to make a last attack. At the moment, she had secretly loosened her clothes. She seemed hesitating but was more determined than ever.

Bolts of lightning were striking in different places around them. It was a sign of lots of high-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators arriving. Thunderclaps were sounding closer and closer.

Apparently, a lot of superior cultivators were approaching.

Even though Bing Xinyue had broken through many times, she could be exhausted. Even though her spiritual power wouldn't run out, her body could never last forever. Besides, she had been

carrying Wenren Chuchu all the time. Lots of high-level cultivators of the two great sects were approaching... Things were getting much worse...

Maybe Bing Xinyue could break through one more time, but it wasn't for sure. After all, the gap between level six and level seven was the gap between a middle-age cultivator and a high-level cultivator. Most middle-aged cultivators stopped right before this gap for the rest of their lives!

Although Bing Xinyue could absolutely become a high-level cultivator, it took time. She didn't have that much time. Their enemies wouldn't give them much time, would they?

More importantly, Bing Xinyue had killed several middle-aged cultivators. The two sects should have sent more powerful people this time. The enemies they were going to confront were level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivators, even level nine.

To fight against a bunch of high-level Dao Origin Stage cultivators, that was a lethal fight...

[I don't want to die.] Wenren Chuchu stayed on Bing Xinyue's back and let her tears flow on her cheeks. [But... I want Master to live...]

[If only one of us can survive this, it has to be her... She is more powerful... She has a bigger chance... She has to stop carrying me...]

Tears were out of her eyes. She had made up her mind.

Chapter 1197: Taking Risk!

Bing XInyue was not only physically exhausted but also running out of spiritual energy.

She might get a lot of energy back when she broke through in the fight, but she had consumed the energy pretty fast during the process. It was lucky that she could still hang on at the moment. Besides, she was still moving lightning fast.

Apparently, she wouldn't give up. Even though she was running out of energy, she still wanted to use the last bit of her power!

[If I give up, not only I but also my disciple will die!]

[Nobody wants to die if there is a chance to live. If I have to make the difficult choice, I will give my disciple the opportunity to live. She is still young. She has a bright future ahead. She is hard-working. She knows how to fight for what she wants. I don't...]

[I fell in love with the man my disciple loves... It disgraced me. I am ashamed. I don't know how to face the world. I don't know how to look at myself. Even if I let myself go free and chase him, it will be a ridiculous relationship... I will become a joke. Not only me but also he...]

[I can't do that. But I can't deny the feelings in my heart.]

[What is happening now is perilous. It must be a choice the heavens gave to me. If I die, it may be a good ending. The only thing that still worries me is Chuchu's safety!]

[If I die on the way to his place for giving him the information about the two sects' plan, maybe he will remember me and feel guilty or grateful for me... I won't ask for more... I just want him to treat Chuchu better when he thinks about me... I want him to remember Chuchu's master dies for him... so he must treat Chuchu well.]

[Maybe he will treat Chuchu better because of the gratitude he

has to me... Maybe it will bring happiness to Chuchu.]

[If that is what will happen after I die... then I would love to embrace death!]

[I won't have to face my embarrassed heart, my embarrassing feelings anymore...]

Bing Xinyue kept thinking. She held Wenren Chuchu higher a little on her back. In the darkness of the night, she looked emotional. "Chuchu, promise me you will be happy..."

Suddenly, she smelled kerosene in the air, blown over by the wind. After that, she saw fire lighting up in the dark somewhere far away.

Wenren Chuchu looked solemn. She seemed to completely lose hope.

[Finally... They thought of it...]

"Master, go back..." Wenren Chuchu spoke in a low voice, "We should move toward the place where the fire was first lit up. Just sneak over... That will give up..."

Before she finished talking, over a dozen spots had lit up the fire.

Fire attack!

The enemies finally did it.

The trees on the mountain were almost wrapped by the big fire.

Even though the entire place was under fire, the enemies didn't dare to lose alert. They stayed in the heat and kept looking around for the two ladies' trace...

Bing Xinyue stayed low, trying not to be exposed under the fire. She was sneaking over to the first fire spot, as Wenren Chuchu asked.

"The first place they set the fire should be the most dangerous place in the beginning. They must have most people there.

However, when they started to set up fires in other places, they must have spread out. They should have gone deeper into the forest to set fires... If we can luckily get around them and reach the first fire point, we should survive this.

“If the fires get big enough to lit up the whole area, we will have no places to hide.

“Moving toward the first fire point is the only chance we have. Maybe we can find our way out of death...

“As long as we reach the first fire point, we should be at least a dozen miles away from them... Most importantly, they should be searching elsewhere rather than their first spot... If nothing goes wrong, we should be safe at least for one more day.”

Wenren Chuchu kept telling Bing Xinyue her strategy. “Master, sometimes power is not as useful as schemes. When we are weak, we must use our schemes more... There is nothing we can’t do when we are fighting against death... It is a perfect choice to play the enemies around. At the very least, think about what those people would do to us... Master, put down dignity sometimes, and you will be much more formidable...”

Wenren Chuchu suddenly lowered her voice even more, “Master, I shouldn’t have talked to you like this... Forgive me...”

Bing Xinyue was quiet. She just held her disciple tight. She nearly shed tears.

She knew that Wenren Chuchu was saying her last words to her. Her disciple was trying to leave her modest advice before death.

She knew that it was useful... She truly did.

Several men were walking over slowly from the scorching fire. Their eyes were sharp like hawks.

In the sky, four men in four different directions were watching the forest at the same time...

...

Many wild animals were driven away by the big fire. The forest was filled with different sounds of different animals...

“Master, go that way. Try your best to hold your breath...”

Wenren Chuchu talked to Bing Xinyue in the lowest voice. The fire was making burning sounds. Her voice was too weak to be heard by others. “Go over that man. Just be careful... It will be fine...”

She seemed confident about it, but Bing Xinyue was a bit frightened.

What Wenren Chuchu told Bing Xinyue to do were all risky moves.

For Bing Xinyue, all that she did were putting both their lives in risks. However, Wenren Chuchu was always right.

“Don’t be afraid. These people are all focusing on somewhere far away.”

Wenren Chuchu continued, “Because they are so concentrated, they won’t notice the tiny movements near themselves. We might lose our lives in taking risks, but it is the best option we have to take these risks.”

...

Chapter 1198: Under His Nose

“When the others looked over here, the first thought in their mind was that nothing could go wrong because they got a man standing here...” Wenren Chuchu kept speaking in a low voice, “Rather than playing hide and seek in the fire, we should better just try to fool over one man. As long as we sneak over this guy... we will be safe.”

“It is quite different between dealing with a bunch of people and dealing with one man.”

Bing Xinyue sincerely agreed with it.

“Activated a power shield to stay from getting burned, and then move a burning tree around us. We keep ourselves undercover by that firing wood until we reach the place we are heading to. We throw the tree when we are within thirty meters from that guy. It would be only a falling tree. Nobody would pay extra attention to that.”

Wenren Chuchu looked calm. Her plan sounded reasonable and practical.

‘Well...’ Bing Xinyue didn’t understand. “That burning tree is flickering... Wouldn’t it expose us? How do we use it as a cover?”

“The entire area will be in the fire. It is difficult for them to see things clearly. Because of the fire, the air around the tree will be twisted. Even if they look over to us, they may not be able to actually see us.” Wenren Chuchu answered, “It seems risky, but it is the best solution and the most practical one.”

Bing Xinyue always believed in her disciple’s wisdom. However, this time it sounded too risky, yet Wenren Chuchu was quite confident. Bing Xinyue couldn’t make up her mind. Suddenly, she noticed the enemies were getting closer to them. She had lost choices. The next moment, she held a burning tree with both

hands and slowly moved.

The guy near them turned around and looked over.

His eyes were like lightning.

At that moment, the two ladies were breathless.

As expected, the tree didn't fully cover their bodies. However, just like Wenren Chuchu said because the tree was burning, that man didn't actually see them.

He just looked over and then casually looked aside.

[It worked!]

Bing Xinyue took a long breath of relief. She had shed lots of sweat within a few seconds. What happened only happened in a short time, but it was the most unforgettable moment in her life. Luckily they were safe in the end!

After moving a few feet, Bing Xinyue let go of the tree, and the tree fell down to the floor with fire.

That man was alerted! He was frightened and then looked over. What he saw was a tree that had fallen down on the floor, making burning sounds. He just loudly shouted, "Fxck!"

That tree fell down slowly and nearly hit that man. He kept cursing it because of that. In the end, he jumped up high and started to look around in the air.

"Go under him! Quick!" Wenren Chuchu urged Bing Xinyue.

"Ok."

Bing Xinyue didn't hesitate. She operated her best moving skill and moved over thirty meters to the place where that man was standing earlier. She moved just like a ghost, and hid behind that burning tree she put down earlier.

The guy was staying about thirty meters up over the two ladies' heads. He was looking in the distance.

He actually had no idea the people he was looking for were so close right under his feet.

Wenren Chuchu had great savoir-faire. She didn't know that the guy would jump up to the sky in the beginning, but when he did, she immediately changed plan. If not for her quick reaction, they might both get caught!

The fire was rolling up. Even though Bing Xinyue was a level six Dao Origin Stage cultivator, she started to feel uncomfortable because of the heat.

Wenren Chuchu was doing worse. She already had been severely injured, and she was weaker in cultivation. Her lips were dry, and she started to feel dizzy. Luckily Bing Xinyue kept pouring spiritual qi into her. With the energy and her own Ling Xiao Ice Art, she was still able to deal with the burning heat!

"We should be safe now..." Wenren Chuchu spoke in a low voice, "Focus. We should go under that tree later... The man suddenly jumped up to the sky because the fire is going off in this place. Where we are staying should be the blind spot in his sight..."

"I changed the plan. This is even better than the place I chose in the beginning. Now, as long as we can go down under the ground about ten meters, we will be safe."

She sounded pleased, "They may scan every inch of this area, but they will never check the space under the ground in this spot..."

Bing Xinyue nodded.

Standing on the ground and slowly moving down under the hard floor might be too much a challenge for Wenren Chuchu, but it was a piece of cake for Bing Xinyue since she already had reached level six of Dao Origin Stage.

"The fire might influence the space under the ground... but if we go ten meters down under the floor, it won't be unacceptably hot. There are lots of plants in this area... I guess the soil must be quite

wet. There may be groundwater down there...”

As Wenren Chuchu spoke ‘groundwater’, she and Bing Xinyue both licked their own lips.

The place was burned into ravages.

The mountain was trapped by the dense smoke.

People shouted from different directions.

“Holy shxt... Is this trying to burn the women out or to burn ourselves to death... Before we force them out, we may get ourselves grilled first...”

“That’s true... Misty Cloud Palace has the best moving skill in the world. Maybe they have already fled away by burning their life energy... Besides, their Ling Xiao Ice Art is attributed with Yin. Maybe they just can’t get burned...”

“I am wordless now. This fire attack is simply a doltish plan...”

The two ladies looked at each other and cracked a smile.

After that, Bing Xinyue began to move into the ground slowly, starting from the feet.

...

Chapter 1199: Bold but Cautious

The ground was caved in quietly as Bing Xinyue kept pressing down. The two ladies were slowly sinking. It looked casual and relaxed.

Bing Xinyue was running all her spiritual power on her feet and built a strong energy shield. Everything that was touched by the shield, soil or rocks, would be cracked into pieces immediately. After a while, an empty space appeared under her feet. They were sinking faster.

Everything seemed to go well. After a while, half of their bodies had entered the ground.

Suddenly, the wind was howling in the sky over their heads. With thunderclaps and the flashing lightning, a man approached. He shouted, "Anything yet?"

The man who had been staying in the air frowned and responded, "The fire is rolling everywhere, but I don't see any trace of them. They are definitely not in my area..."

The man who just arrived angrily said, "Definitely? Look at you, staying in the air, with all the dense smoke around, are you sure you can see everything? Why don't you just get down and check again? What gives you the ridiculous confidence?"

The first man was annoyed. [This place is all burning in fire. I have been scanning the entire area with my spiritual mind several times. I am sure I have been watching everything. What is the difference between staying up here and getting down there anyway? I am level five of Dao Origin Stage. It is the same!]

[I am certainly able to watch things around me, am I not?]

However, the latter guy must be in high position than him. Even though he wasn't willing to, he still slowly moved down to the floor.

When the two guys were talking, Wenren Chuchu had already fully entered the ground, but Bing Xinyue still had half of her head above the floor. When the man was moving back down, Bing Xinyue eventually got inside the ground in time, dust stopped rolling.

Lucky for Bing Xinyue, that man was level five of Dao Origin Stage, who was good at flying skill. He was slowly moving down like a feather, not raising up a flow of dust.

The reason why it was lucky for Bing Xinyue was that the man exactly stepped on Bing Xinyue's Baihui Acupuncture point [1].

If he stepped down any harder, if he didn't keep operating his flying art, the two ladies under his feet should have been dead.

Baihui Acupuncture was a lethal acupuncture point of a human body. It could be quite an injury if even an ordinary man hit somebody's Baihui Acupuncture, let alone a Dao Origin Stage cultivator!

However, that man wouldn't suddenly hit the floor, would he?

He did feel the soil a little too soft, but then he murmured, "The fire has loosened the soil..." He then moved his feet to rub the floor, but only to make a mass of dust floating up and covering everything up.

Several of the others hurriedly waved their sleeves fast and made blows of strong wind. The wind kept blowing in this area to clear the air. The dense smoke was blown away like a flying dark cloud. After that, the area became more transparent and brighter!

There were still smoke rolling in the air beyond the floor. The area was in silence.

The smell of burning fur filled the air. The fire had burned lots of animals in the forest to death.

"Search! Bit by bit! Carefully!" The man who seemed to be their leader shouted, "We have surrounded the entire a hundred miles

area. It is impossible that they could leave this place! They are definitely inside our surrounding!”

“Search carefully! Do not miss even a strand of grass! You better find the damn women! I don’t care if you will dig down beneath the floor or what!” An old man with a cyan face shouted harshly, “Listen up, you guys! If you can’t find the two women, you will have to cut your own throats right in this place!”

That was an order, not a joke. It was a lethal order.

The others were all frightened. Their faces turned cyan, and they looked like a bunch of ghost in the smoke.

The old man turned around and walked away. He kept asking people the same question.

“Are you sure nobody has been hiding here?”

“Are you sure?”

“Absolutely sure?”

After getting all the positive answers, he turned around again staring at the fire, with killing intent in his eyes.

“The filthy women must be hiding within this area!”

“We must find them no matter what we do! Either of them escapes, and we will be in big trouble... Our sect may be wiped out!”

“We can’t take the responsibility!”

“So... either they die, or we die! Instead of waiting for them to show up, we should work harder to find them!”

...

These people started a blanket search on the floor. Some places even burst out booms. Apparently, some of these people finally couldn’t endure it, so began to dig the ground.

Beneath the ground, Bing Xinyue had built an energy shield with her spiritual power to keep them both under protection and

moving deeper down.

Wenren Chuchu was right. The soil was moist.

Bing Xinyue wasn't satisfied with the current situation though. Chuchu had been suffering the injuries, also been through the burning fire, so she needed to drink water. The moist soil was meaningless.

Luckily, the soil was getting softer as they went deeper down. She finally didn't need to consume a lot of energy to move down.

As they moved downward, the soil would fill the space over their heads...

Wenren Chuchu had planned to get ten meters under the ground, but those men started to dig, so they decided to go twenty meters deep into the ground. In fact, Bing Xinyue didn't stop when they were twenty meters under the ground. In the end, they had reached over thirty meters depth under the ground. Bing Xinyue stopped because they finally surrounded by the slurry.

The two of them felt cool when they reached the slurry layer under the ground. The heat from the fire was gone. Bing Xinyue quietly operated her martial art to expand the energy shield. The shield created a three-meters-wide hollow. That aside, she particularly made a small pit.

The water in the soil started to flow into the pit. After a while, the pit was filled with murky water.

After the time of incense, the grime in the water precipitated to the bottom, and what left was the clear water.

...

[1] Baihui Acupuncture can be found on the top of one's head.

Chapter 1200: Don't Miss It

Bing Xinyue finally felt eased. She put down Wenren Chuchu, who almost lost consciousness. She held some clear water in her hands and fed Wenren Chuchu.

Wenren Chuchu was thirsty, so she drank it like it was sweet. She felt dazed, but still drank up the water Bing Xinyue gave her. After a while, she was sober, murmuring, "Master, are we alive?"

"We are. Chuchu, hang on. We will fine."

Bing Xinyue spoke in a low voice, "Chuchu, we are safe now... Drink some water and let's focus on your treatment. The wounds didn't become worse, but we can't ignore them. They must be searching for us. We should be safe for now, but it is difficult to get away. Let's focus on you first."

She paused and continued, "I am lucky to have you with me this time... If I were alone, I might have been..."

She sighed and bitterly smiled. She didn't finish the words.

This time, if Wenren Chuchu weren't staying with her, she might have died nine times already!

That was for sure.

Wenren Chuchu smiled and said, "That is not true, Master. If you weren't staying with me, I might have died long ago. I wouldn't be able to make it till now."

In the abominable situation, the two ladies both felt that they were depending on each other.

Under the ground, there was no ventilation. However, it wouldn't be too difficult for them to survive, since they were both pretty capable cultivators. Most importantly, they had water now. It wouldn't be a problem to stay for a period of time.

"We are safe here, but there is no way to know what the enemies

are doing. Without the current situation of the enemies, I can't make any practical tactics. We literally have no idea what to do next now." Wenren Chuchu smiled, "I guess we should submit to the will of heavens."

Bing Xinyue smiled softly, "It is amazing that we can make it here with all the schemes of yours. It is beyond my expectation. I guess nobody could do better than you as an adviser."

"Hmm. Considering the current situation, our priority should be recovering ourselves first. The better the conditions we are in, the more likely we will solve the problems afterward." Wenren Chuchu calmly said, "However, we must not consume too much energy down here... There will be a tough fight up there when we go back to the ground. It will be the fight that decides our life and death. After all, they are not the only side that is in need of time. We are also running out of time. If they give up on us and start the attack on Ye Clan, what we have done and sacrificed would be wasted!"

Bing Xinyue nodded to agree. She said, "It is our fates that decide our life and death. However, we should always fight for what we want. Sometimes one's fate can be changed... Chuchu, when we get away, you must fight for your own happiness."

Wenren Chuchu blushed and then said with a forced smile, "Master, we have already come here. ❖ I won't just give up. I will do my best."

She said so but thought differently. She was severely wounded. It was already great luck that she didn't get worse. How could she be recovered? What she just said, she said it to ease Bing Xinyue's anxious heart. She didn't want her master to consume too much energy for her, because she wanted a bigger chance for her master to survive. After all, it would be a tough fight when they returned to the ground... She knew she was not going to survive that.

She decided not to become a burden of her master.

“Fight for my own happiness...” She murmured and then said, “We are both the same. Women’s happiness is never granted. We shall never expect somebody else to give us happiness. Sometimes, when we miss the chance, we will never have another again.”

After that, Wenren Chuchu stopped talking. She just closed her eyes and focused on curing herself.

Bing Xinyue looked worried.

She suddenly sat on the floor and lowered her head. Her long beautiful hairs kept her face in cover. She murmured, “... When we miss the chance, we will never have another...”

[Women’s happiness is never granted. We shall never expect somebody else to give us happiness.]

She kept thinking about it and making silent sighs.

[This is such a critical moment. We may die the next moment. Why bother thinking about happiness or others... We should do our best to survive first...]

The bombing sound kept coming from up on the ground. Although they were already thirty meters down under the ground, they still felt the vibration from the ground. Apparently, the men of the two sects didn’t see the two ladies, so they started to dig the floor. It seemed they were going to dig deeper and deeper...

Bing Xinyue felt that the crisis was approaching. If Wenren Chuchu didn’t insist to high under the ground, if they didn’t come all the way down to thirty meters depth, they might have been caught by now.

The men arrived at this place first, and they had a man watching this place all the time, so they didn’t pay attention to it.

However, it was only temporally safe for the two ladies.

After they dug out every other piece of land, they would eventually come to this place too.

That meant...

They would have to confront the fight.

Bing Xinyue was praying in her heart. She hoped that those people would never come to this place.

Once they did, she might still have a chance to survive, but Wenren Chuchu would die for sure!

...

Ye Xiao was sitting on the golden hawk's back, taking care of Han Bingxue. He kept putting supreme dan beads into Han Bingxue's mouth from time to time. Life Origin Dan might be the best dan bead for him, but it was not good enough to cure a man who had activated Seven-in-one Mergence. Even though Han Bingxue's soul and life energy were stable because of Life Origin Dan, his bodies, minds and other parts were all damaged. Luckily, Ye Xiao had a lot of supreme dan beads. He only gave Han Bingxue the best he had. After some days, he would be fully recovered!

Most importantly, Ye Xiao had the fruits. As long as Erhuo successfully removed the demonic attribute in those fruits, Han Bingxue could eat the fruits and become a peak-level Dao Origin Stage cultivator again...

[Hmmm... Erhuo is still out there. What happened?] Suddenly, Ye Xiao felt something moving inside Boundless Space. He hurriedly entered the Space, and as expected, Erhuo was back.

...

Table of Contents

[Realms In The Firmament](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1101: Fairy Cheng's Grievance](#)

[Chapter 1102: Take My Words Back with You](#)

[Chapter 1103: Isn't It a Good Name?](#)

[Chapter 1104: Jun Yinglian's Discovery](#)

[Chapter 1105: Information about Ye Xiao!](#)

[Chapter 1106: Kill You for Him!](#)

[Chapter 1107: Dan God Inheritance!](#)

[Chapter 1108: Two Ladies Met](#)

[Chapter 1109: For What Purpose?](#)

[Chapter 1110: Sworn Sisters!](#)

[Chapter 1111: Wind and Thunder Started](#)

[Chapter 1112: Unrivalled in the World!](#)

[Chapter 1113: Shuang and Han](#)

[Chapter 1114: We Never Need to Be Reasonable!](#)

[Chapter 1115: Qiong-Hua Palace's Conditions](#)

[Chapter 1116: Never Compromise!](#)

[Chapter 1117: What Are You Doing?](#)

[Chapter 1118: Let Me Tell You A Story](#)

[Chapter 1119: Story Never Ended!](#)

[Chapter 1120: Brother and Sisters Reunited](#)

[Chapter 1121: Denouncing His Fault](#)

[Chapter 1122: What Happened?](#)

[Chapter 1123: How Dare You Hit My Son?](#)

[Chapter 1124: Extremely Protective of His Son](#)

[Chapter 1125: Must be in A Dream!](#)

[Chapter 1126: We Were Wrong!](#)

[Chapter 1127: Rising Slowly!](#)

[Chapter 1128: One Step to Paradise!](#)

[Chapter 1129: Banquet](#)

[Chapter 1130: Weird Harmony](#)

[Chapter 1131: The Past; Our Brother](#)

[Chapter 1132: My Brother Xiao Monarch](#)

[Chapter 1133: Town of Anxiety](#)
[Chapter 1134: Let Me Handle It](#)
[Chapter 1135: Here Comes Erhuo!](#)
[Chapter 1136: Women Are Horrible](#)
[Chapter 1137: Golden Hawk Arrived](#)
[Chapter 1138: Lian Lian Arrived!](#)
[Chapter 1139: Nantian's Trouble](#)
[Chapter 1140: Jun Yinglian Brought A Message](#)
[Chapter 1141: Chase!](#)
[Chapter 1142: Ruthless Heaven's Will; Hopeful Mundane World!](#)
[Chapter 1143: Proof](#)
[Chapter 1144: A Difficult Choice](#)
[Chapter 1145: Don't You Agree?](#)
[Chapter 1146: Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang...](#)
[Chapter 1147: I Was Wrong...](#)
[Chapter 1148: Long-lost Warmth](#)
[Chapter 1149: Accident?](#)
[Chapter 1150: Jun Yinglian's Scheme](#)
[Chapter 1151: A Careless Mistake](#)
[Chapter 1152: Don't Mess With Women!](#)
[Chapter 1153: A Problem About His Cultivation Level](#)
[Chapter 1154: How Much Do You Know About Heaven's Terrace?](#)
[Chapter 1155: Divine Yin Yang Fruits!](#)
[Chapter 1156: It Gives Invincibility](#)
[Chapter 1157: I Have Been There Before!](#)
[Chapter 1158: Evil!](#)
[Chapter 1159: Set Out](#)
[Chapter 1160: Golden Hawk's Nerves](#)
[Chapter 1161: Arrival](#)
[Chapter 1162: A Pitfall of Divine Fruits](#)
[Chapter 1163: Fishing?](#)
[Chapter 1164: Fish? Men? Ants!](#)
[Chapter 1165: Erhuo Moved!](#)
[Chapter 1166: Strive to be First](#)
[Chapter 1167: In the Depths of the Galaxy](#)
[Chapter 1168: Succession](#)
[Chapter 1169: Warning!](#)
[Chapter 1170: Excitement!](#)
[Chapter 1171: The True Story of Divine Yin Yang Fruits](#)

[Chapter 1172: Aggregation of Wind and Cloud](#)
[Chapter 1173: More Were Gone...](#)
[Chapter 1174: In the Name of Public Interests!](#)
[Chapter 1175: Do Best; Have Faith](#)
[Chapter 1176: Hastiness! Massacre!](#)
[Chapter 1177: Who Did This?](#)
[Chapter 1178: Started to Unravel?](#)
[Chapter 1179: Track; Confusion!](#)
[Chapter 1180: Do Not Eat that!](#)
[Chapter 1181: Both Sides were Running!](#)
[Chapter 1182: Master and Disciple](#)
[Chapter 1183: Reveal the Scheme](#)
[Chapter 1184: Do You Regret?](#)
[Chapter 1185: The Woes of the Princess](#)
[Chapter 1186: One Has to Fight for Happiness!](#)
[Chapter 1187: Absolute Surprise](#)
[Chapter 1188: Sword Attack of Nobody; World-trembling!](#)
[Chapter 1189: Fury!](#)
[Chapter 1190: Demonic Creature!](#)
[Chapter 1191: Wu Fa's Sword](#)
[Chapter 1192: Close Call](#)
[Chapter 1193: Chasing!](#)
[Chapter 1194: Hair?](#)
[Chapter 1195: An Unexplainable Improvement](#)
[Chapter 1196: Determination!](#)
[Chapter 1197: Taking Risk!](#)
[Chapter 1198: Under His Nose](#)
[Chapter 1199: Bold but Cautious](#)
[Chapter 1200: Don't Miss It](#)